І. В. Корунець

ПОРІВНЯЛЬНА ТИПОЛОГІЯ АНГЛІЙСЬКОЇ ТА УКРАЇНСЬКОЇ МОВ

Навчальний посібник

*Видання друге,
доповнене й перероблене*

Рецензенти:
доктор філологічних наук, професор
В. І. Карабан,
кандидат філологічних наук, професор
О. М. Кінщак

Корунець І. В.

K68 Порівняльна типологія англійської та української мов. Навчальний посібник. – Вінниця: Нова Книга, 2003 - 464 с.

Пропонований посібник є значно доповненим і переробленим виданням посібника 1995 року (в-во "Либідь"). У нього внесено доповнення, викликані появою нових досліджень вітчизняних і зарубіжних лінгвістів (вступна частина). Доповнено й оновлено розділ "Типологія фонетичних і фонологічних систем", уточнено кількість структурних типів складів обох порівнюваних мов. Зміни внесено і в розділи "Типологія морфологічних..." і "Типологія синтаксичних систем". Більше матеріалів перенесено в таблиці, зроблено доповнення в системі вправ кожного розділу.

Посібник своїм наповненням відповідає вимогам програми з предмета. Він може бути використаний викладачами порівняльного мовознавства, а також викладачами англійської мови вищих і спеціальних середніх навчальних закладів, аспірантами та студентами, які вивчають і цікавляться спільними (ізоморфними) й відмінними (аломорфними) рисами та явищами англійської та української мов.

ББК 81.432.1-7

Корунець Ілько Вакулович - перекладач, літературний критик, лінгвіст. Член Національної спілки письменників України. Заслужений працівник народної освіти України. Професор Київського національного лінгвістичного університету. Учасник руху опору перекладачів-шестидесятників. Вільно володіє англійською, німецькою та італійською мовами. Пише, розмовляє і перекладає цими мовами. Автор понад 100 наукових праць з перекладознавства, порівняльної типології, методики викладання. Автор художніх перекладів.

Підготував 22 кандидати філологічних наук. Автор підручників з перекладу і порівняльної типології 1986, 1995, 2002 та інших років видання.

ЗМІСТ

10

ПЕРЕДМОВА

З-поміж профілюючих дисциплін навчального плану інститутів, університетів і факультетів іноземних мов і деяких педагогічних вузів порівняльна типологія іноземної та української мови має чи не найбільше пізнавальне і навчально-виховне значення. Адже саме цей предмет, вивчення якого ґрунтується на всебічному порівнянні та співвіднесенні мовних одиниць, засобів їх поєднання і функціонування в словосполученні або реченні англійської та української мов, незаперечно переконує студентів у тому, що українська мова за своїм лексичним багатством і різноманітністю засобів вираження стоїть врівень з усіма іншими розвиненими мовами світу. Вона має як спільні (ізоморфні) так і відмінні (аломорфні) риси та явища порівняно з багатьма, принаймні індоєвропейськими мовами. Ізоморфізм спостерігається найперше у наявності системи мовних одиниць та їх найголовніших властивостей на фонетичному/фонологічному, лексикологічному, морфологічному і синтаксичному рівнях мовної стратифікації. Аломорфні явища української мови порівняно з іншими індоєвропейськими мовами і, зокрема, порівняно з англійською мовою, що є тут об'єктом типологічного вивчення, становлять подовжені приголосні звуки, структура невластивого англійській мові типу складу, окремий шар (дитячої) лексики тощо. Тому найбільше уваги в пропонованому посібникові звертається на системне зіставлення таких одиниць і явищ англійської та української мов, як:

1) звуки / фонеми, складотворення і просодичні явища (наголос, інтонація) англійської та української мов;

2) класи повнозначних і неповнозначних частин мови, морфологічні категорії та способи їх реалізації, словотвірні й формотвірні афікси, класифікація лексичних одиниць;

3) синтаксичні процеси, синтаксичні зв'язки та синтаксичні відно шення на рівні різних типів і парадигматичних класів словосполу чень, речень і надфразових єдностей порівнюваних мов тощо.

Значне місце поряд із порівняльним аналізом ізоморфізмів та аломорфізмів на кожному мовному рівні відводиться зіставленню функціональних значень членів/компонентів синтаксичних одиниць. При

11

цьому особлива увага звертається на аломорфні риси та явища в системі мовних одиниць, а також на домінанти, що визначають структурний тип одиниць і явищ відповідно англійської та української мов.

Типологічний аналіз мовних одиниць і явищ здійснюється у межах кожного мікрорівня за допомогою порівняльного, почасти компонентного і трансформаційного методів. Це забезпечує встановлення ізоморфних та аломорфних особливостей голосних/приголосних звуків, складів, морфем, спільних класів лексики, зокрема і фразеологізмів та синтаксичних одиниць, спільних і відмінних рис у системі простих і складних речень і членів речення та їх структури в англійській та українській мовах.

Усі типологічні порівняння здійснюються на широкому ілюстративному матеріалі, вибраному з художніх і публіцистичних творів англомовних авторів та їх українських перекладів чи з творів українських письменників.

Для самостійної перевірки засвоєння теоретичного матеріалу, а також для семінарських занять до кожного розділу додаються запитання і система послідовних вправ на практичну перевірку засвоєння матеріалу, що вивчався у відповідному розділі.

Оскільки пропонований посібник є першою в Україні працею, в якій робиться спроба порівняння синхронічного зрізу і мовних одиниць і явищ англійської та української мов на всіх (окрім стилістичного) рівнях лінгвістичної стратифікації, автор із вдячністю прийме від користувачів конструктивні пропозиції щодо поліпшення структури і змісту посібника в майбутньому.

<div align="right">Автор</div>

CONTRASTIVE TYPOLOGY, ITS AIMS AND METHODS OF INVESTIGATION

Typology as a branch of linguistics comes from "type" or "typical", hence, it aims at establishing similar general linguistic categories serving as a basis for the classification of languages of different types, irrespective of their genealogical relationship.

Contrastive typology (порівняльна типологія), as the notion itself reveals it, represents a linguistic subject of typology based on the method of comparison or contrasting. Like typology proper, which has hitherto been practised, contrastive typology also aims at establishing the most general structural types of languages on the basis of their dominant or common phonetical/phonetic, morphological, lexical and syntactic features. Apart from this contrastive typology may equally treat dominant or common features only, as well as divergent features/phenomena only, which are found both in languages of the same structural type (synthetic, analytical, agglutinative, etc.) as well as in languages of different structural types (synthetic and analytical, agglutinative and incorporative, etc.).

The number of different languages which may be simultaneously subjected to typological contrasting at a time is not limited and is always predetermined by the aim pursued. The latter may be either theoretical or practical and involve the investigation of common or both common and divergent features/phenomena in the corresponding planes/aspects of the contrasted languages. The typological study of such features/ phenomena, which usually represent certain regularities in the structure of different languages may be facilitated (or made more difficult) by the existence or absence of some results hitherto obtained in the languages concerned for some other purpose and by means of other methods of linguistic investigation.

Contrastive typological investigations may be focused on various linguistic phenomena ranging from separate signs of the phonetic/ phonological, morphological, lexical or syntactic plane up to several languages. Any of these signs, features/phenomena or separate languages may be contrasted either synchronically or diachronically. But whatever

13

the language features/phenomena or the planes/aspects to which they belong, and irrespective of the number of languages involved, the final aims of major typological investigations are the following:

1) to identify and classify accordingly the main isomorphic and allomorphic features characteristic of languages under investigation;

2) to draw from these common or divergent features respectively the isomorphic regularities (закономірності) and the allomorphic singularities (відмінності) in the languages contrasted;

3) to establish on the basis of the obtained isomorphic features the typical language structures and the types of languages;

4) to perform on the basis of the obtained practical data a truly scientific classification of the existing languages of the world;

5) to establish on this basis the universal features/phenomena, which pertain to each single language of the world.

Contrastive typological investigations are both various and manifold, they may involve a separate language feature or phenomenon pertained to some genealogically close or genealogically far/alien languages, and they may involve several features or phenomena pertained to many genealogically close or genealogically different languages. Besides, the object of Contrastive typology may as well be separate features and language units or phenomena pertained to both living and one or more dead languages. Consequently, the object of investigation may involve an extensive language area/material or it may involve a restricted object/ material of investigation. Due to this there are distinguished several branches of typological (or Contrastive typological) investigation often referred to as *separate typologies.* The main of these typologies are as follows:

1. *Universal typology* which investigates all languages of the world and aims at singling out in them such features/phenomena which are common in all languages. These features are referred to as *absolute universals.* Their identification is carried out not only on the basis of the existing (living) languages but also on the basis of dead languages like Sanskrit, ancient Greek or Latin. Also the hypothetic abstract *etalon language* created by typologists for the sake of investigation is widely made use of by universal typology. This "language" plays a very important

14

role in foreseeing the quantitative representation of various features/ phenomena in different languages. Universal typology on its part provides the etalon language with all necessary data concerning the quantitative representation of various phonetical, lexical and grammatical features or means of expression.

2. *Special or charactereological typology,* in contrast to universal typology, usually investigates concrete languages, one of which is, as a rule, the native tongue. The language in which the description of isomorphic and allomorphic features is performed is usually referred to as *metalanguage.* In our here case the metalanguage is English.

3. *General typology* has for its object of investigation the most general phonetic, morphological, lexical, syntactic or stylistic features. This typological approach to the morphological structure of words in different languages enabled the German scholar W. Humboldt to suggest the first ever typological classification of languages (on the morphological basis).

4. *Partial typology* investigates a restricted number of language features/phenomena; for example, the system of vowels/consonants, the means of word-formation or the syntactic level units. As a result, several level typologies are distinguished: a) *typology of the phonetic/ phonological level units;* b) *typology of the morphological level units;* c) *typology of the lexical level units;* d) *typology of the syntactic level units.*

5. *Areal typology* (ареальна типологія) investigates common and divergent features in languages of a particular geographical area with respect to their mutual influence of one language upon the other. A scientific generalisation of such long-term influences in the phonetic/ phonological, lexical or even grammatical aspects of different languages of multinational areas like Dagestan, the Balkans, Transcarpathia/ Transcaucasia and others is of considerable theoretical and practical value.

6. *Structural typology* has for its object the means of grammatical expression, the order of constituent parts at the level of words, word-combinations and sentences. Structural typology aims at identifying mainly dominant features, which characterise the structural type of each of the contrasted languages.

7. *Functional typology,* as can be understood from its name,

investigates the frequency of language units in speech, the regularities and particularities of their use with the aim of expressing different meanings.

8. *Content typology* investigates the types of possible meanings expressed by various language units and their forms in the contrasted languages. Worth mentioning are also some other branches of typological/ Contrastive typological investigations as:

9. *Qualitative typology,* investigating predominant features (phonetic, morphological, syntactic) in the contrasted languages and characterising them according to the predominance of some of these qualities. Hence, languages are found to be *vocalic, consonantal* or *tender, harsh,* etc. Due to the predominance of some morphological features languages may correspondingly be identified (classified) as *synthetic, analytical, agglutinative,* etc.

In opposition to qualitative typology quite obvious is the existence of

10. *Quantitative typology* which was singled out and identified by the American linguist J. Greenberg. The aim of this typology is to investigate the quantitative correlation of some features and phenomena and their identifying (dominant) role in the contrasted languages. Thus, taking into account the small quantity of inflexions and the great role of analytical means as prepositional connection and placement of components in English word-groups and sentences, this language can be identified by its syntactic structure as predominantly analytical. Apart from these there are distinguished some other equally important for typological or Contrastive typological investigation branches of this linguistic subject, the most well-known among them being the following:

11. *Semasiological typology* which investigates the ways of expressing meaning (the inner content) of language units in the contrasted languages.

12. *Onomasiological typology* is a part of semasiological typology. Its object of investigation is isomorphic and allomorphic ways of giving family names and nicknames to people in different contrasted languages. For example, in English: Love, Hope, Lem, Ivy; Mr. Crabtree (Backbite, Gradgrind, Knowall); in Italian: Cane (family name "Dog"), Marchellino (little Mark), Colombo (Pigeon), etc. And in Ukrainian: Люба (Love),

Надя/Надія (Hope), Лепестина (petel-like, petel), Любомир (Peace Loving), Горох (Pea), Часник (Garlic), Клен (Maple), Береза (Birch), Неїжмак (Don't-eat-poppy seeds), Сороксобак (Forty dogs) and the like Ukrainian Cossacks nicknames which became family names.

13. *Synchronic* and *diachronic typologies* investigate language units or phenomena of a definite level with the aim of establishing isomorphisms and allomorphisms in their form and meaning during a definite historical period (or periods) in the contrasted languages.

Practical Aims and Tasks of Contrastive Typology

The results obtained in any branch of typological investigation can be usefully employed both in theoretical linguistics and in teaching practices. Thus, the all-embracing final results of universal and general typologies could help to successfully perform a scientifically substantiated general classification of languages. The results of structural and sublevel/aspect typologies could usefully help in creating scientifically well-grounded theoretical as well as practical phonetics/phonologies, grammars, lexicologies, stylistics and dictionaries of various languages. The study of charactereological and partial (aspects) typology would acquaint the student with the fundamentals of this modern branch of linguistics in general and with some of its principal methods of analysis in particular. A contrastive typological treatment of the main phonetical/phonological, lexical and grammatical features/phenomena, available or unavailable in the corresponding systems of the foreign language/languages and in the native tongue, will provide the students not only with the linguistic results necessary for their successful methodological work at school, but also with the understanding of a systemic organisation of all languages.

Contrastive typology as a branch of linguistics employs some terms and notions of its own. The principal and the most often occurrant of them are as follows:

1. *Absolute universals* (абсолютні/повні універсала) i.e. features or phenomena of a language level pertaining to any language of the world (cf. vowels and consonants, word stress and utterance stress, intonation sentences, parts of the sentence, parts of speech, etc.).

2. *Near universals* (неповні/часткові універсалії) i.e. features or phenomena common in many or some languages under typological investigation.

3. *Metalanguage* (метамова), as has been mentioned already, is the language in which the actual presentation/analysis of different features/phenomena of the contrasted languages is carried out.

4. *Typologically dominant features* (типологічні домінанти) are features or phenomena dominating at a language level or in the structure of one/some of the contrasted languages. Dominant in present-day English are known to be analytical means: rigid word order in word-groups and sentences, the prominent role of prepositions and placement as means of connection and expression of case relations and syntactic functions (cf. books *for* my friend, books *to* my friends, books *by* my friends; a <u>nice </u>flower-nice flowers, Peter <u>came</u> - Mary came), etc. The change of placement of the part of the sentence may completely change its sense. Cf. <u>The hunter</u> killed the <u>hare</u> - *The hare* killed *the hunter.* In Ukrainian the change of placement of the main parts of the sentence usually does not change the meaning of the sentence, as in this same sentence: *Мисливець* застрілив *зайця* or: *Зайця* застрілив *мисливець.* In Ukrainian everything is just on the contrary: case, gender and number categories are expressed by means of inflexions: братові книжки, братових книжок; він співав - вона співала, дитя співало; червона квітка - червоні квітки; перший крок - перші кроки, перша зміна. There is abundance of synthetic and analytical or synthetic and analytical government (кликати Марію/Петра; кликати до вечері/до столу; зроблено Петром/будь-ким (будь для кого), etc. Consequently, the dominant (and typical) features of a language predetermine its structural type as analytical, synthetic, agglutinative, etc.

5. *Typologically recessive* features/phenomena (типологічне рецесивні, втрачаючі колишню активну роль) are those losing their former dominant role as, for instance, case forms in English or the dual number forms of some nouns in present-day Ukrainian.

6. *Isomorphic features/phenomena* (ізоморфні риси/явища) as was mentioned already, are common features/phenomena in languages under Contrastive analysis. Isomorphic in English and Ukrainian is, for example,

the existence of consonants and vowels, assimilation, and the categories of number, person, tense, as well as parts of speech, the existence of sentences, etc.

7. *Allomorphic features/phenomena* (аломорфні риси/явища) are observed in one language and missing in the other. For example: palatalisation of practically all consonants or the dual number in Ukrainian, the gerund or the diphthongs and analytical verb forms in English, which are missing (allomorphic) in Ukrainian.

An exhaustive list of isomorphic and allomorphic features/phenomena of a foreign language and of the native tongue can constitute a reliable basis for charactereological typology. Its main aim, as in our case, should be to teach students to identify, select and group the isomorphic and allomorphic features/phenomena in English and in Ukrainian and to use the obtained results for methodological purposes in their future teaching and as well as in their translating practices.

8. *The etalon language* is a hypothetic language created by typologists for the sake of contrasting any languages. This "language" is supposed to contain exhaustive quantitative and qualitative data or characteristics concerning all existing language units and phenomena. For example, the quantity and quality of sounds (vowels, consonants) and syllables, morphemes, parts of speech and their morphological categories, the correlation of the means of grammatical connection, etc.

Methods of Investigation in Contrastive Typology

Contrastive typological investigations are carried out with the help of several methods. The main one is the *comparative method,* which is also employed in historical and comparative linguistics. Nevertheless, the final aims of Contrastive typological linguistics and of historical and comparative linguistics differ greatly. The latter aims at establishing the parent language and the former at establishing the isomorphic (alongside of allomorphic) features, the dominant features and on their basis the establishment of structural types of languages under Contrastive investigation.

19

Comparing of isomorphic features and phenomena can very often be performed both with the help of the *deductive* and the *inductive* methods. The deductive method is based on logical computation/calculation which *suggests* all admissive variants of realisation of a certain feature/ phenomenon in speech of one or of some contrasted languages. For example, the existence of the attributive AN and NA structure word-group patterns in English and Ukrainian is indisputable. Cf. the *green pasture — the pasture green (Byron), зелене пасовисько — пасовисько зелене.* Common are also the dAN and the dDAN patterns in English and Ukrainian (eg: *that nice book, that very interesting book — та гарна книжка, та дуже гарна книжка).* Rarer, though quite possible, are also ANd or DANd patterns word-groups, eg: *dear lady mine, very dear lady mine; дорога сестро моя, сестро дуже дорога моя.*

Ukrainian word-groups of both these patterns regularly occur in speech. Cf. *гарна книжка ця, дуже гарна книжка ця.* The deductive computation helps find some other transforms of the ANd pattern with the post-positional pronoun determiner as in the word-group *"nice young sisters of his"* or "a *brave deed of hers"* which are impossible in Ukrainian, where a prepositional pronoun or noun displays a strong objective relation (Cf. *гарна книжка ця від мене/була для дітей, добра звістка така найшла тоді його в шпиталі).*

Consequently, the deductive method of analysis can be rather helpful in Contrastive typological investigations, and not only when contrasting syntactic level units or phenomena.

Much more often employed in Contrastive typology is the *inductive method* which needs no verification whatsoever, since the investigated feature/phenomenon was proved already by the preceding generations of researcher linguists. Due to this the reliability of the results or data provided by the inductive method is indisputable. An example of thus obtained results may be the qualitative characteristics of vowels in some European languages (Table 1). These results had been obtained by the preceding researchers long ago and are simply taken from the corresponding phonetics bona fide by everybody interested in the nature of vowel sounds in the mentioned languages.

Language	English	Ukrainian	Russian	French	German	Spanish
Quality front	+	+	+	+	+	+
central	+	-	+	-	+	+
back	+	+	+	+	+	+
long	+	-	-	+	+	+
diphthong-	+				+	+
ised labial-	+	+	+	+	+	+
nasalised	+	-	-	+	+	+

Language	English	Ukrainian	Russian	French	German	Spanish
Quality front	+	+	+	+	+	+
central	+	-	+	-	+	+

open covered syllable and the other is a consonantal CC syllable. At the morphological level the ICs method helps establish the componental morphemes in words of the contrasted languages. Thus, the noun *writings* consists of three ICs: writ/ing/s i.e. a root morpheme (writ), a suffix (-ing) and the ending (-s). A similar ICs analysis can be observed in Ukrainian. Thus, the noun *земляни* splits into the following ICs: зем/-л-/ян-/-и; the first morpheme /зем/ is the root morpheme, the second and the third /-л-, -яв-/ are suffixal morphemes and the fourth (-й) is the inflexion.

At the syllable level this noun splits into as many syllables as there are vowels: зем-ля-ни, though the syllabification of this noun may depend upon the speaker's stress: *зем-ля-ни* or зе-мля-ни, both variants being linguistically justified in Ukrainian. The ICs method is often employed to single out constituent parts of the syntactic level units both at sentence level and at word-group level. Thus, the sentence *He learns many new words every week* can be subdivided into the following constituent word-groups: 1) *He learns* (predicative word-group); 2) *many new words* (attributive word-group); 3) *every week* (adverbial word-group). At word-group level a further splitting is observed : He / learns; many / new// words; every/ week. The Ukrainian equivalent of this sentence has the same types of word-groups with the identical division into ICs: Він/ вивчає; 2) багато/ нових// слів; 3) кожного / тижня.

3. *The transformational* method is more often employed than the ICs method. Also it is more helpful when identifying the nature of some language unit in a contrasted language. Its reliability is clearly proved through translation, which is always the best transformation of any language unit. In short, any transformation is a form of expressing some definite meaning. The simplest transformation is transcoding (перекодування іншими буквами). Cf. in English: Leeds, Liverpool (in Latin letters) and Лідс, Ліверпуль in Cyrillic or any other letters. The transformational method is employed: a) to identify the nature of a language unit in the source language or in the target language. Thus, the type of the Ukrainian sentence *Знаю, прийду,* may be understood and treated differently: 1) as a definite personal sentence with two homogeneous predicates; 2) as a definite personal main sentence (why shall I come?) because (I know it) or 3) as two co-ordinate definite personal clauses with the causal implicit meaning. When translated into

English (i.e. transformed), this sentence acquires the following structural form: *I know it and I shall come.* Therefore, the original Ukrainian variant *Знаю, прийду,* may be identified as a definite personal sentence with two homogeneous i.e. co-ordinate clauses corresponding to (Я) знаю and (і я) прийду.

b) Transformation may reveal the difference in the form of expression in the contrasted languages. Cf. *Вас запрошують взяти участь у науковій конференції* (an indefinite personal sentence, active voice), which has for its equivalent in English *You are invited to take part in the scientific conference* (i.e. a definite personal sentence with a passive voice verbal predicate). Transformation may often be required by the peculiarity of the syntactic structure of the source language (or the target language) unit. Cf. *The lesson over,* all students went to the reading-hall. Після того, як заняття закінчилися (Оскільки заняття закінчилися...) or into a prepositional noun, expressing time: *Після закінчення* занять студенти пішли... The nominative absolute participial construction *The lesson over* (i.e. *being* or *having been over)* has to be substituted i.e. transformed into an adverbial clause of time or cause (Після того, як заняття закінчилися/ Оскільки заняття закінчилися, всі студенти пішли до читальні).

Transformation may also be lexical, as in the following sentences: He is *not unlike* his father Він *схожий* на свого батька; or Dick was running in the yard in his *shirt sleeves* Дік бігав на подвір'ї *без піджака* (в одній верхній сорочці).

Apart from these some other methods of analysis are helpful for the establishment of structural or semantic isomorphisms and allomorphisms in the contrasted languages. Among these is also the *Contrastive linguistic method,* which is usually employed to investigate a restricted number of genealogically related or non-related languages. The object of Contrastive linguistics in general is the meaning, form and functioning of certain language units, their features or phenomena [10]. Unlike Contrastive typology, Contrastive linguistics does not treat language features or phenomena with the aim of establishing isomorphic or allomorphic features and universals. Divergent features and phenomena in the languages under Contrastive linguistic investigation are considered to be irregularities or exceptions to some general rules. The aim of Contrastive linguistics has

never been to establish systemic relations on a global scale, or to establish universal features. Despite all this, the Contrastive linguistic method, when employed both synchronically and diachronically, provides the establishment of valuable theoretical and practical results [21; 23] providing the reliable data on various aspects of languages under investigation. Contrastive linguistics contributes greatly both to the aspect and charactereological typologies of the investigated languages.

Some purely typological methods of Contrastive investigation have recently been suggested as well. Among the best known is the *indexes method* by the American linguist Joseph Greenberg. The method helps identify the quantitative co-occurrence or frequency of some feature or phenomenon in the contrasted languages. J. Greenberg selected some passages, among them one English and one Russian, each containing one hundred notional words and subjected them to various typologically relevant analyses. The parameters of his computations were as follows:

1. The degree of synthesis in the words. Thus, when the morphemes are lettered as M and the number of words in the passage as W, the M/W- ratio will express the synthetic structure index, which is in English between 1.62 to 1.68.

2. The second parameter constitute the ways in which various mor phemes are joined in English notional words. Since one of the main ways in English is agglutination (lettered as A), it gives in relation to this kind of juncture (lettered J) an A/J ratio reflecting the degree of cohesion between the morphemes in these notional words. It goes without saying that the higher the index, the greater the role of agglutination and the lower their fusion (i.e. synthetism) in any language.

3. The productivity degree of the form-building morphemes constitutes the third parameter. When the number of root morphemes is letterd as R, the number of words in the text as W, the R/W ratio will express the index of derivation. This index proves that the higher the number of root morphemes making the notionals, the lower is the degree of form-building in the system of words in the contrasted language.

4. The quantity of derivational morphemes (D) in direct relation to the number of words (W) in the text gives the D/W ratio indicating the word- forming capacity of a language.

5. The fifth parameter characterises the correlation of affixal morphemes in their relation to the number of words. So, the P/W ratio constitutes *the index of prefixation* and indicates the correlation between the number of prefixes and the number of words in the text.

6. Similarly, the S/W ratio with the letter S standing for suffixal morphemes will be the index of suffixation in the words of the text.

7. Finally when accidence, i. e. genuine form-building is lettered as Pi, then the Pi/N- ratio will designate the index characterising the form-building capacity of words in the language.

8. Consequently, when the synthetic agreement is lettered as Co (concord), the Co/N ratio will represent the index of concord i.e. grammatical agreement in the selected by the researcher passage/text. It should be added in conclusion that J. Greenberg's indexes have been analysed and proved to be true by different linguists in some European countries. Some linguistics as V. Kroopa in Slovakia have even further elaborated and improved the method by substituting the lettered indexes for the digital gradation from zero (0.3, 0.5 etc.) up to 1 (one).

A Short Historical Outline of Typological Investigations

Many European scientists as early as the 17th and 18th centuries had pointed to the existence of some common (mainly lexical) features in different languages (I. Komensky, W. Leibnitz). This idea came to being especially in the minds of the first Europeans who had visited India in the 16th and 17th centuries. They were often struck by the great similarity in the lingual form (sounding) and meaning of a number of common words like *mother, brother, sister,* etc.

Strange as it might seem at first glance, but there exists an indisputable linguistic testimony to some closest contacts between our prehistoric Ukrainians and Indian Arians (арійці). This was noticed already by Krasuskiy M. (1880) and by our Kharkovite and Kyivan Indologists P. Richter and O. Barannykov (20s - 30s of the 20th century), who pointed to many Sanskrit words being of common, approximately the same or absolutely the same lingual form (sounding). Even a quick glance at a

short list of several nouns, verbs, numerals and other parts of speech below leaves no doubt whatsoever of their being once of genealogically common source of origin. This can be easily seen from many Sanskrit words having common root and very similar or identical lingual form expressing one and the same meaning in Ukrainian. For example,

Nouns: матар - матір/mother, *девар* - дівер/brother-in-law, *бгpaта* - брат/brother, *свасар* - сестра/sister, *свасура* - свекор/ father-in-law, *відгава* - вдова/widow, *юван* - юнак (юний)/young, *грі-ва* - шия/neck, *нас* - ніс/nose, *пада* - п'ята/heel, *стана* - груди/ breast, *мурдган* - голова (cf. морда)/head, *мус* - миша/mouse, *сурмі* - труба (cf. сурма)/pipe, *дгума* - дим/smoke, *дама* - дім/house, *на-бгаса* - хмарний (cf. небеса)/cloudy, *гірі* - гора/hill, *ваюс* - вітер/ wind, *pluti* - плавання (cf. пливти)/swimming, *данам*- обдарування/ giftness and many other nouns.

Adjectives: нава - новий/new, *крішна* - красний, гарний/beautiful, *рудгіра* - червоний (cf. рудий)/red, *сукта* - сухий/dry, *лагту* - легкий/ light, *нагна* - голий/нагий/nude, *свaччга* - свіжий/fresh, *тану*- тонкий/thin, *джіва* - живий/life, *тамаса* - темний/dim, *паріпурна* -переповнений/overcrowded, *д'ямант* - яскравий/light (cf. діамант), etc.

Pronouns: Ty - ти/you, *свій* - свій/one's, *тваї* - твій/your, *мамака* - мій/my, *катара* - котрий/which, *ка* - хто/who, *татсама* -той самий/that same, *та* - та/that one (female), *тат* - той/that one (male, masculine gender), *то* - то/те that one (neuter gender), *катама*
- котрий/which (out of many), etc.

Numerals: adi - один/one, *двау* - два/two, *траяс* - три/three, *катварас* - чотири/four, *панча* - п'ять/five, *сат* - шість/six, *даса* - десять/ten, *батам* - сто/one hundred, *двaусатам* - двісті/two hundred, *багудга* - багатьма(способами)/many, *двітій* - другий/ second, *трітій* - третій/third, *санятга* - шостий/sixths, etc.

Verbs: плаваті - плавати/swim, *смаяті* - сміятися/laugh, *рудаті* -ридати/to sob, *кагаті*- казати/say, tell, *бгагаті*- бігати/run, *ліп'яті*
- ліпити/to model, *лубг'яті* - бажати, домагатися/wish, *будг'яті* - будити/wake, *джіті* - жити/live, *пітайє* - пити/drink, *дгам* - дути/ blow, *податі* - падати/fall, *ліз'яті* - лизати/lick, etc.

Adverbs and some functionals as: нунам - нині/now, *тада* - тоді/ then, *гат* - геть/away, out, *sadivas* - сьогодні/today, *kada* - коли/

when, *атаг* - отож/thus, so, *прати* - проти/against, *ну* - ну/well now, *на* - ні/not, *то* - то/then, so, etc. [24:25-265], [3:3-4].

There can be no end to the great admiration at our native tongue being so ancient, taking into account that the works, from which these words have been taken, were written more than 2000 years B.C. No doubt this undeniable lingual testimony of lexical and semantic likeness can find its exhaustive explanation only on the basis of historical typology and its present-day scientific methods of analysis. Not excluded completely could also be other approaches, some of which are already familiar to our students. The likeness of many Ukrainian and Sanskrit lexical units cannot be treated within the framework of the common Indo-European stock of words comprising such words as *cow* корова, *milk* молоко, *wolf* вовк, *sun* сонце and some words denoting kinship (mother, sister, brother, etc.). These and several other words were noticed, as has been mentioned above, by the first Europeans who visited India as far back as the 16th century. Those observations, however, did not initiate then a regular typological study of languages.

The first ever attempt (thought quite naive) to create a grammar on "common in all languages principles" was made by the Frenchmen *Claude Lancelot* and *Antoine Arnaud* in their Universal or Rational Grammar (Pour Royal, 1660). And yet only the beginning of the 19th century with its historical and comparative method brought a dynamic development to European linguistics. This method was originally employed to investigate genealogically related languages, principally Indian, Germanic and Romanic. Though not without exception, some linguists having made general observations in non-related languages as well. These observations helped establish the languages' common and divergent features. Thus, together with the historical and comparative study, the typological investigations were born. One of the first linguists to have made a scientific approach to the regular Contrastive study of structurally different languages was *Frederick Schlegel (*1772 - 1829). On the ground of a thorough study of ancient Indian and modern Chinese, Polynesian, Turkic and the major West-European languages *F. Schlegel* singled out among them two clearly distinguishable groups:

1. Affixal languages in which the form-building of words is realised through affixes added to the amorphous (invariable) root morphemes.

These languages were Turkic, Polynesian and Chinese.

2. The second large group in F. Schlegel's classification constituted the inflexional languages, which included among others all Semitic languages and also, to his mind, French as well as the Georgian language.

Though somewhat restricted, this classification already stood to the requirements of a regular typological classification of languages. The main principle upon which it was based was therefore the morphological one. *F. Schlegel's* classification was followed by some others which were more all-embracing, like that *of August Schlegel* (1767 — 1845), who in some places perfected his brother's first attempt of typological classification of languages in the history of European linguistics. This German linguist singled out, on the basis of the same morphological criterion, three typologically common groups of languages: a) those without any grammatical structure, as they were called; b) the affixal languages; and c) the flexional languages. The first two were considered to have been preceded in their historical development by the synthetic languages. The Chinese language and the languages of Indo-China, however, in which the grammatical relations between words are realised depending on their placement in syntactic units, had been singled out as a separate group, though they were not yet allotted by the scientist to any typologically concrete class.

A decisive step forward in the typological classification of languages on the basis of the same morphological criterion was made by *Wilhelm Humboldt (1761 —* 1835), who is considered to be the father of typology as a new branch of linguistics. The scientist had studied a great number of languages including those of Polynesia and American Indians. Having taken into account the morphological divergences in a large number of languages, *W. Humboldt* suggested a much more embracing typological classification of languages than those suggested by his predecessors. It was partly a perfected and more scientifically supported variant of *Frederic and August Schlegels'* morphological classifications. Thus, *W. Humboldt* grouped all known to him languages into the following four classes: 1) the isolating languages, which are devoid of the form-building morphemes (like Chinese); 2) the agglutinative languages (like those of the Turkic group); 3) the flexional languages (like the Indo-European or Semitic languages); 4) the incorporating languages of the American

Indians. The last type of languages is characterised by the possibility of words to combine and form specific word- sentences. The isolating languages were considered by *W. Humboldt* and his countryman *August Schleicher* (1821 — 1868) to be archaic, the agglutinative type languages to be at the intermediary stage of development and the inflectional languages, both contemporary and dead, as those representing the highest stage in language evolution.

A prominent place among the charactereological typologists of the first half of the 19th century belongs to *Franz Bopp* (1791 — 1867), the German linguist who had elaborated and widely implemented the comparative/Contrastive method of investigation. *F. Bopp* had introduced a hitherto unknown approach to the typological investigation of languages on the basis of their syllabic root morphemes structure. On the ground of this criterion he succeeded and singled out three typologically distinguishable language types, namely: 1) the language type with the root morpheme consisting of one syllable only (the so-called monosyllabic languages); 2) the language type in which the root morpheme can combine with other roots and affixal morphemes (like in most Indo-European languages); 3) the language types with disyllabic and even trisyllabic root word-structures (as in Semitic languages).

All through the second half of the 19th century and during the beginning of the 20th century the only object of typological investigation which continued to remain was word/word-form. It was investigated in different languages (and by way of different approaches) with the aim of identifying common/divergent features on whose basis a universal morphological classification of languages was planned to be established. An exception to this general trend of classifying typology was the investigation of syntactic connections in different languages, initiated by *Humboldt's* disciple and adherent *H. Steinthal* (1823 — 1899). This was a new and until then untouched upon object of typological investigation. It was followed by one more new typologically relevant criterion, namely the placement of syntactically principal parts in the sentence. Thus, the predicate always follows the subject in statements of such analytical languages as English, Swedish, Norwegian, etc. whereas in Turkic languages it mostly occupies the closing position. This criterion was put

forward by *H. Steinthal's* adherent *F. Mistely,* who took the inner form of the word as a relevant criterion of classificational typology. The German linguist *F. N. Finck* [32] suggested two more criteria for the typological classification of different languages. The first of these was based on the correlation between the solid (unbreakable) word structure and the fragmentary (breakable) word structures. The second criterion was based on the type of concord and the manner of its realisation. On the ground of the two criteria *Finck* had singled out eight main types of languages: 1) the subordinating word-type languages (like present-day Turkish); 2) the incorporating word-type languages with the most extended word structures (as in the language of Greenland inhabitants; 3) the regulating type languages having a rather weak connection between the auxiliary words and affixes as in the Subia language (Bantu language family); 4) the isolating root languages (like Chinese); 5) the isolating stem languages (represented by the Samoa language); 6) the root inflected language type (represented by Arabic); 7) the stem inflected language type (like Greek) and 8) the group inflected language type (like Georgian).

The 20th century typological investigations have been marked by some new approaches to the Contrastive study of languages and their classification. One of the best-known trends is connected with the name of the prominent American linguist *E. Sapir (*1884 — 1939) who criticised the 19th century typological classifications of languages and the evolutional approach to the development of different language types. His investigations being based on a profound study of a large number of languages, *Sapir* came to the conclusion that some languages, distant in location, could in the course of their development acquire common features and thus move to a common model and language type [24, 95]. *E. Sapir* was also the first to treat a language material as a system; he acknowledged the typological nature of language development as well as the possibility of establishing the structural types of languages in accordance with the following three criteria:

1. The degree of cohesion between the root morphemes and the affixal morphemes of word-forming nature in a word.

2. The degree of synthesis i.e. the ability of a word to combine and express different lexical and grammatical meanings (as in flexional languages).

3 The nature of grammatical processes by means of which the morphemes are joined in the word (i.e. isolation, agglutination or symbolisation).

Guided by these three criteria *E. Sapir* suggested four basic types of languages: 1) the type of simple purely relational languages in which the syntactic relations are realised without the help of affixal morphemes (as in Chinese); 2) the complicated purely relational type languages in which the syntactic relations can be realised with the help of affixes and without their help (as in Turkish); 3) the simple mixed-type relational languages, realising their syntactic connections both by means of agglutination or by means of fusion (as in French); 4) the complex mixed relational type languages in which the meanings of root morphemes may be changed with the help of affixes or inner alterations (like in Latin or in present-day English).

On the ground of these three far from all-embracing and quite clear criteria *E. Sapir* singled out twenty-one different language types.

Sapir's countryman *Joseph Greenberg,* as has been mentioned on the foregoing pages, has also elaborated the principles of quantitative typological contrasting and thus he has laid the foundation of quantitative typology. This linguist together with *R. Jakobson, J. Jenkinson* and *C. Oshood* contributed significantly to the study of language universals [44, *3], 158 — 162].*

An important contribution to the 20th century typology was made by the *Prague school linguists V. Skalička, V. Mathesius, I. Levy, N. S. Trubetskoy* and others, who carried on their major investigations in the domain of charactereological typology. These scholars considered the essential features of a language to have been prearranged. Hence, the type of a language was identified as a unity of its characteristic features and phenomena. *N. S. Trubetskoy* on the other hand has elaborated typology of phonemic and morphophonemic systems of languages based on oppositions. His idea found a further development in the second half of the 20th century linguistics. Considerable research work in phonological typology was carried on by *O. Isachenko,* who investigated the Slavonic languages on their quantitative representation of vowels and on the musical accent in words and b) on the existence or non-existence of palatalised consonants. As a result, two types of languages have been identified:

1) The vocalic type languages, like Serbian, Croatian and Slovenian, in which a) some consonants have historically changed into vowels and some have become syllable forming /r, l/ as in *trg, vlk* etc.; b) languages in which there occurs an insertion of vowels between consonants and c) languages in which the double consonants have reduced to single consonants.

2) The consonantal type languages whose characteristic features are as follows: a) the existence of the binary opposition of palatalised consonants versus non-palatalised ones; b) the loss of the syllable forming consonants; c) the retention of double consonants [17, *106 — 125]*.

These features of consonantal languages can be well observed in Ukrainian or Russian too. Phonological typology was also investigated by other Western linguists, as *T. M. Milewski* and *C. V.* (American Indian languages), C. *E. Bazell* (Turkic and Bantu languages) *Ch. E. Hockett* and others.

In Soviet times typological investigations were initiated by *N. Ya. Marr* (1864 — 1934) who investigated the Caucasian area languages and by *I.I. Meshchaninov* (1883 — 1967), whose subject of investigation was predicative, objective, and attributive relations in different Caucasian and Paleoasiatic languages. These linguists suggested their typological classifications of languages as well.

Prominent before World War II and immediately after it was the Ukrainian typologist *M. Ya. Kalynovych,* whose object of contrasting was the word in different European and South Asian languages [18, 96] The domain of Contrastive investigations of his disciple *Yu. O. Zhluktenka,* comprised the English and Ukrainian languages [11, *160]* and their interrelations in the North American countries.

During the late 50's and in the 60's and 70's a series of international and national symposia, congresses and scientific conferences were held (Oslo, 1957), Bucharest (1967), Moscow (1963, 1964, 1974), etc., at which the elaboration of new principles and more efficient methods of typological investigation were discussed [34, 203 — 207]. Of special attention were also questions concerning the classification of universals, the typological study of lexicon, the aims and principles of historical typology, ways of contrasting the microsystems of related and non-related languages, as well as approaches to the typological analysis of the corresponding level units

the definition of a language type *(V. D. Arakin),* the constants of dominant features and tendencies in the contrasted languages *(G. P. Melnikov)*
and others.

Many of the then problems have been solved already. Thus, the "type" of a language is identified today on the basis of its dominants in the systems of phonetic/phonological, morphological or syntactic level units. On this ground there can be distinguished the following types of languages: a) consonantal, vocalic (after Isachenko); b) agglutinative (like Turkic); c) synthetic or more exactly-predominantly/mainly synthetic (like Ukrainian or Russian); d) analytical i.e. predominantly analytical, like English, etc. Typologically relevant may equally be some dominant prosodic and other features in a language/group of languages. But the structural type of a language can not be identified on the basis of a coincident isomorphic feature within a certain microsystem of a language. For instance, the rigid order of words in Chinese and English affirmative sentences can not testify to these two languages being of one and the same language type.

Topics for Comprehension Check and Class Discussion.

1. The subject of contrastive typology and its theoretical and practical aims.

2. The principal terms and notions of contrastive typology (isomorphic/ allomorphic features and phenomena, absolute/near universals, typological constants, idiomatic, dominant and recessive features, etc.).

3. Kinds of typological investigations/various typologies (special typology, level typologies, areal typology, etc.).

4. The typological method vs. the historical and comparative method, the contrastive linguistic method of investigation.

5. The principal linguistic methods employed in contrastive typology (the comparative, the inductive/deductive methods, the ICs, the transformational and substitutional methods, *Greenberg's* indexes method).

6. Give a short prehistory of European contrastive typology of the 17th — 18th centuries. The Ukrainian lexemes in Sanskrit.

7. The contribution to contrastive typological investigations of the

brothers *F.* and *A. Schlegel* and of *W. Humboldt, H. Steinthal* and others in the 19th century linguistics.

8. Prague school linguists *(V. Mathesius, N. Trubetskoy, V. Skalička, R. Jakobson,* and others) and their contribution to typological investigations.

9. Other 20th century linguists *(E. Sapir, J. Greenberg, O. Isachenko, N. Ya. Marr, M. Kalynovych, Y. Zhluktenko)* and their contribution to typological and Contrastive linguistics.

10. The dominant typical features of a language vs. the structural type of this language.

TYPOLOGY OF THE PHONETIC AND PHONOLOGICAL SYSTEMS

Any typological investigation of phonetic/phonological features of two or more languages inevitably involves a Contrastive study of their sounds and phonemes. Accordingly, there are recognised two closely connected branches of linguistic science treating the units and phenomena of the phonetic and phonological levels: 1) Contrastive typological phonetics and 2) Contrastive typological phonology.

The aim of Contrastive typological phonetics is to identify and investigate the isomorphic and allomorphic features of the speech sounds within the sound systems of languages under contrasted investigation. The main purpose of Contrastive typological phonology is respectively the identification and investigation of isomorphic and allomorphic features in the systems of phonological units in English and Ukrainian.

In conformity with the goals pursued are also the objects of investigation in each of these branches. Thus, the subject-matter of phonetic typology in the first place is the system of speech sounds and their quantitative and qualitative characteristics in the contrasted languages, while the subject-matter of phonological typology is the system of phonemes and their quantitative and qualitative characteristics in speech of the contrasted languages.

It must be added that apart from speech sounds and phonemes which are contrasted by typological phonetics and typological phonology respectively, each of these branches has also another common subject-

matter. And this is combinability and functioning of speech sounds/ phonemes in words and syllables as well as prosodic phenomena, which include speech melody, utterance stress, tempo, pausation and voice timbre/voice setting. Hence, Contrastive typology of phonetic and phonological systems of all languages investigates discrete and non-discrete units on both-segmental and supersegmental levels and their features of universal nature i. e. those pertaining to all languages. Consequently, these units and phenomena are characterised by some common features: thus, for example, speech sounds in all languages are of two major types — vowels and consonants. Besides, the functions of phonemes in all languages, including English and Ukrainian, are common. The main of these functions are:

1) The constitutive function i. e. the ability of phonemes to constitute separate morphemes and simple, derived or compound words. For example, the English phonemes /t/, */p/, /o/* may constitute /top/ *top* or */pot/pot;* the speech sounds /i:/, /d/, /1/ may constitute 1) /di:l/ *deal* or 2) /li:d/ *lead* respectively. Similarly in Ukrainian: the speech sounds /a/, /к/, /т/ may constitute the words *так, кат* or *акт.*

2) The distinctive/Contrastive function of phonemes can be illustrated through the commutation test or substitution of speech sounds in words in their initial, medial or final position. For example:

Position	English	Ukrainian
Initial	bAt-kAt-iut-jAt	бити-лити-пити-рити-шити
Medial	maed-meid-mid-mAd	сало-село-сіло-соло
Final	big-bil-bm-bit	сів-сік-сіл-сім

Typologically contrasted may also be vowels and consonants (or both) as well as their allophones / variants. Thus, the English phonemes /a/, /A/ and *la:l* can be contrasted with the Ukrainian phoneme /a/, similarly the English forelingual consonants /t/, /d/, /n/ can be counteropposed to their Ukrainian counterparts /д-д'/, /т-т'/, /н-н'/, etc.

Another equally important discreet unit which can be treated at the phonetic or phonological level is *syllable.* Apart from sounds and syllables, some non-segmental or supersegmental units or phenomena like *word stress, utterance stress* and all types *of pitch patterns* can become an

35

configuration of each English and Ukrainian intonation pattern.

1. "May I speak now?" said Doris. 2. "Were they obliged to be so rough?" 3. "Didn't she know that he was married? " 4. "She has three children then? " 5. "Why didn't you tell me?" 6. "And the children?" 7. "Why, what on earth's the matter? "Nothing. Why?" 8. "Why didn't you tell me?" 9. "What are you doing?" cried Doris. 10. "What we were doing with that woman?" she asked abruptly. 11. "How d'you know? 12. "You understand, Doris, don't you?" 13. "Oh, you know a hell of a lot, don't you?" (Pritchett) 14. And his *voice-he never heard it live before* - seemed to be unnatural. 15. "Could you - *would you -* wait just a moment for me?" 16. Usually easy-going and kindly, Mary was now venomous. (F. King) 17. "There was more in a look I bought once -*A trangle of fight.* An analysis of mysticism, by I.J. Partriadge, D. Litt." (A. Wilson)18. "She's get heaps of drink there-whishy, cherry-brandy, creme de menthe." 19. Then one of the girls, forgetting Huggett's admonition to Susan, said... (Ibid.).

TYPOLOGY OF THE LEXICAL SYSTEMS

Factors Facilitating the Typological Study of Lexicon

The lexical level, like any other level of language stratification, is naturally represented by some characteristic **constants** and their peculiar features as well. The **principal constants** of this language level in the contrasted languages are the following:

1. Words, their semantic classes and word-forming means as well as their structural models and stylistic peculiarities of use.

2. The second object of contrasting alongside of separate words and their classes present the lexico-semantic groups (LSGs) of words which are pertained to the contrasted languages.

3. The third group of lexical units contrasted at this level are stable and idiomatic expressions which are also of universal nature, though they always have some national peculiarities in every single language.

It must be emphasised that regular lexemes and lexical units, despite their seemingly chaotic mass of different words and stable expressions are, like units of other language levels, systemically arranged. The systemic organisation of lexicon is conditioned in all languages by lingual as well as by extralingual factors which are of universal nature. Among the extralingual factors, predetermining the systemic organisation of lexicon, the following should be pointed out as most important: a) the physical and mental factors; b) the environmental factors; c) the social (суспільні) factors.

A. It is only due to the physical needs of human beings, and to a great extent due to the needs of all living beings in general that all languages have a great number of common notions of actions designated by such verbs as *live, eat, drink, think, sleep, wake, walk, run, jump, love, merry, die, etc.* And it is only due to the common mental activity of man that every single language of the world has the notions designated by such words as *speak, think, ask, answer, decide, realise, imagine, understand* and many others. Likewise only due to the unique natural environment of human beings all languages have acquired a large number of common notions designated by words which reflect the multitudes of objects and phenomena surrounding every human being on the globe such as *the sun, the moon, the stars, the wind, the sky, thunder, lightning, rain,* as well as various species *of plants, trees, fruits, colours, and living beings like fish, insects, mice, cats, dogs,* etc.

An equally important role in the formation of a mostly common lexicon in all languages is played by the social factor. The latter involves various social phenomena as well as relationships and activities of man. These come to being and become obvious already at the family level involving the relationships and having their expression in such words as *mother, father, child, sister, brother, aunt, uncle, grandmother, grandfather,* etc. All words and combinations of words designating the many notions, which appear due to the above-mentioned principles, constitute a large typologically common class of words referred to as *universal lexicon.* Here naturally belong many other groups of words as, for example, those expressing deictic notions (pronouns, adverbial and adverbially expressed feelings, exclamations, specific national culturally biased notions).

Apart from this, all developed languages of the world have some other common layers of lexicon which came to being under the influence of different social, economic, historical and other extralingual factors. These layers form dialectal, professional, poetic, archaic, slang, international, specifically national, etc. lexicons. Each of them has its distinctive typologically characteristic features of isomorphic nature in common. Thus, the functioning of dialectal lexicons in any language is restricted to a definite historically destined territory (cf. the Scottish dialect, London cockney or the Western Ukrainian dialects, etc.).

Quite opposite by their nature, which is also a universal peculiarity property, are different international elements (words, phrases and sometimes separate sentences) which split in all languages in two typologically distinct subgroups: 1) genuine internationalisms having a common linguistic form, a common source of origin and identical lexical meaning (cf.: *parliament, poet, theatre, molecule, theorem, forum, history, waltz, sword of Damocles, to pass the Rubicon, Pandora's box,* etc.) and 2) lexical loan internationalisms which have the same lexical meaning but exist only in national lingual forms. These are usually terms like *specific gravity/weight питома вага, the law of gravitation закон земного тяжіння, agreement (gram.) узгодження, the composite sentence складне речення,* case відмінок, *addition* додавання, *subtraction* віднімання, *division* ділення, etc.

In contrast to internationalisms there exists one more (already mentioned above) and typologically relevant group of lexis comprising the units of *nationally specific lexicon* (both words and different collocations) such as the English *farthing, shilling, dollar, Chartist, haggis, Yorkshire pudding, to cut off with a shilling, to accept the Chiltern Hundreds,* etc.). Many such or the like nationally specific or culturally biased elements, as they are often called today, exist in Ukrainian and naturally in other languages. Cf. *кутя, вареники, думи, бандурист, кобзар, запорожець, ставати на рушник, "Ще не вмерла Україна ", козацькому роду нема переводу, герої Крутів, січовики, etc.*

Closely related to the group of specifically national notions are also many words presenting in Ukrainian the so-called "kids" language. The

latter involves mostly tender disyllabic words (usually diminutive nouns and verbs) predominantly used when addressing directly or indirectly one's own or somebody else's kids who can already understand their parents or other persons' speech but are still unable to form coherent phrases or sentences themselves. The most often used all over Ukraine tender kids' words involve mostly the following parts of speech:

1. Nouns: биць/биця *(male, calf),* киця *(cat or kitten),* бася *(goat),* миня *(cow, calf),* кося *(horse or foal, colt),* куця/паця *(pig or piglet),* гав-гав/цюця *(dog, puppy),* гуля/гулі *(pigeon(s)),* гуся *(goose),* тася *(duck or duckling),* тютя *(usually hen or cock and some times any other domestic bird), etc.*

2. Members of family: неня/мама *(mummy),* тато *(daddy),* буня/бабуня *(grannie),* дядя *(uncle),* діда *(grandfather),* няня *(nurse),* доця *(daughter), etc.*

3. Parts of human body: вусьо *(ear), нозя (legfoot), руця (hand), оцьо/оці (eye, eyes).*

4. Other nouns denoting different objects or phenomena: буцьо *(apple),* лозя *(spoon),* кика *(meat),* папа *(bread),* кетя *(sweety),* моня *(milk),* льоля *(shirt, dress),* дюдя *(cold weather),* люля *(cot, cradle, bed),* ляля *(kid, doll),* квітя *(flower),* цяця *(any toy),* сося *(soother, baby's dummy),* пуся *(comforter),* циця *(mother's breast),* коко *(egg),* вува *(wolf or anything to scare the child),* цьомати *(to kiss)* and a few others.

B. The linguistic principles of typological classification of lexicon are based in all languages on the following distinguishing features of words: a) on their common lexico-grammatical nature; b) on their belonging to a common lexico-semantic group; c) on their peculiar stylistic function and meaning; d) on their denotative or connotative (or both) meanings, etc.

Thus, in accordance with their most general implicit lexico-grammatical meaning all words are grouped in any living or dead language of the world into a) notionals and b) functionals.

The notionals (повнозначні слова) serve in all languages as principal means of nomination. They also constitute the bulk of words in English and Ukrainian and any other language's lexicon. Apart from their often complicated semantic structure they have different morphological, syn-

tactic and stylistic features of their own. These are not of equal importance in the contrasted languages, however. In English, for example, it is not always possible to say for sure, what part of speech such words as *blue, hand, house* or even *man* belong to. Each of them may be a verb *(to blue smth, to man ships, to hand smth. over);* a noun: *(the blue of the sky, the man, two hands)* or an adjective *(the blue sky),* or even have an adverbial meaning (cf. to see blue), etc.

It is mostly not so in Ukrainian, whose words, when even out of a microtext, clearly display their lexico-grammatical nature (cf. *хліб, синій, синь, праця, небо, ясний, добре, синити, чоловік/людина, рука, будинок, синіти), etc.*

The often indistinct lexico-grammatical meaning of many English notionals does not in the least discard the existence of isomorphic lexico-grammatical classes of them in the contrasted languages. Moreover, both contrasted languages have an isomorphic or even a universal peculiarity of expressing the most general implicit meanings of substantivity, verbiality, deictic properties, adverbiality, etc. thus representing nouns, adjectives, pronouns, numerals, verbs, adverbs and statives that are parts of speech performing the same functions in English and Ukrainian sentences. The notion of the parts of speech, therefore, belongs to the universal ones.

As to functionals, they are common in English and Ukrainian with the exception of the articles *the* and a/an. Namely: prepositions прийменники, conjunctions сполучники, particles частки, interjections вигуки, modal words and modal phrases модальні слова та модальні вирази.

Common therefore are 12 lexico-gramrnatical classes of words each of which has mostly the same properties in the contrasted languages.

The second isomorphic class of words distinguished on linguistic principles represents practically common in the contrasted languages lexico-semantic groups of words (the LSGs). Words of a LSG may often have a regular synonymic relationship in English and Ukrainian. For example, the notion of "dwelling" unites the following row of nouns denoting different kinds of shelter: *dug-out (печера, землянка), shanty (халупа), mud-house (глинянка), cabin (хатина), house, cottage, bungalow, villa, palace, apartment,* etc. There may also be dwellings characteris-

tic of some ethnic groups, such as wigwam or tepee of the North American Indians or *igloo* of the indigenous people in Greenland.

Common lexico-semantic groups can be observed among English and Ukrainian adjectives denoting dimension (cf. *big, large, great, huge, gigantic, enormous, small, tiny,* etc.). Similarly in Ukrainian: великий, здоровий, гігантський, малий, невеликий, дрібний, манюнький, манюсінький, манюпусінький, etc. Or adjectives denoting beauty *(beautiful, nice, handsome, pretty, smart, good-looking,* etc.). Similarly in Ukrainian: *гарний, красивий, вродливий, миловидний, файний* (діал.). Adjectives denoting colours: *red, yellow, green, blue, pink, brown, azure, orange, violet, white, black, gray, hazel,* etc. Or in Ukrainian: *червоний, жовтий, зелений, синій, голубий, бурий, коричневий, оранжевий,* etc. Common are also verbal LSGs, for example: verbs of saying *(say, tell, converse, talk, speak, retort)* and in Ukrainian: говорити, розмовляти, балакати, відмовляти, шептатися, заперечувати, etc. Verbs denoting mental or physical perceptions *(comprehend, understand, know, like, think; see, hear, taste, feel, touch).* They are mostly the same in Ukrainian: *розуміти, знати, думати, вважати, гадати, бачити, чути, відчувати, смакувати, торкатися;* verbs denoting motion with or without the help of a vehicle (cf. *jump, walk, roam, move, wave, wander, paddle, bicycle,* etc.). These verbs have equivalents in Ukrainian: *стрибати, ходити, блукати, швендяти, лазити, веслувати, плавати, їхати (на возі, машині, поїздом), летіти літаком/гелікоптером* and others.

Apart from the above-mentioned there can be singled out several other isomorphic/common LSGs in the contrasted languages. Cf. adjectives denoting age *(young, old, middle-aged, green молодий, старий, підстаркуватий, середнього/старшого віку, молодий та зелений, etc.);* adverbs denoting quickness/manner: *quickly, swiftly, momentally, etc. швидко, хутко, вмить, миттєво, etc.*

Separate LSGs are formed by functionals. Thus, among prepositional LSGs there may be local prepositions *(on, in, at, over, above, under, below, behind, на, під, коло, поруч, позад, біля,* etc.); prepositions denoting direction (to, *into, from, towards, up, down, у, в, з, вгору, вниз, від, до* etc.). Similar LSGs exist also among the English conjunc-

tions, particles and other parts of speech which have their corresponding equivalents in Ukrainian and in other languages.

The Semiotic or Global Classification of Lexicon

In recent decades one more and really manifold and all-embrasing classification of lexicon has been put forward by the American linguist E. Nida and supported by the Russian linguist A. Ufimtseva. This classification is based on a considerably wider approach to the classification of all words, than the above-mentioned already traditional classifications of lexical units. Unlike previous approaches, this one involves global semi-otic classes of words belonging to a certain lexico-grammatical class/ part of speech. Hence, according to the *semiological* classification, as it was unanimously termed [51; 33], all nouns which denote substances fall into several major classes subdivided in their turn into some semiotic subclasses. Among the major of the suggested by E. Nida semiotic classes of nouns testifying to the principles employed by this American linguist are the following:

Class 1. Concrete, countable life nouns denoting non-persons. They include *animals, birds, beasts of burdon, cattle, livestock, game, wild animals, table birds, flocks and herds, poultry, birds of prey.* Class I also includes metaphorically used animals' and birds' names that are used as connotatives in the contrasted languages and characterise the negative features of people (Cf. parrot, fox, pig, swine, rat, etc.) and in Ukrainian: лисиця/лис, собака, кабанюра, бицюра and many others.

Class 2. Concrete, countable life nouns denoting persons. Their number is estimated to be in English and Ukrainian over 6,000. These include proper names of people, names of nations (Germans, Ukrainians, Poles, etc., англійці, німці, поляки, українці); races (the whites, the yellow, the Negroes, the Afro-Americans, білі, жовті, чорні/негри, афроамериканці), ancestral and modifying names *(leader, chairman, robber, керівник/вождь, головуючий, грабіжник, обманщик).* Here also belong such jargonisms as *boob, dully, fool,* which are amply represented in every language (Cf. Ukrainian: *бевз, тупак, дурник, телепень, бовдур, пень, etc.).*

Class 3. Concrete, countable, non-person, inanimate nouns representing plant names *(cabbage, beetroot, carrot, dill, potato, lilie* капуста, буряк, кріп, картопля, лілея, etc.); names of celestial bodies and atmospheric masses as *(comet, moon, sun, stars, clouds* комета, місяць, сонце, зорі, хмара); parts of human body *(hand, head, arm, leg, nose, foot* рука, нога, голова, ступня, ніс); names of arts *(dancing, painting, singing,* танці, співи, малювання); means of communication *(internet/telephon, telegraph, radio,* телефон, інтернет, телеграф, радіо); names of unique unreal bodies *(dickens/genius, gnome, nymph,* чорт, домовик, гном, злий дух, русалка); metaphorical names, as *stick ("дубина", "колода"), block ("довбешка/ довбня"), the heart (серденько), the sun (сонце), cf. сонечко/ серденько ти моє,* etc.

Class 4. Concrete life nouns, non-person, represented in the contrasted languages by different common collective nouns (names of multitudes) as: *nation, race, family, crew, staff, gang, company, police, militia, forces, troops,* etc. Some of these nouns have in Ukrainian somewhat different properties being used, for example, in singular only *(міліція, поліція).* These nouns (militia and police) may be used in English both in singular and in plural. Eg.: *police/ militia is an important state force.* But: *Police/militia have come/gone in time. Police/militia have avoided clashes with the demonstrators.*

Other life nouns belonging to class 4 in Ukrainian coincide with the English ones. Namely: *родина, раса, нація, екіпаж, штаб, група, військо, збіговисько, зграя, etc.*

Class 5. Collective life nouns representing species of animals *(cattle, sheep or poultry,*худоба/товар, вівці, домашня птиця), fish *(school offish косяк риби)* and nouns denoting a mass of some living beings: *swarm of bees рій бджіл, pack of dogs/wolves зграя/тічка собак/вовків, flock of sheep/herd of cattle отара овець/череда корів, etc.*

Class 6. Concrete, inanimate, uncountable non-person nouns that include all singularia tantum group denoting mass or material as well as different abstract nouns: *butter, bread, sugar, oil, snow, sand, silver,*

gas, glue, steam, soot, etc. They are the same in Ukrainian: залізо, срібло, повітря, паліччя, молоко, білизна, листя, збіжжя, залізяч- чя, тремтіння, триння, etc.

***Class** 7.* According to the authors of the semiotic classification of lexicon this class contains numerous and various abstract nouns whose number in the contrasted languages is rather large. Cf. *business, in- formation, news, feudalism, thought, thinking, significance, tolerance, etc.* Similarly in Ukrainian: гадка, думка, значимість, погляд, вмін- ня, знання, мислення, безробіття, намагання, завзяття, ентузіазм, etc.

The Identification of Semiotic
Superclasses of Words

It should be added in conclusion that the noun as a part of speech underwent in the semiotic/global approach the most detailed semantic classification. As to all other notionals, they were allocated by E. Nida to the second large semiotic superclass, which embraces the so-called *identifying subclasses* of words. The latter class includes all non- substantive words which together constitute five large semiotic sub- classes of lexemes, each presenting a separate part of speech. Conse- quently, the *identifying* semiotic subclasses split into the following subclasses:

***Subclass 1.** Verbal words* presenting various classes of notional and functional verbs. Notional verbs are presented by different LSGs characterised by their general implicit grammatical meaning as transi- tivity or intransitivity, perfective or non-perfective (or any other as- pect), reflexiveness or non-reflexiveness, etc. Isomorphism is ob- served, for instance, in English and Ukrainian in the existence of tran- sitivity and non-transitivity of verbs and consequently in their ability to take the direct and indirect object (cf. send <u>her</u> a <u>letter</u> послати їй листа) and consequently to be used in active and passive voice (cf. to build - to be built будувати -бути збудованим). Equally presented are other implicit and explicit categorial meanings and forms of the verb as person, number, mood, tense forms with their isomorphic and allomorphic traits/peculiarities in each language etc.

126

***Subclass** 2* of identifying semiotic classification is presented in all languages by the universal modifiers of syntactic objects, in other words by adjectives. These words split in all languages into two subclasses 1) the qualitative and 2) the relative adjectives (a universal typological feature). Qualitative adjectives in all languages have degrees of comparison (also a universal feature). Cf. *long - longer - the longest* довгий -довший - найдовший. Most of languages (at least the European ones) have one more isomorphic feature which is called suppletivity (cf. *good-better - the best,* добрий - кращий - найкращий; *bad - worse - the worst,* поганий - гірший -найгірший; but only in English: *little - less -the least).* Besides, isomorphic are the syntactic functions of adjectives in most languages, though the nature of adjectival classes may differ. Thus, the Ukrainian language has the class of possessive adjectives *(мамин, татів, сестрин, Петрова книжка),* which are nouns but not adjectives in English and other languages.

Typological differences are also observed in the formation and expression of the synthetic degrees of comparison of adjectives in English and Ukrainian, the English language using the endings -er, -est and the definite article in the superlative degree while in Ukrainian the suffix --*іш, -вш, -жч* and the prefix *най-* (in the superlative degree) are used. Cf. polite -politer - the politest ввічливий - ввічливіший - найввічливіший. Beside this, Ukrainian makes use of gender, number and case inflexions (eg. довгий - **довший** - найдовший; довга - довша

- найдовша; довге - довше - найдовше, etc.).

***Subclass** 3* in the identifying semiotic classification embraces pronouns that have in most languages both isomorphic and allomorphic features with nouns or numerals and functionally with adjectives (cf. Peter

- he, love - she, the four - they, something/nothing - it воно, the first перший, the third третій, etc.). Universal are practically all the main classes of pronouns, though their number may be different in various languages. Thus, in English, Ukrainian and other European languages there exist personal pronouns (I, you, he, she, we, they я, ти/ви, він, вона, ми, вони), demonstrative pronouns (this, that, such, those, etc. цей, той, такий, ті), possessive pronouns (his, her, our, their його, її, наш, їхній). In English, however, there exist possessive absolute pronouns (mine,

hers, ours, yours) and possessive conjoined ones i.e. those of my, his, her, etc. Therefore, semiotic subclasses of pronouns may sometimes be different in some languages, their nomenclature may also not coincide, as it is in case with the English pronoun *you* which may have two lexical variants in Ukrainian: *ви* and *ти* correspondingly. Similarly in Korean which has no pronoun she. The only class of pronouns that has no definite nomenclature in many languages is presented by the so-called class of indefinite pronouns, not all of which are sometimes included into one separate class.

Subclass 4 represents numerical words that substitute corresponding figures. This semiotic subclass is represented by some subclasses of numerals having universal nature. Namely: 1) cardinal numerals (three, twenty-one, one hundred and ten три, двадцять один, сто десять, etc.); 2) ordinal numerals (the first, the tenth, the thirty-first перше, десяте, тридцять перше, etc.). Like adjectives, the ordinal numerals in many languages may have gender, case and number distinctions (cf. Ukrainian перший, перша, перші, першої, першому, першим, перших, першими, etc.). Of universal nature is also the subclass (and notion) of fractionals (common fractions as two-thirds, one-fifths, three-fifths дві третіх, одна п'ята, три п'ятих, etc.) and decimal (десяткові) fractions as 0.5, 2.25 (zero point five, two point twenty five, etc.).

The nomenclature of numerical subclasses, however, may be quite different in some languages. Thus, in Ukrainian there are distinguished *indefinite* cardinal *numerals* as *кілька, декілька, кільканадцять, мало/небагато* (of something), and collective numerals like *двійко, трійко, п'ятеро/п'ятірко, обоє, обидва,* etc. Some of these numerals are allotted in English to the subclass of indefinite pronouns *(many, some, both,* etc.). The main constants of this semiotic subclass in all languages, however, remain the cardinal, the ordinal and fractional numerals, which are pertained to every single language on the globe.

Subclass 5 of the identifying semiotic classification presents the adverb which constitutes a universal word modifying an action or state (cf. to read *quickly/slowly;* very well читати *швидко/гарно, дуже добре),* etc. Adverbial words in all languages split into several semantic classes which are mainly universal, i.e. pertained to all languages without excep-

tion. The main of these semantic subclasses are as follows: 1) adverbs denoting/expressing temporal relations: *now, then, when, today зараз, тоді, коли, сьогодні;* 2) adverbs denoting/expressing local relations: *here, everywhere, nowhere, there, etc. тут, ніде, повсюди, там;* 3) adverbs expressing direction: *eastwards, whence, thence східніше, туди, звідти, звідусіль;* 4) adverbs expressing manner: *how, so, slowly як, так, повільно,* etc.; 5) adverbs expressing degree: *quite, almost, completely, etc. зовсім, цілком, повністю, майже,* etc.

It is necessary to add that adverbial meanings can be also expressed by prepositional nouns, adverbial word-groups and adverbial clauses. Hence, there are to be distinguished in this subclass adverbials expressing:

A. *temporal relations:* *at night, by day, during the day, in Sep tember, last month, at that time, in 1999, etc. Similarly in Ukrainian: протягом/впродовж: дня, тоді, зараз, вдень, за тиждень, серед ночі, у вересні, минулого тижня.*

B. *Local relations:* *in Kyiv, somewhere, here, there, far away, not far from there, where the road forks,* etc. Similarly in Ukrainian: *десь, там/тут, далеко звідси, десь у Сибіру, де шляхи розходяться.*

C. *Adverbials expressing direction:* *into the room, to London, from Rome, towards the capital,* etc. And in Ukrainian: *у поле, на Берлін, із США, (політ) на місяць, звідки сонце сходить.*

D. *Adverbials expressing manner:* *slowly/quickly, enthusiasti cally, by plane/by train, with great speed, quickly, without enthusi asm; повільно, гарно, повагом, з увагою, з ентузіазмом, без задо волення, поза сумнівом, з великою швидкістю, etc.*

It is easy to notice, therefore, that the identifying classes of words, like the "global" ones, are singled out on the ground of their most general lexico-grammatical meaning. In other words, the semiotic approach to the classification of lexicon is based on the most general grammatical meaning of notionals i.e. on their ability to possess and express substantivity, verbiality, adverbiality or the quality of objects and phenomena and their quantity. The semiotic approach alongside of the most general implicit grammatical meanings also takes into account the semantic variability of words forming separate semantic classes as well as the identifying subclasses of different notionals.

Socially, Stylistically and Functionally
Distinguished Classes of Words

Apart from the above-stated, there exist some other approaches and principles that are typologically relevant for the systemic arrangement and classification of lexicon. As has been already mentioned, among them is first and foremost the social principle, according to which the dialectal layer of lexicon is distinguished. Thus, one of the most characteristic territorial differences in the lexicon of English dialects is the London cockney with its distinguishing use of /h/ in several words with initial vowels as in *hopen for open, hup for up, hus for us,* etc. In some other words with the initial /h/ this sound is also omitted in speech *(cf. am for ham, ill for hill, Arry for Harry).* The concluding /g/ in cockney is often omitted too as in *doin', readin', mornin',* etc.

Clearly distinguished is also the Scottish dialect that once had claims, due to Allen Ramsay's and R. Burns' poetic works, to functioning for some time as a literary English variety. Besides, the Irish dialect and some others can still be clearly distinguished on the British isles.

Dialectal differences are also observed in Ukrainian, the most distinguishing of them being Western, Northen and Central regional dialects. In western Hutsul dialects, for instance, *дєдя* and *нянько* are used for *father, верховина* for *uplands;* in Halych region *когут* is used for *півень, вуйко* for *uncle (дядько), вуйна* for *дядина, файний* for *гарний,* etc. Nevertheless, the difference between the Ukrainian dialects and literary standard Ukrainian is never so stricking as it is between cockney and Standard English or, for example, between literary German and its dialectal variations. That is why the dialectal lexicon or dialectal phonetics and other aspects of dialectal English, Ukrainian, German and other languages is always in the focus of typologists' attention.

Socially predetermined in each language, however, is not only the appearance and existence of dialects and dialectal lexicons or dialectal prosody. Due to the natural development of human society socially predetermined is even the hierarchical distinction in the relationship of some notionals that are used for the expression of family relationships. Thus, there are universally distinguished and indisputably acknowledged in all

languages such higher from the point of view of subordination notions as parents (father and mother) on the one hand and their hierarchically lower in rank concerning their age and position children, who are dominated by their parents, on the other.

Typologically relevant and isomorphic is also the social ranking of some other notions. The king or president in a country is higher in rank than any minister, and a master is higher in rank than his apprentice. But undoubtedly the most striking evidence of the social factor's influence upon the lexicon in each single developed language is the borrowing of internationalisms which reflects some definite social stages in the development of human society in general. In consequence there appeared many new notions borrowed first from ancient Greek *(apostle, church, priest, poet, theatre, history, zoology, democracy,* etc.) and Latin reflecting the progress of the Roman social science and culture. Consequently, there appeared social, political, juridical and medical terms of Lain origin: *parliament, senate, jurisdiction, angina, appendicitis, pneumonia, tuberculosis,* military terms like *army, port, wall, mile, legion* and many others. Under the influence of the latest social and mainly scientific and technological revolution all languages of developed nations have borrowed an immense number of foreign words originating from different spheres of life and being mostly international. Thus, in Ukrainian apart from the already existing lexical units only during the last two decades there appeared in our mass media and in everyday usage such English words as *коми'ютер, дисплей, менеджмент, маркетинг, бартер, імпічмент, інтернет, кліп, дискета, сканер, серфінг, валеологія, Грант, офшорний, провайдер, траст, пабліситі, тренінг, фрістайл, боді шипінг, пауерліфтинг, фітнес, кікбоксинг, плеймейкер, топ-шоу, дог-шоу, памперси,* etc. The American mass culture, which has become a very influential element of social life, brought to Ukrainian many hitherto unknown words and notions as *гім/хім, топ, кліп, шоу, саунд-трек, кантрі* (music), etc. The English language itself has also borrowed many new international terms of different origin. Apart from the already known bo-rowings as *blitz, blitzkrieg, U-boat* (German), *Molotov cocktail, Bolshevist, Gulag, Duma* (Russian) or *hryvnia* (Ukrainian), etc. the English lan-

guage has acquired a large number of quite new words i.e. neologisms. The latter have come from different languages, both European and Asian and belong to various spheres of social life and human activities as:

a) social relations and other social phenomena. For example: *yakuza* /ja:ku'za:/ Japanese gangster (from Japanese), *Chorzim* /ho:z'i:m/ re- emigrated to Israel Jews (Hebrew); *brigatisti* /brigatisti/ members of the *brigate rosse* (Ital. terrorists); *(Al) fatah* Palestine guerilla group organisation (its member).

b) Neologisms belonging to the sphere of cultural life: *Cafe theatre /kse:*

feiteiae:tre/ room for lecturing and theatrical performances, *policier/* pousjei/ detective novel or film (both of French origin), *hayashi* Japanese theatre (from Japanese), *salva* (Spanish) Caribbean dancing music (mambo, jazz and rock-like).

c) Neologisms reflecting borrowings from various cusines as *calzone* (Italian) high curds pie; *burrito* (Spanish) maize pancakes wrapped around the minced veal, curds and fried beans; hoisin sauce (Chinese) thick dark-red soy and garlic sauce with spices.

d) Eastern sports terms as *iaido* (Japanese) kind of fencing, *basko* a fifteen matches competition in sumo.

e) Terms designating religious and medical notions as *satsang* (Sanskrit)

Hindo sermon, *zazen* (Japanese) meditation in *dzen* Buddhism, *shiatsu* (Japanese) kind of healing massage; *sulfazin/sulphazin* (Russian) medicine (for the mentally ill), etc.

Very wide-spread during the last decades became the derivative means of forming neologisms in English as *workaholic* heavy worker, *closeaholic* (lover of clothes), *milkaholic* lover of milk, chonoholic i. e. sweet tooth солодун, etc.

No less productive is also the use of prefixes to form neologisms in English. Cf. *megadual* smth. better than twice as good, *megarich* i.e. very rich, *megafirm* a very large firm, *megaprojects* very rich or complicated projects, etc.

Suffixes are also used to form neologisms. Thus, the international suffix **-ism** forms *afroism* admirer of the African culture, hyppyism adherent of hyppies. The suffix *-y/-ie* forms neologisms as groupie a fan/ admirer of a music group or popular star, preppie pupil/schoolboy of a

private school or offspring of the middle class, *fundie* adherent of fundamentalism or any radical group, etc.

Many neologisms are regular collocations characteristic not only of the English language. The most common of them have the N+N or A+N structure as *athmic cleansing,* i.e. banishment, *hot button,* i.e. high interest in goods (or political figures) social structures; *safe haven* protected zone in a country to safeguard a religious or national minority, *shake holder economy* an attractive for all citizens economy or economic progress.

Apart from word and phrasal neologisms the English language makes use of abbreviations which are usually different terms like the VCR *video-casette recorder,* MTV *Music Television,* OMOV *one member-one vote, GASP Group Against Smoke and Pollution,* ASH *Actions on Smoking and Health,* SMAT *special weapons and tactics (juridical term);* HDTV *High Definition Television, i.e.* TV having high distinctness of picture; Gerbill (Brit.) *Great Education Reform Bill(of* 1988); CLASS *Computer-based Laboratory of Automated School System* (classes of programmed teaching).

Many neologisms form a common subgroup of lexicon in the contrasted languages (as well as in all languages). They may sometimes coincide in English and Ukrainian (when they are wide known or internationalisms). Among these are, for example, *clarifier* (the hearing aid), *ADVIL* (medical pills), *AIDS* and respectively СНІД in Ukrainian. English new borrowings from Russian and Ukrainian are, for example, *cosmodrome", glasnost, perestroika, Rukh movement, hryvnia, Rada (the Verkhovna Rada), salo* and others. Comparatively new borrowings from the English language in present-day Ukrainian are *брокер, джинси, котон, бартер, дискета, дисплей, касета, гіт/хіт, блюз, рекет, маркетинґ, офіс/офісний, ретро, менеджмент, сервіс, аудит, стільниковий зв'язок, мобільний телефон, і-мейл, гамбургер, чізбурґер (from* English), *піцца* (from Italian), біст-ро'/бистро' (from French) and several others.

One more subgroup constitute colloquial newly-formed neologisms which are characteristic only of a national living language. They designate some new notions formed on the basis of the previously existing as

133

well as on the basis of previously non-existing denotata. For example, in English: *spiv* (black marketeer), *sky-mobile/egg-beater* (helicopter), *Iran-gate, Ramboism* (violence shown in films/on TV), *"wellness"* i.e. health (cf. to return patients to "wellness"), *wimp* i.e. *nonentity* (ніщо, нікчема), *yuppy* i.e. young upwardly-mobile professional, etc. Similar neologisms, both colloquial and literary, exist in Ukrainian. Cf. *"зелені"* (амер. долари), *"телек"* (телевізор), *"шкура"* (шкіряна куртка), *"Бушові стегенця"* (стегенця американських бройлерів), *кравчучка* (вертикальний/легенький двоколісний візок), *кучмовоз* (більший і міцніший двоколісний вертикальний візок типу тачки), *попса* (американські чи інші естрадні пісні низької якості), *стречі* (вузькі дівчачі штани), *капрі* (дівочі штани-кльош із розрізом унизу), *фритюр* (смажіння), *мондіаль* (світовий чемпіонат), *візаж* (косметичний і художній догляд за обличчям), etc.

Closely related to the last group are also individual artistic language neologisms created by poets and authors for the sake of expressiveness as in Ukrainian: *розкрилено* (рости), *горіти пожежно, блискітно-горобинно, аркодужні мости* (from Tychyna's poetic works), *пісня сонцебризна* (M. Bazhan) and others.

Of isomorphic nature in the contrasted languages are also some other peculiarities and consequently subclasses of lexicon. Among these are also such stylistically distinguished layers of lexicon which are usually characterised as various types of *colloquialisms, jargonisms, slang-isms, vulgarisms, professionalisms* and some others.

The social functioning and stylistic use of these subclasses of words are common not only in the contrasted languages. Thus, the large class of *literary colloquial lexicon (розмовно-просторічна лексика)* consists in English and Ukrainian of some stylistically common subclasses of words to which belong various *emotives* (емоціональні слова та вирази), slangisms, jargonisms, argotisms, thieves' lingo, etc. Many of these lexical units represent the same substyles of lexicon and have direct equivalents in both contrasted languages. Therefore, this literary colloquial lexis is represented by several layers of words and expressions often or regularly used in expressive emphatic speech with strongly evaluative (positive or negative) aim. Among them are such English and Ukrainian

134

words and phrases of negative evaluation as *варнякати, молоти/ плескати язиком, кобенипш/матюкатися, чортихатися, гавкати* (ab. people), *обгиджувати bespit (обхаркувати), bee-head, beatle-head (тупак, тупиця, "ступа", "довбня"), to malt захоплюватися хмільним ("причащатися"), layabout/lazy-bones ліньтюх (ледацю-га), etc.* A disregarding or contemptuous attitude may express also such words as *bike велосипед ("велік"), toned up замкнений ("заці-па"), Aussie австралієць ("австралійчик"), MONDAYISH неба-жання працювати після вихідного ("понеділок — важкий день ")* and some other words and expressions.

Often equivalent in English and Ukrainian are also *low colloquial-isms* — vituperative words and phrases (лайливі слова та вирази) like *goddamn, hell, rat, swine, cad, pig, skunk, stink-pot* and others. In Ukrainian: *чорт, зараза, прокляття, свиня, гадюка, смердюк/ сме-рдючка;* obscene/dirty words (непристойні слова) as *shit, piss* and *corruption* (expression), *shit, лайно.* Functionally similar to them are vulgarisms which, like the previous group of low colloquialisms, are practically universal by their nature. These are used in oral speech in the main, though vulgarisms may sometimes occur (for stylistic rea-sons) in written speech as well. Cf. *bum зад, задниця; punch пу-зо/барило, жлукто; mug рило/морда; stinkard смер-дюк/смердючка; cad тварюка; kiss off тягни (свої) ноги (звідси); bastard вилупок, байстрюк; hound собака, негідник,* etc. Unlike vituperatives, such vulgarisms are registered in larger dictionaries, though in recent decades vituperative lexicons have become subject of scientific investigation [55].

Common by nature (and not only in the contrasted languages) are jargonisms and argotisms that seem to belong to absolute universals as well. Like all other low colloquialisms, they may sometimes have not only semantic but also stylistic equivalents in different languages. It goes without saying, however, that they are not necessarily of the same structural form as can be seen from the following examples: *beaky носатий/ носач (шнобель), lemon негарна дівчина, lifer дові-чно ув'язнений, to beef скиглити ("скавуліти"), governor батько (cf.* the Ukrainian *"предок"), beans (brass, dibs, dough, off) гроші ("лімони"),* etc.

There are some other stylistically distinct subclasses of lexicons in the contrasted languages, such as *professional words, scientific, poetic, bookish words,* etc. Common in English and Ukrainian are the following professionalisms and terms: *reaping (or harvesting) косовиця (жнива), threshing молотьба, sowing сівба, electrician електрик, electric train електропоїзд/електричка, school practice педагогічна практика, tutorial(n) консультація (зустріч із науковим керівником), translation practice перекладацька практика; to lecture читати лекції, to have workshops (Amer.) проводити семінарські заняття; to take exams/examinations складати іспит, a sharing experience lesson показовий урок/заняття з обміну досвідом.*

Professionalisms and terms are also used in both contrasted languages in the same speech styles. Sometimes they may even acquire the same implied meaning in English and Ukrainian. Cf. *an equalizer забитий у відповідь гол/розквитання,"зрівняти рахунок", a right-hander (boxing) удар правою рукою/підступний вчинок, to keep oneб's powder dry тримати порох сухим у порохівниці, to heal the wounds/to repair damage загоїти/"зализати рани".*

Identical by nature though not always of identical lingual form, as Mas already been pointed out, are various scientific, social and political terms used in English and Ukrainian in the same speech styles and representing the same spheres of national economy or state affairs. Cf. *politics політика, cybernetics кібернетика, finance фінанси,* but *proton протон, morphete морфема, suffix суфікс, bacterial бактеріальний, medical медичний,* etc. The scientific lexicon implies also several loan internationalisms as *equation рівняння, identity тотожність, conductor провідник/громовідвід; summation, підсумовування, subtraction, віднімання, outer space міжпланетний простір, living standard/standard of living життєвий рівень, etc.*

Other stylistically distinct layers of lexicon in the contrasted languages include:

a) bookish words which do not always correlate stylistically in English and Ukrainian. As a result, there are words/word-groups which are bookish only in English or only in Ukrainian. Cf. in the English language:

contrariety протилежність/несумісність, disulpate (jurid.) *виправдовувати, disenable робити нездатним/скалічити, forthright чесний, brumal зимовий (сплячка), inter-agent посередник (агент), licit законний/дозволений, lacerate рвати (калічити, нівечити), malediction прокляття, malefactor лиходій/злочинець,* etc. Bookish only in Ukrainian are *властолюбство/властолюбний, power ambition/power ambitious, возз'єднання reunification, всесилля unrestricted power, консеквентний consequent, конфіденціальний confidential, людомор assassin/man-slayer,* etc.

Many word-groups and words having a bookish nature (both semantic, stylistic and lingual) in the contrasted languages are actually internationalisms originating from one common source language. Eg: *emanation еманація, Hellenic еллінський, macaronic макаронічний, macaronism макаронізм,* etc.

b) Poetic words and expressions form a stylistically common, though semantically not always coinciding subgroup of lexicon in English and Ukrainian as well. Poetic words split into two clearly distinguished groups: a) words/word-groups displaying their poetic nature already at language level, i.e. when singled out and b) words/word-groups acquiring their poetic tinge in a micro- or macrotext only. Thus, the following English words and word-groups are always poetic: *affright* (frighten), *Albion* (England), *Caledonia* (Scotland), *adore* (to worship), *anarch* (leader of an uprising/revolt), *babe* (baby), *harken* (hear), *shrill* (shriek), *steed* (horse), *mash* (admire), *the Bard of Avon* (Shakespeare), *pass away* (die), *uncouth* (strange), *ye* (you), the *mam* (ocean), the *brow* (forehead), the *Kane* (cow), etc.

Similarly in Ukrainian whose poetisms are sometimes distinctly marked by their slightly archaic nature or by their Old Slav origin: *вольний, враг, злото, дівчинонька, козаченько, кормига (ярмо), криця (крицевий), лжа (неправда), літа (роки), перса, чоло,* etc.

Poetic words of the second subgroup (which acquire their poetic tinge in a micro/macrocontext) may often be traditional in a national language. Thus, in English stylistically marked poetic word-groups can be found in Shakespeare's works: *simple truth, gilded honour, purest faith, right perfection* (Sonnet 66), *youthful morn* (66), *swept love* (56), *hungry*

ocean, immortal life (81), *sacred beauty* (115), *boundless sea* (65) cf. in Ukrainian: *безмежнеє море.* A considerable number of word-groups have also acquired a similar traditionally poetic flavour in Ukrainian due to our folk songs: *гора крем'яная, літа молодії, орел сизокрилий, сива зозуля, світ широкий, синє море, чисте поле, чорнії брови, карії очі, червона калина,* and others.

Apart from these there are some more common minute groups of stylistically marked words and word-groups in English and Ukrainian lexicons. The main of them are as follows: 1. **Archaisms,** i. e. old forms of words/word-groups, which are mainly used in poetic works or in solemn speech: *algazel* (gazelle), *avaunt* (out), *batoon* (baton), *dicacity* (talkativeness, mockery), *eke* (also), *gyves* (fetters), *mere* (pond, lake), *a micle* (much), *parlous* (perilous), *per adventure* (probably, perhaps), *well nigh* (almost, nearly), *thee* (you sg.), *thou* (you pl.), *thy* (your), *ye* (you), *yonder* (there), *hereto* (to this matter), *therefrom* (from that), *therein* (in that place), *thereupon* (upon that), *whereof* (of which). To this group also belong some participles ending in - en: *a sunken* ship, *a drunken/drunk man, a shorn lamb;* adverbs and set expressions as *oft* (often), *all told,* i.e. *all counted,* etc. The most frequently used archaisms in Ukrainian are as follows: *бард* (Боян, поет), *брань* (битва), *глас* (голос), *град* (місто), *гаківниця* (гармата), *комоні* (коні), *пахолок* (прислужник), *спудей* (студент), *ланіти* (щоки), *гостиниця* (готель), *глагол* (слово), рать (військо, битва), *піїт* (поет), *списник* (мечник, лучник), *колчан* (чохол для стріл), and also: *ректи, зримо, воздвигати, вражий, лжа, много, узріти, очіпок, копа* (шістдесят снопів, яєць), *півкопи* (тридцять), *вершок, гони, лікоть* (міри довжини); *медок* (напій), *кваша* (страва) and several others.

Apart from the above-mentioned there exist in both contrasted languages (and not only in them) some other typologically isomorphic classes of lexical units. Among these a prominent place belongs to words singled out on the basis of their informational structure/capacity. Accordingly, two types of such words are traditionally distinguished:

1. *Denotative words,* which constitute the bulk of each language's lexicon and include the so-called nomenclature words and word-groups, which are various terms and professionalisms of unique meaning. For

138

example, *electron, motor, miner, tongs, outer space, specific weight, bus, tailor, football,* etc. Similarly in Ukrainian where these notionals are the same: *електрон, мотор, шахтар, обценьки, реактор, вертоліт, твід, швець, футбол, питома вага, космічний простір,* etc.

Most denotative words (and not only in the contrasted languages) are stylistically neutral. The latter may be represented by the whole lexico-grammatical classes such as: pronouns *(he, she, we, you)* and numerals *(five, ten, twenty),* most of verbs *(be, live, love),* nouns *(mother, sister, cow, horse),* adjectives *(blue, white, old, fat, urban, rural, young)* and all adverbs *(today, soon, well, slowly, then, there)* and some others.

2. Many words in English and Ukrainian may also have both *denotative and connotative* meanings. Thus, the nouns *bear, fox, pig, goose, parrot, rat* and some others in their stylistically neutral meaning designate definite animals or birds, but when metonymically reinterpreted, they often acquire a vituperative (abusive) connotation. Correspondingly in Ukrainian: *свиня, тхір, собака, папуга, лисиця, корова (коровисько), бицюра, вівця, баран, жаба, ворона /ґава/.*

***2.* Connotative words/word-groups** directly or indirectly correlate with their natural denotata, eg: *Albion* (poet, for England), *the Bard of Avon* (Shakespeare); *Кобзар* (T. Shevchenko), *Каменяр* (I. Franko), *дочка Прометея* (Lesia Ukrainka) and some other.

Connotative may become poetisms and neologisms: *foe* for enemy, *kine* for cow, *dough* (slang) for money, *mods* for admirer of jazz, *know-how* for skill, *chicken* (coll.) for baby (lovely boy or girl). Or in Ukrainian: *чоло* (поет.) лоб, макітра (low colloquial) -голова, рокер (neologism) любитель рок-музики, попса (low quality pop-music or songs), порнуха (pornographic film, performance), etc.

Stylistically marked in both contrasted languages are three more groups of lexical units:

*1) **ameliorative words:** daddy, mummy, sissie, chivalrous, gentleman; матуся, татуньо, дідунь, козаченько, серденько, голівонька;* 2) ***pejorative*** (лайливі) words: *bastard, blackguard, clown, knave; байстрюк, нікчема, негідник, покидьок, головоріз, etc.;* 3) ***constantly neutral words*** and word-groups/expressions, eg.: *smith, geometry, teacher, love, you, he, all, гімнастика/фізкультура,*

історія, вчитель, коваль, любити, ненавидіти, я, ти, ми, п'ять, десять, тут, там and a lot others.

Of isomorphic nature in the contrasted languages and certainly universal is one more distinctive feature of lexicon, which finds its expression in the existence of such semantic classes of words as **synonyms** and **antonyms.** Synonymous words (and expressions) are semantically similar but different in stylistic use lexical units. There are distinguished in English, Ukrainian (and in other languages):

synonymous nouns *as end, close, termination, conclusion, finish, terminus, stopping;* in Ukrainian: *кінець, закінчення, зупинка,* etc.

synonymous adjectives *as conclusive, ending, final, terminal, completing, ultimate;* in Ukrainian: *кінцевий, останній, заключний,* etc.

synonymous verbs *as the following: act, play, perform, rehearse, star, mimic, imitate, enact, play a part;* in Ukrainian: *діяти, викону-вати, відігравати, брати участь, грати,* etc.

synonymous adverbs: *surprisingly, unexpectedly, unawares, plump, pop, suddenly,* and in Ukrainian: *раптово, зненацька, нега-дано, як сніг на голову, etc.*

Antonyms as, for example: lateness - earliness, freedom - slavery; work - play, continue - stop, beautiful - ugly, good - bad, quickly - slowly, up - down, etc.

In Ukrainian like in other languages there are also synonymous and antonymous meanings of different words, i.e. parts of speech. These may be:

nouns: огорожа/горожа, паркан, штахети, тин, живопліт, лиса; or: балакун, говорун, баляндрасник, торохтій, базікало, талалай;

adjectives: безмежний, безкраїй, безконечний, неосяжний, безмірний, неозорий;

verbs: бити, батожити, періщити, дубасити, лупити, лупцюва-ти, гилити;

adverbs: швидко, скоро, прудко, бистро, хутко, шпарко, жваво, прожогом.

Apart from synonyms there are also antonyms: висота - низина; гора - долина; створювати - руйнувати; знаходити - губити; хва-лити - гудити; високий - низький; багатий - бідний, гладкий - ху-дий, гарно

140

- погано, швидко - повільно, високо - низько, тепло - холодно, весело — сумно, etc.

Onomasiological and Semasiological
Characteristics of Different Units of Lexicon

Irrespective of the lexico-grammatical class to which a word belongs, it may be characterised in the contrasted languages from two sides: a) from its *onomasiological side, i.e. from* its structure and nomination capacity and b) from its *semasiological* or content side.

The onomasiological characteristics of a word are displayed through its morphological structure and its categorial (if any) meaning. Thus, the verb *goes* (the root **go + es** inflexion) has the categorial meanings of person, tense, aspect and voice, whereas the noun *songs* (song + s inflexion) has only the category of number (singular and plural).

From the semasiological side words may be monosemantic or polysemantic. The semantic structure of the bulk of English nouns, for example, is richer than that of the Ukrainian nouns. Thus, the English noun *boat* can mean *човен, судно/корабель, шлюпка;* the noun *coat* in English can mean *верхній одяг, пальто, піджак, кітель, хутро* (тварин), *захисний шар фарби на предметі.*

Ukrainian words may sometimes have a complicated semantic structure as well. For example, the noun *подорож* may mean *cruise, journey, travel, trip, tour, voyage;* or the word *ще* may mean *still, yet, as yet, more, any more, again, else, but.*

Isomorphic if not universal is also the existence of monosemantic words which are sometimes represented by a whole lexico-grammatical class, as it is in case of all pronouns, numerals, conjunctions and various nomenclature words (terms). For example: *we, she, nobody, ten, thirty, and, or, atom, oxygen, sugar, today; він, вони, десять, перший, і/та, чи, кисень, цукор, сьогодні, торік,* etc.

Common in the contrasted languages are also other means of nomination, which can be of two types: a) *inner means* and b) *outer* (borrowed) *means,* which can be separate morphemes, words, word-groups and even separate sentences.

The inner means of nomination include: 1) morphemes; 2) words; 3) phrases/word-groups and 4) sentences.

Words in all languages constitute the main means of nomination. Thus, in English and Ukrainian they constitute about 75 % of all nominations Structurally they may be: a) *simple words (book, boy, new, alone, be, this, known, ten, there, soon; книжка, хлопець, новий, сам, знати, п'ять, скоро, там, добре,* etc.); b) *compound words (blackboard, classroom, homework, schoolboy, steamship, railway,* etc.). Or in Ukrainian: *добродій, легковажити, літописець, книголюб, мовознавець, першочергово, перекотиполе, лиходій, чортзнащо, Білогородка, Незовибатько, Добридень, Панібудьласка, etc.*

Very productive in present-day English but rare in present-day Ukrainian is the *wholophrasal compounding;* cf. *break-through, sit-in, commander-in-chief, merry-go-round* and occasionalisms like a *to-be-or-not-to-be* question, *a don't-beat-me-or-I-shall-cry expression* (on his face), etc. Compounds of this type belong to rare stylistic exotisms in Ukrainian. Cf. Наталка "теє того як його" (І. Котляревський), Грицько "чи то я, чи не я" (Г.Тютюнник), "Йосип з гроша здачі" (Б. Харчук). Common and equally productive in the contrasted languages is the nomination by means of word-groups and sentences (usually nominative): *fine weather гарна погода, take part брати участь, throw light проливати світло. The rain. The welcome rain.* (Longfellow) *Вечір. Ніч.* (Тичина). These same sentences are nominative in English: *Twilight. Night.* Nominative sentences may also be extended in both contrasted languages. Cf. *A lady's chamber in Bulgaria in a small town near the Dragoman Pass late in November in the year 1885.* (B. Shaw) *Мокрий сніг, дощі і тумани, тумани.* (М. Стельмах).

The onomasiological and semasiological status and structure of words may be changed in the contrasted languages by affixal morphemes as can be seen from the following words: *miss - dismiss, elect - reeled, man — mankind, relation — relationship;* Київ — киянин — київський, переможний - переможений - непереможний, *вибори - перевибори — довибори — виборний — виборчий, післявиборчий,* etc.

The prosodic means, especially accent, can sometimes greatly influence the onomasiological and semasiological status of words in English

and Ukrainian as well. This can be seen from the following words:*б'conduct (n) - con'duct (v);б'mankind - man'kind;'замок - за'мок, за'няття - заня'ття, 'колос - ко'лос, пере'їзд - пе'реїзд, ко'рови -коро'ви, 'вівці - вів'ці,'руки - ру'ки,'поперек - попе'рек, etc.*

A considerable number of semasiologically identical English lexemes often have different onomasiological/structural expression in Ukrainian and vice versa, eg: *akimbo* — (тримати) *руки в боки/взявшись руками в боки; to ski — їздити/ходити на лижвах; to skate — їздити на ковзанах; закохатися/покохати — to fall in love, зрячий — one who can see/one who is not blind; награтися — to play to one's heart's content, реготати - to laugh very loudly,* etc.

Genuine internationalisms, naturally, maintain their complete identity of semasiological and onomasiological structures in both contrasted languages, cf.: *basis, comedy, drama, biology, parliament, student, transport, opera, the heel of Achilles, sword of Damocles, tabula rasa, finita la comedia; базис, комедія, драма, парламент, опера, axіллесова п'ята, табула раса,дамоклів меч, фініта ла комедія (справі кінець),* etc.

Other borrowings, which do not have the status of internationalisms, mostly maintain their semasiological and onomasiological structure in the source languages and in the borrowing languages. This can be seen from the Turkic or German borrowings in Ukrainian (cf. *башлик, баштан, кавун, могорич, хабар, чабан; бинт, лазарет, бухгалтер, бляхар, цех, фельдшер, дах, стільвага, стельмах, деко,* etc).

The general correlation of borrowed lexical units as compared with their use in spoken contrasted languages is far from equal, however. Its percentage in English is over 70 % and in Ukrainian only ab. 10 % of their universal lexicons.

Among other common features of lexicon testifying to its systemic arrangement are the common types of motivation, the main of which in English, Ukrainian and in many other languages are three: **phonetical, morphological and semantic by nature.**

1. All phonetically motivated words have their sounding structure somewhat similar to the sounds which they convey. Due to this, some of these English, Ukrainian and other languages' words thus motivated sound

143

almost or quite alike. For example: *to cade - кудкудакати, cock-a-doodle-doo — кукуріку, bang — бух/бухнути, bark - гав/гавкати, buzz - дзижчати, chirp/chirrup - цвірінькати, cuckoo - кукукати/кукувати, crack — трісь/тріщати, gagle - ґелґотати,* hey! — гей!, *hiss - шипіти/сичати, hoop - 'гукати* (сигналити), *howl - вити, smack* (one's lips) *цмокати, mоо - мукати, mewl - нявкати,* baa / ba:/ бе-е, бекати (вівці), etc.

These are naturally far from all the words whose notional meaning in the contrasted languages is based on sound imitation. Nevertheless, their number in comparison to other types of motivated words is not large, constituting in English about 1.08 % and in Ukrainian only about 0.8 %.

2. The morphological motivation in the contrasted languages remains the major one. It is characteristic of numerous notional words, in which it is clearly indicated by the affixal morphemes. For example, by suffixes: *doer* one who does smth; *flyer* one who flies; *detainee* one who is detained; *examinee* one who is examined; *changable* that which is subjected to change/can be changed; *movable* smth. that can be moved, etc. A similar function may be performed by some prefixal morphemes in both contrasted languages. Cf.: asleep the one who is in the state of sleeping; bedew to cover with dew; overturn to turn smth. over; ex-president the one who was president, etc.

Similarly in Ukrainian: *оповідач* той, хто оповідає/розповідає; *писар* той, хто пише; *співець* той, хто співає; *ношений* якого (що) носили; *смажений* якого (що) смажили; *читаючий* який читає, *носач* той, що має великого носа; *митець* той, хто творить якийсь вид мистецтва (швидко чи дуже якісно/майстерно) малює, будує, співає, танцює; *злітати* підніматися вище попереднього місця перебування; переказати (щось) розповісти вдруге вже раз сказане чи написане; передісторія історія, що була перед цією/відомою історією; вчетверте те, що повторюється четвертий раз; поверх (чогось) - щось понад чимсь чи додатково до чогось, etc.

Compound words are either morphologically or semantically motivated in the contrasted languages. All morphologically motivated compounds have their component lexical meaning composed of lexical meanings pertaining to each of their parts, eg: *air-crew* is a crew of an aircraft;

after-effect effect that occurs after some action; to *blackboard* to write on a black board. Similarly in other words as *good-neighbourhood being near good neighbours, classroom (room for classes or for schoolchildren), drawbridge, halfpenny, landowner, minethrower (thrower of mines), note-book (book for notes), self-defence, a schoolboy, Zululand (land of the Zulus),* etc. Their meaning is also made by their component parts. Or in Ukrainian: *вільнодумець (думає про волю), добродійник (робить добро), домовласник (володіє домом), електродояр, кожум'яка (мне шкуру тварин), кораблеводіння, користолюбство (любить корисливість), лизогуб (облизує губи), лісовод, маслоробня, марнотратство (витрата чогось без користі, марно),* etc.

Morphologically motivated words in the contrasted languages naturally constitute the largest part of their motivated lexicons: 88,5 % in English and 91.8 % in Ukrainian.

3. *Semantic motivation* of lexical units is displayed by the figurative/ connotative meaning of words or phrases, representing the transferred meanings of their denotata. This is expressed by many semantically motivated words and word-groups in both contrasted languages. *Cf. foot of a mountain* підніжжя гори, *hand/hands of a watch* стрілка/стрілки (схожі на руки) годинника, *to keep house* вести домашнє господарство, *an ancient house* стародавній рід (династія); *the house of Tudor* династія Тюдорів; *the first/second house* перший/другий сеанс (у кінотеатрі); *bed of roses* легке/розкішне життя; *bed of a river* русло річки; *bed of honour* поле бою; *arm* рука, but: *secular arm* світська влада; *the arm of the law* сила закону; *the arm of the sea* вузька затока; *the arms of a coat* рукава (піджака, пальта); *the arms of a tree* великі гілляки дерева; *the arms of a chair* бильця (крісла), *a coat of arms* герб, etc.

Many similar examples of semantic motivation of words are also observed in Ukrainian: *легка/важка рука* (дегко/дошкульно б'є), *легкий/ важкий на руку, липкі руки/липкий на руку* (злодій); *купатися в розкошах, купатися в славі/купатися в промінні південного сонця, братися за справу (діло),* etc. Their meanings are very transparent and mostly need no further explanation.

145

Some words denoting in the contrasted languages popular names of flowers, trees, birds, and animals have a transparent etymological motivation as well. Thus, in English and Ukrainian *bluet* (flower) is *василёк, bluebell is* дзвоник, *blue-bottle is* васильок which is blue (синій), *blackbird is* чорний дрізд, *blackcock is* тетерук, *black berry means* ожина, *horse-tail/cat's tail means* хвощ, *redwood* means секвоя, *umbrella-tree means* американська магнолія, *violet means* фіалка. More similar examples may also be found in English and Ukrainian: *жовтець* (yellow gold), чорниця (bilberry), *чорнобривці* (French marigold), *чорногуз (чорне гузно), чорнослив (stocked prunes),* соняшник (sunflower), *куцохвостий* (заєць), *круторогі* (воли), *серпокрилець* (стриж).

A brilliant example of etymological semantic motivation present in Ukrainian and Byelorussian (or Polish) names of months. Cf. *січень* (сніг січе), *лютий* (мороз лютує), *березень* (береза сік пускає), *квітень* (перші квіти - проліски з'являються і зацвітають), *липень* (липа зацвітає), *серпень (серпами жали і жнуть збіжжя),* etc.

Semantic motivation may be observed in idiomatic expressions as well. Cf. *not to have a farthing* (не мати копійки/шеляга за душею); *not for time or money/not for the world* (ні за що в світі/ні за які гроші), *cold war/paper war; to bare resemblance; to make both ends meet; like two drops of water; не знати ні бе ні ме (ні кукуріку); хоч з мосту та в воду; язик до Києва доведе; наговорити сім кіп/мішків гречаної вовни* to say (talk) much nonsense; *хмари згущуються* (над кимось); *ходячі мощі, ходяча енциклопедія, etc.*

Semantically motivated lexical units constitute in English about 10 % and in Ukrainian about 7.4 % of their total motivated lexicons. Generally, however, a great many words in English, Ukrainian and in other languages have no clear motivation, i. e. their etymology remains obscure, far from explicable at present. It has been lost in the course of semantic development of these words. As a result, one can not say why the "sun" is named *the sun* and the "head" or the "heart" have been named this way and not otherwise. Because of the obscure etymology most words and some collocations/idiomatic expressions remain non-motivated in the contrasted languages. In other words, their motivation is impossible to identify nowadays on the basis of their componental meanings.

146

Word-Formation in English and Ukrainian

The principal ways of word-formation in the contrasted language are isomorphic. They include the following four ways: 1) morphological; 2) morphologico-syntactic; 3) lexico-semantic and 4) lexico-syntactic. The most productive of them in English and Ukrainian is the morphological way which is realised with the help of the following means: affixation, compounding, and non-affixal word-formation.

I. Affixal or derivational word-formation in both languages includes: a) suffixal word-formation; b) prefixal word-formation and c) combined (suffixal plus prefixal) word-formation. Affixal morphemes in the contrasted languages are used to form the same/common parts of speech. Thus, suffixal morphemes help to form: nouns, adjectives, verbs, numerals and adverbs. These word-forming suffixes also belong to the same semantic groups. Among the noun-forming suffixes there are distinguished the following typologically common classes of them in English and Ukrainian:

a) **Agent suffixes** (суфікси, що означають діяча): **-ist/-іст, -ист:** *analyst, motorist, journalist, пацифіст, журналіст, артист, тракторист;* **-ant, -ent (-ант/-ент):** *irritant, servant, student, solvent, комерсант, лаборант, кореспондент, студент;* **-аг (-ар/-яр):** *burglar, scholar, байкар, володар, муляр, дояр, зброяр;* **-er -or (-ep/-ор):** *teacher, farmer, coster, singer, milker, actor, director, inspector, інженер, міліціонер, актор, директор, конструктор, вчитель,* etc.

It should be added that nouns formed with the help of the suffix **-er** often have other meaning than that of denoting "performer of an action". They may denote a) process: *blabber, roarer, whisperer;* b) psychological state: *admirer, boaster, adorer,* c) physical perception: *heaver, thinker, watcher,* d) instrument: *fanner, rectifier,* e) banknotes*: fiver (п'ятірка), tenner (десятка); f)* time of activity: *fourter, fifter (чотирикурсник, п'ятикурсник).* The suffix **-er** is also used to form jargon-isms like crammer, kisser, peeper, etc. No less different meanings are also expressed by nouns formed with the help of other suffixes of this class, as for example: **-ier/ -yer** corresponding to the Ukrainian suffix **-ир:**

cashier, employer, lawyer, бригадир, командир, проводир; **-eer (-ер/-ір):** *auctioneer, profiteer, аукціонер, колекціонер, землемір;* -**ard/-art:** *corresponding to Ukrainian* **-ак/-як, -т-юх, -ак(а), -як(а)** *drunkard, sluggard, braggart, жебрак, пияк, лінтюх, гуляка, задавака, забіяка, гультіпака.*

b) The English suffix -ee forms nouns denoting **reception of action:** *contestee, dedicatee, devotee, divorcee, employee, examinee, evacuee, nominee, trustee, refugee* and some others. The meaning of this suffix in Ukrainian can be conveyed via the suffix **-ець** as in the nouns *вигнанець, бранець, вихованець, висуванець, переселенець* and others. Besides, the meaning of patience can be expressed in Ukrainian by the suffixes **-н-, -т-,** as in the substantivised nouns of masculine and feminine gender: *вражений, ображений, вражена, ображена, поранений, зображений, забитий, залучена, забута,* etc.

c) Suffixes denoting numerous **abstract notions: -ing** (-н/-а/-я): *cloth ing, meeting, wedding; вбрання, зібрання, одруження;* **-ism (-ізм):** *Americanism, barbarism, despotism, feudalism, colloquialism, американізм, колоквіалізм, феодалізм, варваризм, деспотизм;* -**ness** (-т/ -а): *darkness, goodness, темнота, доброта, сліпота;* -**tion (-ац/-ія):** *corruption, errection, generation, protection; генерація, корупція, протекція, сигналізація;* -**dom (ств/-о/, -цтв** /-о/): *beggardom, butlerdom, officialdom, newspaperdom; жіноцтво, сусідство, учительство, газетярство;* -**hood (ств/-о):** *citizen- hood, brotherhood, widowhood; громадянство, братство, вдівство.* Both contrasted languages have also other suffixes. Namely: d) **Evaluative suffixes** (оцінні суфікси) which are of two types: *dimin utive* (14 in English) and *augmentative* (збільшувальні), which are not available in English.

English diminutive suffixes are: **-et/-ette:** *booklet, eaglet, kitchenette,* -let: *kinglet, ringlet,* **-y/-ie, -ey:** *dolly, grannie, sissy;* **-ling:** *duckling, princeling,* -kin: *ladikin, lordkin,* **-el/-le:** *corpuscle, morsel;* **-icle, -cule:** *monticle, monticule;* -een: *velveteen;* -ock: *hillock,* -ing: *lording, princeling;* -ee: *bootee* and some others.

The evaluative suffix -ard has no augmentative but only a negative meaning in English, eg: *bastard, drunkard, dullard.* These nouns cor-

148

respond lexically to Ukrainian vituperative words *байстрюк, п'яничка, тупак/ступа,* etc.

The number of diminutive only noun-forming suffixes in Ukrainian is as many as 53, which goes in no comparison with the English 14 suffixes, not all of which are productive. Besides, there exist adjective-, pronoun-, numeral-, adverb-, verb- and even interjections-forming diminutive suffixes in Ukrainian. For example, the noun-forming diminutive suffixes: **-атк/-ятк:** *дівчатко, курчатко, телятко, ягнятко;* **-ик:** *дубик, носик;* -ок: *дубок, синок, сучок, коток;* **-ечок:** *-батіжечок, пиріжечок, стіжечок;* **-ечка:** *качечка, свічечка, річечка, тичечка;* **-ичка:** *сестричка, теличка, ягничка;* **-оньк** /-а/: *дівчинонька, хатинонька* головонька/голівонька, and others.

It should be noted that all Ukrainian diminutive suffixes are productive, whereas in English only **-ie/-ey, -y, -ette, -let, -ling** and -**kin** can be considered productive.

The most productive augmentative suffixes in Ukrainian are: **-ань:** *бородань, мордань;* **-ач**: *бородач, носач;* **-ил:** *барило, чудило, здоровило;* **-юр**: *бицюра, собацюра;* **-ищ** *вовчище, ручище, собачище;* **-яр**: *носяра, мисяра* and some others.

e) **Gender/sex expressing suffixes** of person are clearly distinct in both contrasted languages. They form in Ukrainian 3 groups: 1) *masculine gender* and sex expressing suffixes of nouns like **-ар/-яр** *(лікар, токар, каменяр),* **-ист/-іст** *(бандурист, пацифіст),* -їй *(водій,* носій), **-ант/-ент** *(музикант, студент),* **-тель** *(вихователь, мучитель),* **-ач/-яч** *(глядач, діяч),* **-янин/-анин** *(селянин, киянин, галичанин, мирянин).* 2) *Feminine gender* and sex expressing suffixes usually follow the masculine gender/sex expressing suffixes, which are mostly followed by inflexions. Cf. -к-/-а/ *артистка, журналістка, вчителька:* **-их-/-а/, -анк-, -янк-** *ковалиха, кравчиха, громадянин — громадянка, вінничанин — вінничанка, киянин — киянка,* -ник/ -ця *письменник — письменниця, робітник — робітниця.*

3. *Neuter gender/sex* expressing suffixes are numerous in Ukrainian. They may form both abstract and concrete (life and lifeless) nouns, eg: **-ств-о/ -цтв-о:** *братерство, козацтво, конярство;* **-атк-о, -чк-о/-ятк-о:** *дівчатко, курчатко, яблучко, ягняточко;* **-к-о:** *вушко;*

-ячк-, -єчк-, -ечк-о: *відеречко, листячко, яєчко;* **-ц-е:** *болітце, сальце, сильце.*

English "gender suffixes", as they are sometimes called by grammarians [39, *85 — 89], are* in reality only sex expressing, but not grammatical gender expressing, eg: *actor — actress, waiter — waitress, widow — widower, hero-heroine, lion-lioness, usher-usheress.* The suffixes **-er/ -or, -ess, -o** and **-ine** clearly identify the objective gender of life nouns, i.e. their natural sex (cf. *the young actor, the young actress; the actor playd/sang, the actress played/sang).* It is not so in Ukrainian, where genders are expressed by inflexions: молодий артист — молода артистка; артист грав — артистка грала, дитя грало.

f) One more typologically common group constitute the **interna tional suffixes,** which are mostly of common nature (origin) and mean ing in English and Ukrainian. For example, the suffixes **-er:** *carter, bulldozer, leader, картер, бульдозер, лідер;* **-or:** *conductor, dic tator, rector,* диктатор, кондуктор, ректор; **-ist:** *Anarchist, So cialist/анархіст, соціаліст; -ism: alcoholism, Byronism, heroism, feudalism, Hegelianism,* байронізм, алкоголізм, геґеліанізм, героїзм, феодалізм; **-ation/-ці/я:** *administration, sensation, or ganisation,* адміністрація, організація, сенсація. Here also be longs the suffix **-able/-абельн:** *communicable, readable/*чи табельний, дисертабельний, комунікабельний; дисерта бельність, комунікабельність.

It must be added that the placement/distribution of suffixes in English and Ukrainian words is identical: they are added either to the root *(teacher, sailor, massive; вчитель, масивний, моряк)* or to the stem of the word *(foolish+**ly**,friendli+**ness**; розумно, хворобливість), п'ятірка.*

g) Many words in both languages are formed by means of zero af fix es (without any affixes). This way of word-formation is very productive in English as well as in Ukrainian. Cf. *go, come, boy, world, all, they, soon, four, five, he, she, wish;* світ, річ, ви, ми, там, тут, два, три, кінь, віл, піч, ніч, варт, жарт, etc.

The derivative function of suffixes finds its realisation in the existence of common word-building models. The major word-forming models in English and Ukrainian are as follows:

Table 9

N + Suf=N circlet, hostess, gunner, librarian, grammar-ian, Londoner, Kyivan, Odes-	бігун, хатка, тазик, книгар, граматист, лондонець, киянин, лисянець, одесит, чернігівка
V+Suf=N reader, construction, runner painting, insistence, clearance, doer	в'язка, знавець, читач, орач, хотіння, очистка, вивіска, продавець, бігун, наполягання, малюнок
A+Suf=N freedom, hardship, clearness, softness, longitude, quietness, highness	вільність, гнучкість, глухота, тупак, гостряк, тонкість, глибина, сліпець, добрість, завзяття
D + Suf=N earliness, slowliness, wellness	зверхність, любощі, трудно-щі, виваженість
Q+Suf=N primacy, primaries, secondary, fifter, fourter	першість, десятерик, п'ятірка, двієчник, п'ятак
A+Suf=V actualise, modernise, blacken, darken, widen, broaden, shorten	білити, біднішати, довшати, лівішати, зеленіти корот-шати, чорніти, старіти
N + Suf=A glorious, earthy, watery, interesting, wooden, golden	водяний, дерев'яний, земляний, славний, срібний, болотяний, торф'яний, піщаний, поверхо-
A + Suf=A bluish, lonely, economical, leftist	гарячкуватий, довгастий, синюва-тий, багатенький, рідненький
N + Suf=D homeward, daily, seaward, southward	бігцем, (їхати) зайцем, наскоком вітряно, зимно
A + Suf=D longwise, simply, shortly, quietly, calmly	вільно, коротко, славно, південні-ше, дешево, сердито, весело
D + Suf=D onwards, outwards, inwards	гарненько, щоденно, хутень-ко, смачненько, холоднувато

II. **Prefixal morphemes** have also their main features common in the contrasted languages. They may equally be form-building as well as word-forming. English prefixes, however, can form words of more parts of speech than the Ukrainian ones. For example, they can form statives: a+sleep>asleep; verbs: be+dew>bedew; adjectives: **pre**+war>prewar; adverbs: in+side>inside, etc.

The structure of prefixal morphemes in the contrasted languages is generally common, though there are more single-sign (single-letter) prefixes in Ukrainian than in English, which has only one single letter prefix

a (asleep, alike, aloof). Their number in Ukrainian is larger. Cf. встати, внести, вдвох, зліт, угору, схід, згори, вниз).

All English and Ukrainian prefixes can be typologically subdivided into some groups. The main of them are as follows: 1. **International prefixes** whose lingual form and meaning are identical in the contrasted languages. Their form-building capacities are equal in the contrasted languages too, which can be seen from the following structural models:

anti + A=A	antiglobal, anti-British антиглобальний, антивоєнний
anti + N=N	antimonopolist, antibody антимонополіст, антитіло
counter +	countermeasure, countermarch контрзмова, контрзахід
counter + V=V	counterpoint, counter-attack, counterplot контрапунктувати, контратакувати, контрасигнувати
ex + N = N	ex-champion, ex-president екс-чемпіон, екс-президент
extra + A = A	extraordinary, extramural, extraactive, екстраактивний, екстраординарний, екстравагантний
sub + N = N	submarine, subordination субмарина, субординація
sub + A = A	subordinary, subtropical субординарний, субтропічний

2. A large group of prefixes have in the contrasted languages only semantic identity but they are different in their lingual form since they are national prefixes:

*foresee - передбачити, extra-natural - надприродний, **intraarterial** - внутрі/внутрішньоартеріальний; non-party -позапартійний, **pre**-war-**до**/**перед**воєнний, **по**st-war, **по**/ **після**воєнний, **sub**-species — **під**види/**під**класи.*

3. The third group present semantically alien **national prefixes** pertaining to one of the contrasted languages and non-existent in the other. The lexical meaning of such divergent prefixes forms part of the seman tic structure of the stem, hence it is usually conveyed by other than mor phological (usually by lexico-semantic) means. Cf. *decamp - виїжджати з табору/покидати табір; mis-state - робити неправдиву/фальшиву заяву; underhung - той/те, що випирає/ виступає вперед; to recurve — загинати/вигинати назад; (an) upthrow - кидок угору* and others.

There are also some **allomorphic** Ukrainian prefixes which have no semantic equivalents in English. Their meaning is also conveyed by

other than affixal means. Cf. *по-українському/по-українськи* — in Ukrainian, *щонайкраще/якнайкраще in the best way possible or very well indeed; rather/extremely well; якнайповільніше — as slowly as possible/in the most slowly (or in an ever possible slow) way,* etc.

A specifically Ukrainian phenomenon which is also alien not only to English but even to other Slavonic languages is the reduplicated use of the prefix no- in verbs to express an intensive and repeated or durative action. Cf. ***попо**водити,* ***попо**блукати,* ***попо**возитися* (з чимсь, з кимсь), ***попо**гребти,* ***попо**їсти,* ***попо**спати.* The meaning of such duplicated prefixes is conveyed in English and other languages in a descriptive way. Cf. *попоїсти* to eat substantially or to eat repeatedly/again, or to eat without interruption and amply, uninterruptedly. **Попоспати** to sleep to one's heart's content, to sleep much longer than usually, to sleep and repose nicely after hard work/tiresome walking, etc.

Combined Prefixal and Suffixal Formation of Words

Many words in English and Ukrainian are formed by way of adding both prefixal and suffixal morphemes to the root or stem of the same word. It should be emphasised that the formation of new words with the help of prefixes and suffixes is performed in English and Ukrainian according to some common morphological/structural models. The number of these models is **four** and they are as follows:

1) one prefix+the root morpheme/stem+one **suffix,** forming nouns: *dis-arma-ment, en-rich-ment, for-cast-er, un-suspect-ness, vice-roy- ship;* b) forming adjectives: *anti-cyclon-ic, anti-christ-ian, be-jewel- ling, in-ponder-able, para-phras-tic, pre-script-ive;* c) forming verbs: *de-colour-ise, dis-satis-fy, ex-cav-ate, over-estim-ate, re-vivi-fy, un- satis-fy* and d) forming adverbs: *dis-creet-ly, un-tru-ly, un-war-like;*

2) **two or more prefixes** + the root morpheme/stem + **one suffix** as in the nouns *over-sub-scrip-tion, re-im-prison-ment, re-in-carn-ation;*

3) **one prefix** + the root morpheme/stem + **two or more suffixes,**

153

as in adverbs that are formed from adjectives and participles. For example: *dis-stress-ing-ly, dis-trust-ful-ly, en-harmon-ical-ly, pro-portion - ate-ly, under-hand-ed-ly.*

The number of words formed according to the third combined structural model by far exceeds those given above and comprises adjectives and nouns. The most typical adjectives are as follows: *coun-ter-revolu-tion-(a)ry, de-/contemin-at(e)-ing, de-central-iz(e)-ing, pre-histor-ic-al.* Examples of nouns thus formed are as follows: *dis-trust- fulness, in-comprehens-ible-ness, ir-respons-ibil-ity, de-moral-iz-ation* and other.

4) Fewer nouns are formed, naturally, according to the fourth and the most complicated structural model, combining two or more prefixes + root morpheme/stem + two or more suffixes as in the words *in-ac-count-abil-ity, in-dis-pens-abil-ity, non-re-activ(e)-ation, non-re-presentation-al-ism.* Words of this combined type are well exemplified in Ukrainian, though their quantitative distribution coincides mainly in their simplest type only. This (latter) type of word-formation model has the largest representation in both contrasted languages. Thus, the following prefixes and suffixes are both productive and non-productive in forming some types of nouns in Ukrainian: **без-/-к-**: *безтарка, безитанько, безбатченко;* **від-/-ок:** *відрізок, відбиток, відтинок;* **на-/-ник:** *навушник, навчальник;* **за-/-ок**: *затінок, загривок, задвірок, затишок* and others.

A large number of productive noun stems in Ukrainian originate from prepositional noun phrases which in the course of historical development have become prefixes and now together with the phonetically identified suffix **-j-** form a large number of **-я/-а** root nouns: **без-:** *безладдя, безділля;* **за-:** *загір'я, заріччя;* **між-:** *міжгір'я, міжріччя;* **над-:** *надбрів'я, надпліччя;* **перед-:** *переджнив'я, передсердя:* **по-:** *подвір'я, пониззя (Побужжя, Покуття, Полісся, Подніпров'я),* etc.

Relative adjectives in Ukrainian are more often formed according to the first combined morphological model than nouns. The most often used prepositional prefixes are **без-, від-, до-, за-, на-,** and others. The suffixes used with these prefixes are: **-н-, -ов-/-ев-, -єв, -ськ-/-зьк-, -цьк-/-овськ-** and others. Cf. без-/-н-: *безвірний, безпарний;* **без-**

/-**ов**--: *бездоказовий, безготівковий;* -**від**-/-**н**-: *віддієслівний,* між-/-**ов**-: *міжвидовий,* **на**-/-**ян**-: *навітряний,* **над**-/-**янськ**-: *наддніпрянський,* **без**-/-**ев**-/-**єв**-: *безстатевий, безчуттєвий* and others.

Adjectives with verbal stems have in Ukrainian the characteristic prefix **не-,** originating from the negative particle **не.** The suffixes that are used with this prefix in combined adjectives are of two kinds: 1) -**н**-, --**анн**-/-**янн**-/, -**енн**-: *невтомний, незбагненний, невпізнанний, невгамовний, несказанний, незрівнянний, нескінченний;* 2) -**м**-, -**уч**-/-**юч**-, -**уш**-/-**ющ**-/, -**лив**-: *невловимий, невгасимий, невимовний, непосидючий, непитущий, невидющий, неквапливий.*

Unlike nouns and adjectives, combined verbs are formed in Ukrainian according to the third structural model. They are formed from over 400 nominal stems, the most occurent of which are adjectival and substantival. The prefixes may be different, whereas the suffixes are for both parts of speech usually common. They are -**и**-/-**і**- and -**ти**-/-**а**-/, **в**-/ -**у**-: Cf. *вдосконалити, унепокоювати, уможливити;* **з**-/-**с**-/: *збільшити, зменшити, спростити;* **о**-: *обіднити, оминати, очуміти;* **об**-: *облегшити, обникати, обшукати;* **пере**-: *перебільшити, перевищити;* **ви**-: *вилюдніти, видужати,* **з**-: *звузити, здужати, зсунути,* etc.

Verbs from substantival stems are formed with the help of the -**и**- and -**ти**-, -**ати** suffixes too, i. e. according to the third structural model. For example: ***ви****коренити, закапканити, знеболити, знімечити, пересе'лити, пере'силити.*

In combined derivative verbs formed from verbal stems, the main suffixes are -**ува**- and -**ти**-: *вицьвохкувати, перечитувати, підкахикувати, пришкандибувати, погейкувати, покліпувати, розбалакувати, переважувати, пересилювати,* etc.

English prefixal and post-fixal verbs have no parallel/equivalent to the complicated structure of the Ukrainian verbs with the post-fix -**ся**/-**сь:** *не-до-роз-вин-ут-и-ся, не-до-ви-плач-уват-и-ся, пере-роз-по-діл-ит-и-ся, пере-о-снащ-уват-и-ся/-сь.*

There are fewer adverbs, adjectives and nouns in Ukrainian that are formed according to the third and fourth combined structural models. Cf.

adverbs: *до-не-с-хоч-у, с-про-квол-а, що-най-кращ-е;* **adjectives** and participles: *за-в-час-н-ий, не-в-благ-анн-ий, не-су-під-ряд-н-ий, не-пере-о-снащ-ен-ий, не-до-виторг-ув-ан-ий;* **nouns:** *не-в-благ-анн-ість, пере-роз-по-діл-енн-я, не-до-ви-до-бут-ок,* etc.

Consequently, combined prefixal plus suffixal, i.e. predominantly derivational word-formation belongs in both languages to productive means of building new words of new meanings. Especially active, as was testified by the examples above, is this kind of word-formation in Ukrainian.

Compounding. The formation of compound words in English and Ukrainian is characterised both by isomorphic and allomorphic features as well. Common are, first at all, two main ways of forming compounds in English and Ukrainian: 1) by the juxtaposition (placement) of the determining and the determined parts and 2) with the help of the linking/ interfixal o, e, s in English and o, e / є, y in Ukrainian.

The largest group of compounds formed through the juxtaposition of free root/stem words in English constitute nouns. For example: *aircraft, bath-house, fountain-pen, godmother, inkpot, lockout, mankind, motherland, note-book;* adjectives: *sky-blue, pitch-dark, social-economic, far-reaching, peace-loving* and verbs: *blackwash, ill-treat, take-off.* Less numerous are adverbs. Cf. *anywhere, nowadays, outside, somehow, sideways;* pronouns: *everybody, everything, herself, none,* and numerals: *one-fifths, twenty-one, two-thirds* and others.

Pertaining mostly to English are compounds (nouns, adjectives, adverbs, and some numerals) with prepositions and conjunctions used as connectors of different roots/stems often referred to as **wholo-phrases.** For example, nouns: *commander-in-chief, cat-o'-nine-tails, bread-and-butter* breakfast; adjectives: *out-of-date, rough-and-ready;* adverbs: *rough-and-tumble;* numerals: *two and twenty, one hundred and ten.*

Ukrainian has only a few compound adverbs of its own and some nouns of foreign origin of this type: *де-не-де, пліч-о-пліч, хоч-не-хоч, як-не-як, Ростов-на-Дону, Франкфурт-на-Майні, Франкфурт-на-Одері,* etc.

Compounding by juxtaposition of free words (root words or stems) is considerably less productive in Ukrainian. And yet, there are several nouns, adverbs, pronouns, a few verbs and conjunctions, as well as particles formed in this way. For example, nouns: *бурят-монгол, ге-нерал156*

майор, вагон-ресторан, зернотрест, медик-хірург and pronouns: *дещо, дехто, хтозна-що- казна-що, казна-хто, хто-небудь, що-небудь;* adverbs: *казна-де, казна-звідки, казна-як,* etc.

Close to the above-mentioned compounds in Ukrainian are also some compound nouns and compound verbs of co-ordinate nature: *батько-мати* (i.e. батько і мати), *інженер-технік* (інженер і технік), *хліб-сіль* (хліб і сіль); verbs: *думати-гадати, говорити-балакати;* conjunctions and particles *(немов, немовбито, нібито)* and others.

Compounding with the help of the linking interfixal elements is far less productive in English than in Ukrainian, and it is generally restricted to nouns and adjectives as a rule. Cf. the nouns *Anglo-Saxondom, Anglo-Saxons, electro-kinetics, electro-therapy, gasometer, tradesfolk, tradespeople, violoncellist* and the adjectives like *Sino-American, Afro-Asian, Israeli-American, Iraqi-Iranian (Cf.* the Ukrainian compounds respectively/ *китайсько-американський, афро-азійський, ізраїльсько-американський, електротерапевтичний, etc)*. Hence, the principal way of forming composites in Ukrainian is that by means of linking interfixes, which connect abbreviated and full words. The latter usually follow the initial abbreviated forms, as in the following nouns: *боєздатність, землечерпалка, броненосець, кулеливарник, сновидець, театрознавець, білоголівка, самозбереження, полумисок;* in numerals and in adjectives: *кількасот, півтораста, вогнегасний, доморощений, нафтоносний, електрозварювальний;* and in adverbs: *карколомно, передовсім, позавуш, самочинно,* etc.

Consequently, the typological difference between the composite words of the two languages lies in their much larger variety of types in Ukrainian than in English. Though there is a way of compounding in English that is practically alien to Ukrainian. This is the already mentioned way which is usually termed as **wholophrasing.** It represents an occasional incorporation of word-groups or sentences into non-constant compounds, such as *a never-to-be-forgotten* event (from: an event never to be forgotten) or *a to-be-or-not-to-be* question, (his) *come-what-will* attitude, *a'do-come-please-tomorrow* expression on his face, *beat-me-or-pardon-me* reaction, etc. Of this same **wholophrasal** nature are also many English and Ukrainian composite words (mostly nouns, adjectives and some adverbs) formed from word-combinations or sentences, for example: *for-*

get-me-not, merry-go-round, East-end, kiss-in-the-ring (game), *kiss-me-quick* (beret), *love-lies-bleeding* (plant), *loop-change-loop* (in figure skating), *pen-and-ink (adj.), sleeping-bag(suit), snick-a-snee, stick-in-the-mud* (n, a), *Sunday-go-to-meeting (a), theatre-in-the-round, three-year-old (a), toad-in-a-hole* (n) the *one-size-fits-all* (program), *run-to-the middle* (strategy), *can't-we-all-get-along* (politics)as well as many family names and nicknames of people, geographical names. For example: *Mr. Backbite* (false person), *Youngman, Copper/nose (drankard), Copperfield* (talented person); *Mr. **Know**all* (ironic); geographical names as *Salt-Lake City, Iceland, Georgetown, Greenfield, Londesborough, Newfoundland, West brook,* etc.

Ukrainian has many composite words of this kind too, though sometimes they are formed with the help of the linking elements (usually -и-, -й-), for example: горихвістка, варивода, держидерево, крутиголовка (bird), негній-дерево, люби-мене, мати-й-мачуха, крутивус, перекотиполе.

Several Ukrainian family names and geographical names have been formed from word-groups or sentences as well. Cf. *Вернигора, Гниверба, Добривечір, Затуливітер, Небаба, Незовибатько, Неїжмак, Непийпиво, Нетудихата, Панібудьласка, Печиборщ, Підкушіуха, Вишигород* (вищий город), *Крутоярії, Рідкодуб* (рідкий дуб), *Погиблях* (погиб лях), etc.

Apart from nouns there are some other parts of speech that are formed in Ukrainian from prepositional phrases and word-groups or sentences, as for example, adverbs: *абияк, анітрохи, віднині, відтепер, досхочу, задовго, запанібрата, віч-на-віч, дотепер, відразу, пліч-о-пліч;* adjectives: *бавовнопрядильний, водомірний, водоплавний, переробний;* and verbs: *благодіяти, боготворити, зубоскалити, хліборобству вати.*

Similar compounds can be observed in English as well. Cf. the nouns *whole-heartedness, schoolboyishiness, warming-pan,* and also adjectives/participles: *absent-minded, heart-shaped, three-coloured,* and several others.

Abbreviation. As a word-forming means it represents a generally common type of word-formation in the contrasted languages, though it is

not devoid of some national divergences either. Common and equally productive in both contrasted languages are the following types:

1. The *so-called initial abbreviation,* wich presents cases like USA, UNO, BBC, TGWU, AFL-CIO, CNN, TV, SOS, IMF, EC, EEC, UK, UNESCO, OPEC (oil producing and exporting countries), MP (member of parliament or military police), AIDS, SALT (Strategic Anns Limitation Talks), VAT and other acronyms. Similarly in Ukrainian: США, ООН, ЮНЕСКО, АФП-КПП, СОЇ, СНІД, МВФ, etc. Specifically English is the combined abbreviation of acronyms and complete words as A-life (artificial life in computers), H-bag (handbag), N-bomb, U-language (up per class English), V-Day (victory Day), VE-Day (victory in Europe Day), VJ-Day (victory over Japan Day), etc. Rather productive in En glish and Ukrainian is also shortening like a. for acre, *end.* for command er, *govt.* for government, *dz.* for dozen, *ft.* for foot, **in.** for inch, *gal.* for gallon, m. for mile, *t.* for ton, **oz.** for ounce, *Ib.* for pound, *a. m.* for ante meridian, and ***i.e.*** (Lat.) for *id est,* etc. Respectively in Ukrainian: ra, c/ r, CM, T, KM, KB, M, CM, c. (сторінка), т (тонна), etc.

Many English shortenings originate from colloquialisms and jargon-isms, as it is the case with such nouns as *bike* (bicycle), *dub* (double), *bod* (body, fellow), *demo* (demonstration), *doc* (doctor), *envo* (envoy), *info* (information data), *op* (opportunity), *to up* (increase), *to ink* (authorise, *sign) fridge* (refrigerator), *mike* (microphone), *pop* (popular as in pop-music), *profie* (a professional), *prof* (professor), *telly* (TV), *trunk* (tranquilizer), *vac* (vacuum cleaner), *van* (railway carriage), *vet* (veteran), lab (laboratory), *coop* (co-operation), *exam, prep* (preparation), *ec/ ecco* (economics), *pro* (professional), *math* (mathematics), *trig* (trigonometry) and others.

The number of thus shortened words of this kind in Ukrainian is restricted to some nursery shortenings *as ма* (мамо), *та* (тату), *ба* (бабо) and to colloquialisms like *тра* (треба), *хо* (хочу), *зав, зам, спец.*

2. Partial abbreviation of words is generally rare in English. It is observed in English in such examples as *Colo* (Colorado), *Indi* (Indi ana), *Okla* (Oklahoma), *Canwood* (Canadian Woods), *Irricanal* (Irri gation Canal), and some other geographical names like these. Partial abbreviation in Ukrainian, however, is rather productive, being used to

designate a variety of notions like *держстрах, Донбас, Кривбас, головбух, завгосп, ботсад, кербуд, сільбуд, комунгосп, начмед, начпостач,* and several others of the kind.

3. *Combined abbreviation* is also less productive and less widespread in English than in Ukrainian. Cf. CONUS (Continental US), COSPAR (Committee on Space Research), INTERPOL (International Criminal Police Organisation), COMECON (Council of Mutual Economic Assitance/Aid). This way of partial plus/and initial abbreviation is very productive in Ukrainian, for example: <u>*міськвно (міський відділ народної освіти), облвно, райвно, облсу*</u> (обласне статистичне управління), etc.

Apart from the aforementioned, there exist some other ways (both productive and non-productive) of word-formation in English and Ukrainian. They are as follows:

1. Blending, which is a rather productive type of compounding in English. It has in recent decades become familiar in Ukrainian as well. Blends or "telescoped" words are formed by confrontation (поєднання) of two (in Ukrainian) or even more truncated (усічених) words or roots of words, for example: *avia(tion) + (electr)onics > avionics, fan(tasy) + (maga)zine > fanzine, mo(torist) + (ho)tel > motel, sm(ock) + (f)og > smog, meri(t) + (aristocracy > meritocracy, fl(y) + (h)urry > flurry,* etc. In recent years some more blends have appeared in English as, for instance, *baggravation* (from bag + aggravation) a feeling of annoyance and anger of air travellers awaiting their baggage at the baggage carousel; *ginormous* (from gigantic + enormous), *meanderthal* (meander + underthal), an annoying person moving slowly and aimlessly in front of other individuals who are in a hurry; *netizen* (internet + citizen), *popaganda* (popular/pop + propaganda), i.e. propaganda of popular music or songs, *sarcastrophy* (sarcasm + catastrophy), i.e. an attemptor's failure to use humorous sarcasm, *wardrobe* (word + wardrobe), i.e. a person's vocabulary (a web page on the internet), Modem (moderate Democrat), Clinlarry (Clinton+Hillary), brunch (breakfast+lunch), etc.

There exist some ways of making blends or types of blanding in English. The main of them are as follows:

1. Blends which are made up from the initial part of the first word or word-group and the complete second word consisting of a root morpheme or a stem only: *cinem(a)* + actress = cinematress, para(litic gas)

160

+ bomb = parabomb, super(sonic) + jet = superjet, para (chute) + glider = paraglider, bas(ket) + cart = bascart, etc.

2. By combining the root morpheme/stem of the first word and the stem of the trancated initial part of the second word: *hay + (si)lage - haylage* (силосна яма), *pay + (pa)triotism = paytriotism, sea+(heli)copter = seacopter, motor + (caval)cade = motorcade, etc.*

3. By combining blends of the initial stem and the final part of the second word:

man + (En)glish = Manglish, radio + (elec)trician = rediotrician, cinema + (m)agnate = cinemagnate, book + (ad)vertising = bookvertizing, etc.

All Ukrainian (like Russian) blends are generally restricted to similar contaminations in which truncated are final elements of the initial words/ word-groups and the initial/final elements of the succeeding words as in *пірам(ідон) + (кофе)їн — пірамеїн, ас(пірін) + кофе(ї)н-аскофен (ходити на) витріщатик* (jocular) *ходити по Хрещатику, витріщивши очі,* i.e. loiter aimlessly, etc.

2. Back-formation (reversion) is a rather productive type of word-formation in English, where many short words are inferred from longer words. It is in this way that verbs are derived from nouns: *own < owning, beg < beggar, brag < bragging, broke < broker, edit < editor, hawk < hawker, kittle < kittling, infract < infraction, catalise < catalysis, emplace < emplacement, reminisce < reminiscence,* etc.

English compound verbs are often formed by back-formation from compound nouns: *to aircondition < air conditioning, to baby-sit < baby sitter, to house-clean < house-cleaner, to house-keep < house-keeping,* etc.

Similarly formed are also English verbs from adjectives: *luminisce < luminiscent, reminisce < reminiscent, frivol < frivolous,* etc.

Also nouns are formed quite in the same way from adjectives: *greed < greedy, nast < nasty, cantankar < cantankerous (уїдливий, сварливий),* etc.

Back-formation in Ukrainian is restricted only to nouns which are formed from verbal (or rather from their infinitival) stems. For example: *біг < бігати, брід < бродити, піт < пітніти, крик < кричати, галас < галасувати, шамкіт < шамкотіти, говір < говорити,* etc.

161

3. Reduplication is a common means of compounding in the con trasted languages, but it is more productive in English than in Ukrainian. Cf. *fifty-fifty, goody-goody, hush-hush* (secret), *pooh-pooh, so-so.* Similarly in Ukrainian: *де-де, ні-ні, ледве-ледве, так-так, ось-ось, от-от, тільки-тільки, тихо-тихо.*

It is interesting to note, that English reduplications are often only somewhat different ablaut combinations. Cf.: *bibble-babble, chit-chat, clitter-clatter* (all denoting idle talk), *dilly-dally* (loiter), *knick-knacks* (small article of ornament), *riff-raff (the* mob), *shilly-shally* (hesitate), *ding-dong* (equivalent to the Ukrainian дзінь-дзелень), *tip-top* (first-rate), *zigzag* (зигзаг), etc.

Unlike Ukrainian the English language is especially rich in rhymed reduplications which are rare in our colloquial speech. Cf. *boogy-woogie, fliggerty-glibberty* (frivolous), *helter-skelter* (in disordered haste), *higgledy-piggledy* (disorder), *hurry-scurry* (great hurry), *lovey-dovey* (darling), *willy-nilly* (compulsory), pow-wow (a noisy assembly), Humpty-Dumpty (вайло), *walkie-hearie* (device for the repro-duction of recorded speech), *walky-lookie* (a portable TV set), *walkie-pushie* (movable TV station for transmitting sports events), *walkie-talkie* portable two-way radio set, etc.

Note. Pertaining to English only are also compounds with post-positives like camp-out (sleep in open air, not in tent), look-in (n) a quick look, look-out (n) vigilance, observation; sit-in/sit-ins (demon-stration, strike without leaving the premises); walk-on (mute, dumb performer), walkout (general strike), walk-in (a) having a separate entrance (apartment), walk-over (easy task, easy victory), walk-up (apartment without a lift).

4. Accentual word-formation. This way of word-formation is iso morphic in the morphological systems of both languages. Neverthe-less, words thus formed in English generally change both their lexico-gram matical (morphological) nature and meaning. Cf. '*accent* (n) — *ac'cent* (v),'*conduct (n) — con'duct* (v),'*export* (n) — *ex'port* (v),'*permit* (n) — *per'mit* (v), though '*mankind* (n) (чоловіча полови-на людства) — *man'kind* (n) людство, but: 'comment (v) - 'comment (n), ex'cuse (v), ex'cuse (n), re'port (v), re'port (n), etc.

The change of accent in Ukrainian, however, usually does not ef-fect

162

the lexico-grammatical nature of the word but only its semantics. Cf. *'замок - за'мок, 'жила - жил'а, 'мука - му'ка, 'приклад - прик'лад.* Though not without exceptions. Cf.: *'бігом* (n),— *бігом* (adv), *вго'рі* (adv) - *в'горі* (n), *'слідом (n),-слід'ом* (adv). Sometimes, however, there may be no differentiation of the lexico-grammatical nature of homonymous sense units through accent in Ukrainian. This can be seen from the following examples: до'низу (adv) -до 'низу (prepos, noun), до'віку (adv) - до (такого-то) 'віку (n), тим 'часом (adv) - він скористався тим 'часом (n), etc.

Substantivization, Adjectivisation, Verbalisation and Adverbialisation in English and Ukrainian

This type of word-formation is common and equally productive both in English and Ukrainian. It finds its realisation in a definite word acquiring a part of or all the lexico-grammatical features of some other part of speech. Thus, abjective may become *wholly substantivised* or *partially substantivised.* 1) Wholly substantivised adjectives acquire all properties of regular nouns. Eg: *a criminal, a black, a white, a liberal/ radical, a European/African, a Ukrainian/German, a weekly* (тижневик), *a monthly* (альманах), etc. 2) Partially substantivised adjectives have only some features of nouns (no genitive case, no plural form): *the deaf and dumb, the French, the invited, the useful, in the open, in the affirmative,* etc. It is often difficult, however, to distinguish between Wholly and partially substantivised adjectives in Ukrainian. Cf. *поранений, молодий* (з) *молодою, старий* (зі) *старою, милий, чорнобрива, завідуючий, братова,* or substantivised adjectival proper names like *Ніжин, Львів, Сватове, Милове,* etc. Or: *гнідий/карий* (horse), *гаряче/холодне* (dishes), *прийомна, німецька/англійська* (languages), *давнє, минуле, старе, особисте,* etc.

Partially substantivised in English may also be other parts of speech , for example, a) Verbs: *that is a must with me; let's have a go: a quiet read, after supper? the haves and have-nots;* b) Numerals: *a sign of four, King Charles the First, page ten, to receive a one/a two: c)* Pronouns: *a little something, a good for nothing, the all of it; those I's_ of*

his; d) Adverbs: I *don't know his whereabouts, he is on leave,* etc.

On the other hand, nouns may be adjectivised. Cf. *the <u>market</u> prices; <u>London</u> docks, <u>average</u> incomes/wages, <u>Kyiv</u> streets, the <u>Dnieper</u> banks, the <u>Ukraina</u> hotel,* etc.

Nouns may also be adverbialised. Cf.: going *home,* to come *by chance,* on the *outskirts* of Kyiv, to come <u>by air/ by train,</u> *in English* (where?).

Similarly in Ukrainian where there are partially substantivised different parts of speech as well: a) pronouns as *мій/твій іде* (коханий, чоловік); *моя прийшла* (кохана, дружина, мати); *він* (чоловік, брат) *у хаті?* and b) numerals: Георг *П'ятий,* Єлизавета *Друга,* отримати два / *п'ять* (mark).

Nouns in Ukrainian can also be adjectivised, though to a smaller degree than in English, being used as appositives only. For example: джаз-*оркестр,* поет-воїн, місто *Київ,* фабрика-кухня, *вагон-ресторан,* дівчина-танкіст, *жінка-космонавт/космонавтка,* etc.

Ukrainian nouns can be adverbialised as well: зайти *в гості,* проситися *у відпустку (куди?),* бути *на канікулах (де?),* брати в *борг,* їхати *зайцем (як?),* домовитися *по телефону (як?),* підписати (щось) з *переляку (як?), etc.*

Specifically English Types of Word-Formation

Among the productive word-forming types completely foreign to Ukrainian is to be pointed out first of all *conversion.* The latter is performed according to some models of "converting" nouns into verbs or verbs into nouns, adjectives into nouns or nouns into adjectives, which can be seen from the examples below:

1. N>V

a chairman > to chairman a butcher > to butcher a boss > to boss an X-ray > to X-ray

2. V>N

to catch > the catch to look > a look to ride > a ride to know how > (the) know-how

Verbs in English can often be formed as a result of converting other parts of speech as well. Cf. *down* (adv.) > *to down* (a plane),-verb

encore (interj.) *to encore* - verb, *pooh-pooh* (interj.) > *to pooh-pooh,* - verb, etc.

Note. Ukrainian verbs can also be often formed from other parts of speech - interjections, pronouns, and particles by adding the suffixes *-ка-ти.* Cf. *бах* (intey.) - *бахкати* (verb), *гей - гейкати, не - чекати, но - нокати, ти/ви - тикати (не тикайте на мене)/викати, цить - цитькати, ух - ухкати, штокати* (contemptuously), etc.

Likewise English adjectives can easily be converted into nouns, and vice versa, according to the following patterns:

3.A>N	4. N>A
Intellectual (a) > an intellectual (n)	maiden (n) > maiden (a)
progressive (a) > a progressive (n)	sidelong (n) >sidelong (a)
Ukrainian (a) > a Ukrainian (n)	sluggard (n) > sluggard (a)
young (a) > a/the young (n)	Zionist (n) > Zionist (a)

Among other specifically English types of word-formation the following should be first of all pointed out:

a) **The sound interchange** (i.e. short vs. long): *bit - beat, cot - court, kin - keen, live - life, prove - proof, rid - read, sit - seat,* etc.

b) **Lexicalisation** of some plural forms of nouns like *colour — co lours (military banner), glass — glasses* (eye-glasses, opera-glasses), line - lines (poetic works), etc.

c) **The phonomorphological** word-formation which is closely con nected with the abbreviation proper. Cf. *Mr.* for mister, *Mrs.* (mistress), *govt.* (government), *Sgt.* (sergeant), *memo* (memorandum), *demo* (dem onstration), D (Lady D) princess Diana, and many others.

Typology of Idiomatic and Set Expressions

The idiomatic and set expressions, i.e. lexically and often structurally stable units of lexicon present a universal phenomenon. Structurally, they may be in all languages 1) Sentence idioms *(time and tide wait for no man, на козаку нема знаку);* 2) Word-group idioms *(Ten Commandments, to be or not to be, десять заповідей, бути чи не бути);*

3) Metaphorically generalised proper names (sometimes geographical names) as Jack Ketch (hangman), *Tom Pepper(great Her), Tom Tailor (tailor), Tom Thumb (a small man, a Liliputian), Mrs. Grundy, Tom, Dick, and Harry (перший-ліпший), Nosy Parker (людина, що втручається/суне ніс не в свої справи)*. Similarly in Ukrainian: *Макар Касян, і.е.* (ненажера), *Чалий (підступна, зрадлива людина); Герострат, Ксантипа (сварлива Сократова дружина), язиката Хвеська, сердешна Оксана* and many others. Their transparent metaphorical meaning is indisputable in the contrasted languages.

Presumably common in all languages are also the paradigmatic classes of idioms which may be **substantival** *(the Trojan horse, the sword of Damocles; троянський кінь, дамоклів меч);* **verbal** *(to have one's heart in one's mouth, to take the bull by the horns; брати бика за роги, пекти раків);* **adverbial** *(by and again, tit for tat; по всіх усюдах, тут і там, скрізь і всюди),* etc. Idiomatic expressions in English and Ukrainian and in all other languages may perform common functions in the sentence, namely, that of a) the subject *(Hobson's choice* is an idiom); b) the predicate/predicative (That was a *Hobson's choice* for him); c) the object (He translated correctly the idiom *"Hob-son's choice "* into Ukrainian); d) the adverbial modifier (He will do it *by hook or by crook).* Similarly in Ukrainian: *дамоклів меч ~* ідіома; він *утре їм носа;* вона не хоче *пекти раків; кров з носа,* а зроблю це.

Besides, idiomatic expressions exist in all languages either as 1) absolute equivalents having all components the same and absolutely identical or slightly different meaning in some languages of a historically, culturally and mostly geographically close region, as is the case with the idiomatic expressions of the European area as *the heel of Achilles ахіллесова п'ята, the Trojan horse троянський кінь, the tree of knowledge дерево/древо пізнання, thirty pieces of silver тридцять срібняків,* etc. *2)* Idiomatic expressions may also exist as *near equivalents,* i.e. when having in some (usually different) languages one or more components missing or different as in other (contrasted) languages. For example: to kiss the *post поцілувати замок, as pale as paper блідий як стіна', grass widow — солом'яна вдова, measure twice, cut once сім раз одміряй, а раз одріж; to know smth. as one knows*

166

his ten fingers знати щось, як своїх п'ять пальців. Or in Japanese: *to live like dog and monkey, i.e. to live as cat and dog; 3)* The third common class of idiomatic expressions and not only in the contrasted languages constitute genuine and approximate idiomatic analogies. The latter have in English and Ukrainian similar meaning but different componental structures. Cf. *a fly in the ointment, make haste slowly; ложка дьогтю в бочці меду, тихіше* їдеш — *далі* будеш.

National idioms present a separate universal feature pertained to all languages. These idioms are formed on the basis of the component parts/ images characteristic of a definite national community and its language. Thus, only in English exist such idioms as to dine with *Duke Humphry,* to cut off with *a shilling,* or to accept *the Chiltern Hundreds,* and only in Ukrainian such idioms as *передати куті меду, впіймати облизня, ставити на карб, пекти раків,утерти носа,* etc.

Typologically relevant is also the identification of the group of regular **international idioms,** which are common, however, only in some groups of geographically closer languages (cf. European, South-Asian, Far Eastern). Nevertheless there scarcely exist universal idioms of the same lexical meaning and the same component structure. This is the result of the historical development of languages which were exerted in different geographical/racial areas to different cultural, religious and other influences. Thus, all European nations and their languages have been influenced by Greek and Roman cultures and by Christianity. As a result, there are many not only words but also idioms borrowed from Greek, Hebrew and Latin (cf. *Pandora's box, Herculean pillars, Gordian knot, between Scylla and Charybdis, to cross the Rubicon; 1 came, I saw, I conquered; the Ten Commandments, wise Solomon, prodigal son/to be in (the) seventh heaven* and many others). These and the like idiomatic expressions, including several proverbs and sayings, have usually absolute or near equivalents in languages of one culturally and geographically common area. Such common historical, semantic, componental and sometimes even structural equivalents can be seen on the following few examples given below.

It must be pointed out that these and many other international idioms are alien, however, to Chinese, Japanese, Aleutian, Indonesian and other

167

Ukrainian	English	German	Italian
блудний син	prodical son	der verlorene Sohn	il figlio prodigo
куй залізо доки гаряче	strike the iron while it is hot	schmiede das eisen solange es heiss ist	battere il ferro quando e caldo
крокодилячі сльози	crocodile's tears	Krokodilstränen	le lacrime di coccodrillo
нема диму без вогню	no smoke without fire	wo Rauch ist, da ist auch Feuer	non ce fumo senza fuoco
гратися з вог-нем	to play with fire	mit dem Feuer spielen	scherzare col fuoco

languages whose peoples have been brought up in other historic, cultural and religious (Moslem, Buddhist, etc.) conditions. As a result, there exist no universally equivalent idioms of identical semantic, componental, picturesque or syntactic structure. And yet, because of the existence of many common vital needs of all humans the world over and to a great measure due to many common natural conditions of life, and not in a smaller measure due to common living working conditions, which people practically experience during their everyday activities in different parts of the world, there appeared some correlating/relevant idiomatic expressions of semantically similar/analogous or even common nature even in genealogically and culturally non-related languages. These idiomatic expressions comprise apart from some regular idioms also proverbs/sayings and stable/set expressions. A most fitting language for the рифове would naturally be the one standing farthest from the European languages as, for example, the Japanese language. It has undoubtedly several grammatical and other peculiarities of its own that are not available in all other European languages. Because of this it was found apt enough for contrasting some of its idiomatic expressions with the English and Ukrainian ones. The material for our contrastive analysis was found in the four languages dictionary by Taiji Takashima* containing 800 Japanese idiomatic and stable expressions and their English, German, French and in some cases even Latin semantically correspondent idiomatic and set counterparts. The result came out as was naturally expected: only some seven to eight idiomatic and set expressions

' See: Taiji Takashima. Fountain of Japanese Proverbs. The Hokuseido Press: Tokyo, 1981, 377 pages.

out of 800 coincide in their componental structure and meaning, i.e. are complete equivalents in these four languages. This makes only about 0,01% of their total number in the dictionary. These equivalents are as follows:

In English	In Ukrainian	In Japanese transcription
1 . The more the better 2. Time is money 3. There is no rule without exception 4. History repeats itself 5. A drowning man will catch at a straw 6. If you run after two hares, you will catch neither	Чим більше, тим краще Час - це гроші Правил без винятків не буває Історія повторюється І за соломинку вхопиться, хто топиться Побіжиш за двома зайцями, не впій-маєш жодного	Tata masu-masu benzu Toki wa kane nari Reigai no nai kisoku wa nai Rekishi wa kurikaesu Oborum mono wa wara oto tsukama Nito o ou-mono wa, itto oto ezu
7. Rome was not built in one day 8. Money begets money	Рим був побудований не за один день Гроші йдуть до грошей	Roma wa ichi-nitchi ni shite nasaru Kane ga kane o umu

Some of the above-given stable and idiomatic expressions are undoubtedly direct borrowings from the European languages. The first and most evident of them is, of course, *Rome was not built in one day, time is money, if you run after two hares you will catch neither* and some others. Therefore, their Japanese origin can in reality be doubted. Still more doubted can be their wide circulation in spoken/colloquial Japanese.

There exist, however, a comparatively larger number of near equivalents in the three contrasted languages. These are idiomatic expressions, proverbs or sayings containing one or more common component and having close to identical or similar meaning in English, Ukrainian and Japanese. For example, the English and Ukrainian idiom *habit is a second nature* has in Japanese a somewhat different semantic and componental equivalent: *Habit becomes nature Narai sei to naru.* Therefore, one component *(the second]* is missing in Japanese. Similar omissions or non-coincidences can be observed in some other near equivalents of the contrasted languages. Cf. the Japanese idiomatic expression *shiro hire to in* which means to *call white black* (as in Ukrainian *називати біле чорним),* whereas in English one says *to talk black into white.* Similar slight differences are observed in other Japanese and European idiomatic expression. Cf. in Japanese: *Migi no mimi kara hideri no mimi — to go in at the right ear and out at the left* or in English *go in at one ear and out at the other,* which is in Ukrainian *в одне вухо влітає, а з другого вилітає.*

All in all, therefore, the number of absolute or nearly absolute idiomatic expressions, having in each of the contrasted languages the same or almost the same semantic and componental structure, may rise to ten or even to a few more. Nevertheless, it gives scarcely any ground for a serious assumption as to the existence of universal idiomatic expressions of the same meaning, nothing to say about their componental and structural identity.

And yet the environmental and social conditions of life and regular vital needs may define and even predetermine not only the behavior of people, but also their ways of thinking in different parts of the world. Consequently, it may be assumed that some near idiomatic equivalents and analogies may still come to being (and exist) in absolutely different languages. Moreover, one can come across some near equivalents and still more across genuine idiomatic analogies, which are sense units similar only in sense in genealogically not related languages.

As has been pointed out, near or incomplete idiomatic equivalents have usually one or more components common in the counter-opposed idioms/stable expressions in each of the three contrasted languages. One can easily ascertain this when comparing the few examples below of some closest componentally and semantically idiomatic near equivalents of the English, Ukrainian and Japanese languages.

In English	In Ukrainian	In Japanese (as presented in English componental translation)
1 . To lead a **cat** and **dog** life 2. To cut ones coat according to one's cloth 3. Love and reason do not go together 4. The early bird catches the worm 5. As clear as day light	Жити як кіт із собакою По своєму ліжку простягай ніжки Любов сліпа (сліпа любов) Хто рано встає, тому Бог дає Ясно, як Божий день	(Live) like dog and monkey The crab digs a hole according to his shell Love is beyond consideration The early riser gains three mon (money unit) Clearer than seeing fire

The examples above prove the existence in the Japanese language (and certainly in other languages of the world) of two main types of common near equivalents: 1) those having common component parts and 2) those being very close semantically. The former are presented in four of the above-given examples (their common components are in bold type). Cf. the English to lead a cat and dog life with the Japanese to live

like **dog** and **monkey** and the Ukrainian жити як **кіт** із **собакою.**

The semantically close near equivalents which constitute a considerable number of idiomatic expressions in the above-mentioned Japanese and English dictionary are presented in column 2 above. They are: to cut one's **coat** according to one's **cloth** по своєму ліжку простягати **ніжки** and in Japanese (in English translation) The crab digs a **hole** according to his **shell.** The number of near equivalents of both types is about 80, which corresponds to ab. 10% of their total number of the above-mentioned Japanese, English, German and French dictionary. Therefore, the correlation of the universal near equivalents can certainly be supposed to be larger as compared with the scarce number of absolute idiomatic equivalents presented not only in English and Ukrainian (in comparison to the Japanese ones), but also including the corresponding German and French examples given in the above-mentioned dictionary of Taiji Takashia.

According to the typological calculation, the number of genuine and approximate idiomatic analogies in genealogically non-related languages by far exceeds the number of absolute and near equivalents in them. The three contrasted above languages are no exception of this rule. Most of semantic correspondences in English, Ukrainian and Japanese are also genuine or approximate analogies. This can be seen from the following few examples presenting the overwhelming majority of analogies as compared with the correlated number of the few near and absolute equivalents that were found in the above-named dictionary of Japanese idiomatic and stable expressions. Here are some of them:

In English	In Ukrainian	Japanese analogies in English translation
1 . To take a musket to kill a butterfly	Стріляти з гармати по горобцях	Why use a meat cleaver to cut up a chicken?
2. Shut the stable-door after the horse is stolen	Замкнути конюшню, як коня вкрали	To see a thief and make a rope
3. The higher the ape goes, the more he his tail shows	Далі в ліс, більше дров (що далі в ліс, то більше дров)	The knight jumps too far
4. To grease somebody's palm	"Позолотити" руку (дати хабаря)	To apply nose ointment
5. Let sleeping dogs lie (Wake not a sleeping lion)	Не чіпай лиха, поки тихо (поки воно спить)	Gods left alone do not curse
6. All cats are grey in the dark	Уночі що сіре, то й вовк	At night, at a *distance,* wearing a hat

As could be seen from the above listed examples, genuine idiomatic

analogies even in genealogically not akin languages are semantically more transparent than the approximate phraseological/idiomatic analogies. This can be seen from the so-called Japanese idiomatic expressions listed under number 1, 2,5 and 6. Thus, №1 *Why use a meat cleaver to cut up a chicken?* corresponds to the English *To take a musket to kill a butterfly* or to the Ukrainian *стріляти з гармати по горобцях.* Similarly in the Japanese No 2: *to see a thief and make a rope* which corresponds to the English *to shut the stable-door after the horse is stolen* and to the Ukrainian *замкнути конюшню, як коня вкрали* and others.

Approximate analogies, naturally, are still more obscure due to their componental parts/images which are mostly very different in non-related/far distant, as in case of the Japanese languages. Sometimes they are hardly recognizable for the Europeans in general. Cf. for example, the one listed under №3: *The knight jumps too far* that corresponds to the English *Let sleeping dogs lie* and to the Ukrainian idiom *Не чіпай лихо, доки тихо.* Similarly in № 4: *To apply nose ointment* which corresponds to the English *To grease somebody's palm* and in Ukrainian *"позолотити руку " (дати хабаря).*

Therefore, typologically relevant universal idiomatic expressions may presumably be found only among the group/class of idiomatic near equivalents and among the so-called genuine and approximate idiomatic analogies, which are stable expressions having different componental parts/ images but a similar/analogous lexical meaning.

Topics for Self-Testing and Individual Preparation

1. Point to the extralingual factors predetermining the birth and func tioning of universal lexicon.

2. Name and characterise all existing approaches to and principles of the systemic study and classification of lexicon.

4. Point out the common/isomorphic and divergent/allomorphic fea tures in the onomasiological structure of some English vs. Ukrainian no tional and functional words.

5. Point to the correlation of the phonetic/phonological, morphologi cal, and semantic types of motivation in the lexical units of English and Ukrainian.

6. Point out the typologically isomorphic layers of lexicon in the En glish and Ukrainian languages. State the correlation between the stylisti cally neutral and stylistically evaluative units of lexicon in the contrasted languages.

7. Characterise the socially predetermined layers of lexicon in the contrasted languages. Expand on the international terminological, pro fessional, literary, colloquial, low colloquial etc. words and expressions in the contrasted languages.

8. Expand on the 1) common Indo-European stock of words in En glish and Ukrainian 2) on nationally specific English vs. Ukrainian lexis.

9. Define the types of derivational morphemes/affixes and the role of agglutination in English and Ukrainian word-formation.

10. Speak on the national and international word-forming/affixal mor phemes in English and Ukrainian.

11. Expand on the phenomenon of substantivisation, adjectivisation, verbalisation and adverbialisation in English and Ukrainian.

12. Expand on the typological isomorphism of suppletivity as a word- formating and form-building means in English and Ukrainian.

13. Point out the isomorphic and allomorphic features in the identi-fication, classification and functioning of international, national, and universal types of idiomatic expressions.

14. Expand on the typological classification of idiomatic and stable expressions in the genealogically different languages.

Exercises for Class and Homework

Exercise I. Read carefully the A, B and C passages. Identify in each of them: a) notionals forming a layer of lexicon due to the envi-ronmental principle and b) notionals forming a layer of lexicon due to the socially predetermined principle.

A. Suleiman-din-Daoud was wise. He understood what the beasts said, what the birds said, what the fishes said and what the insects said. He understood what the rocks said deep under the earth when they bowed in towards each other and groaned: and he understood what the trees said when they rustled in the middle of the morning. (Kipling)

B. M. Kotsyubynskyi was at the centre of civic initiatives in Chernihiv, where he collaborated with the Prosvita, a Ukrainian organisation for the promotion of education and culture. The Chernihiv period was remarkably prolific for Kotsyubynskyi, who wrote quite a few essays, sketches, novelettes and stories, in which he identified himself with the European school of psychological prose. (Ukraine, № 8)

The State Tax Administration (STA) has announced it has busted a well-developed network of bogus facilities which launder shadow funds. It was found that the Taki Dila (Such Things) publishing house was involved in legalising the latter, the STA press service says. The tax administration considers this facility an active law breaker and has inspected it out of political considerations but because is was part of a widespread money laundering network, which used for this purpose bogus firms, commercial straw men forged documents, and contracts. Moreover, the STA inspection was pursuant to a Central Electoral Commission request to check the reports that Yuliya Tymoshenko's bloc was violating Election law in producing printed matter.

It was found that a subsidiary had put to its own accounts hundreds of thousands of hryvnias it received from the Product BVO bogus firm which contracted Taki Dila to produce printed matter for the Tymoshenko's election bloc and laundered this money by having this order filled. (The Day)

Exercise II. Analyse the meaning of each noun, adjective and cardinal numeral in the English and Ukrainian passages below. State, whether their meanings are denotative only or connotative only.

A. Liquid crystals display screens, or LCD's are used in many lap top computers, calculators and other electronic devices. It may not be long before the screens of full-size personal computers and television sets are made of liquid crystals, too.

B. У контрабандистки було виявлено ікони, 4208 американських доларів, 1500 франків, 410 російських рублів, 13260 західно-німецьких марок, 1620 польських злотих, а також злитки золота вагою 112,72 грама. (З газет).

Exercise III. Read carefully first the English and then the Ukrainian passage below and point out the animal names which have apart from their denotative meaning also a connotative meaning in one of the contrasted languages only or in both the contrasted languages.

A. The Dog was wild, and the Horse was wild, and the Cow was wild, and the Sheep was wild, and the Pig was wild. But the wildest of all the wild animals was the Cat. Now there is also the Rat up in the Moon... (Kipling) You only make an ass of yourself... (B. Shaw) "You made a monkey of me last week..." (Carter)

B. За золотими ґратами млів папуга... (Ільченко) Вирячився, як баран на нові ворота. Вовком дивиться. (Приказки) ...а капітани — справжні морські вовки. (Яновський) Як же це ти таку ґаву упіймав... (Кропивницький). Хлоп'ята стали грати у свинки. (Мирний). А соцький, він свиня пиката. (Кропивницький)

Exercise IV. Try to prove the universal nature of the socially distinct

layers/ groups of lexicon in the passages below.

A. I *wad na been surpris'd* to spy   would not have been
   You on *an auld* wife's *flainen* toy;   old flannel cap
   Or *aiblings some bit duddie* boy,   maybe small ragged
   On's *wyliecoat;*   flannel vest
   But Miss's fine *Lunardi!* fye!   ballon, bonnet
   How *daur* ye do't! (R. Burns. To a Louse) dare

B. Зблизившися до хати, він поздоровив її і станув на хвилинку. Відтак мусив іти дальше. Все (всі) гуртом погнало до керниці. Декоторі з моїх камратів похорувалися зі спеки, ...а один німець помер, сарака, таки під час маневрів. Ба сеє візьме (Михайло) в руки, ба теє. Ба йде в поле, ба вештається коло тварин, коло бджіл. (Кобилянська).

Exercise V. Read the English and Ukrainian sentences/lines carefully and state, whether the divergences in the means of expressing stylistic/genre peculiarities of speech testify to the systemic organisation of lexicon in English and Ukrainian.

A. Ye voices, that arose After the Evening close And Whispered to my restless heart repose, Spake full well in language quaint and olden. One who dwelleth by the castled Rhine... (Longfellow) I speak not, I trace not, I breathe not thy name. (Byron) Hark! heard you not the forest, monarch's roar? Thrice sounds the clarion; Lo! the signal falls. In truth he was a noble steed. A Tartar of the Ukraine breed. Awake, bold Blight! the foe is at the gate! Without a sigh he left to cross the brine. A few short hours, and he will rise To give the morrow birth: and I shall hail the main and skies... Strange pangs would flash Along Child Harold's brow. (After Byron)

B. Так, вже знялася *бранная* тривога, Коні ржуть, почувши дим війни. (Кочерга) Прийдуть роки, з полону *бранець* верне. (Л. Українка) Двадцятий вік нову *главу* в історії почав. (Дорошко) Ще сідла там були... І *крицеві* панцири. (Ільченко) Йде вояк, закутий в зброю. Щит *червлений* на руці. (Олесь) *Ланіти* і *уста* марніють зримо. (Шевченк) *Літа* пригасили горе... (Стельмах) Ой поїхав з України козак *молоденький* — Оріхове сіделечко, ще й кінь *вороненький.* (Народна пісня)

Exercise VI. Read and translate the English (A) words into Ukrainian and the (B) words into English. Point out a) words whose onomasiological form and semasiological structure coincides and b) words whose onomasiological form and semasiological structures do not coincide in the contrasted languages.

Model: five п'ять — the onomasiological form and the semasiological structure of the word coincide; ski (v) ходити на лижвах (word-group) — the onomasiological form is different in Ukrainian; рука hand/ arm — the semasiological structure of the word is larger in English.

A. Blue, red, two-thirds, forty, handsome, akimbo, fall in love, good- for-nothing (n), merry-go-round, forget-me-not, examinee, portable (n), snow-ball, participate, teach-in, fishing-rod, ink-pot, sidewise, hairdress er, decamp, perfectible.

B. Розкохати (когось), свататися, господарювати, спатки, окріп, літепло, санітар, миттєво, самотужки, самохіть, вусики, вустонька, кулачище, кабанюга, кільканадцять, щонайкраще, якнайбільше, по-

нашому, нога, палець, покашлювати, попоїсти, попоходити, славитися, викати, тикати, нікати/некати, штокати.

Exercise VII. Read the English and Ukrainian words and word-combinations below. Point to the existence or non-existence of isomorphism and the types of their motivation in the contrasted languages.

A. Black, blacken, large, enlarge, examinee, forget, unforgettable, good, goodish, hang, hiss, moo, cock-a-doodle-doo; foot of a mountain, school of fish, arms of a coat, arms of a chair/of a tree, to warm the viper, to make both ends meet, to have a sleepless pillow, to man ships.

B. Збір, збирач, вимога, вимогливий, товариський, кульбаба, кульбабовий, гейкати, мекати, ґелґотати, сьорбати, дзеленчати," квітень, квітневий, лютий, лютневий, підкопуватися (під когось), носити каменя в пазусі, рісочки в роті не мати, не знати ні бе, ні ме/ ні кукуріку, купатися в розкошах, липкий на руку, пастися в чужому городі, пастися в чужому зошиті.

Exercise VIII. Analyse carefully the given groups of English and Ukrainian words and word-groups/stable expressions below. Try to allot them to the corresponding layers of lexicon: internationalisms (terms), professionalisms, archaisms, neologisms, poetisms. State their typologically national or universal nature.

A. Electron, bacteria, cholera, motor, computer, theorem, triangle, grammar, physics, jurisdiction, lawyer, teacher, dentist, poem, culture, addition/summation, subtraction, pronoun, attribute, predicate, prefix, cu bic equation, outer space, specific gravity, scooling, telelecture, drug, educationalist, anarch, sire, albeit, harken.

B. Кібернетика, література, музика, поезія, академія, інститут, журнал, пекар, письменник, хлібороб, фінанси, валютний фонд, педагогіка, філософія, консенсус, імпічмент, ламбада, рекет, орендар, скрижалі, мечники, списники, осавули, земне тяжіння, питома вага, електричне поле, коротке замикання, керування, узгодження.

Exercise IX. Compare each of the 4 corresponding types of idiomatic expressions in English and Ukrainian. Give your reasons for the non-existence of absolute onomasiological equivalents and the existence of

177

some semasiological variants in all languages of the world.

A. Achilles' heel, to cross the Rubicon, the apple of one's eye, be
tween Scylla and Charybdis,the labour of Sisyphus, the massacre of
the innocents, the Trojan horse, a prodigal son, the Ten Command-
ments, wise Solomon, the game is/is not worth the candles, Augean
stables.

B. A crooked stick throws a crooked shadow, strike the iron while
it is hot, when at Rome do as the Romans do, there is no use crying
over spilled milk, scratch my back and I'll scratch yours, a good be-
ginning is half the battle, the iron heel, when pigs fly.

C. To do harm, to make decision, to be in a hurry, to be on the
alert, to keep within the law, to make money, to take part, to say the
truth, to throw light, to turn smth. upside down, a war of words, what
of it? to take measures, to say no/yes, strike the iron while it is hot,
never say die.

D. To accept the Chiltern Hundreds, to cut off with a shilling, Hob-
son's choice, to dine with Duke Humphrey, to mind one's p's and q's,
to treat like a lord, time is money, when Queen Ann was alive, a pretty
penny, to carry coals to Newcastle, to fight like Kilkenny cats.

А. Альфа й омега, гордіїв вузол, жереб кинуто, канути в Лету,
око за око, зуб за зуб; золотий телець, бути на сьомому небі, Па-
ндорина скринька, пригріти гадюку в пазусі, галас волаючого в
пустелі, винищення немовлят, блудний син, тридцять срібняків.

Б. Кирпу гнути (дерти носа); народитися в сорочці; не знати ні
бе, ні ме; що з воза впало, те пропало; скажеш гоп, як переско-
чиш; не спитавши броду, не лізь у воду; накивати п'ятами; що
кому, а курці просо; не вчи вченого; який батько - такий син, яка
хата -такий тин; нізащо в світі, загнати туди, де Макар телят не
пас.

В. Водити компанію, володіти собою, волосся стає дибки,
вразливе місце, грати на нервах, гучна слава, давати дорогу, да-
вати змогу, дивитися здивовано/великими очима, морочити собі
голову, поширювати чутки, верзти/молоти нісенітниці, казав пан
кожух дам.

Г. Збити з пантелику, дурне сало без хліба, пекти раки, скака-
ти в гречку, товкти воду в ступі, ложка дьогтю в бочці меду, на-
говорити сім кіп/мішків гречаної вовни, на козаку нема знаку;
товчеться, як Марко в пеклі, (не довго) ряст топтати, не спіши
поперед батька в пекло, як чугуївська верства, ти його хрести, а
воно кричить "пусти".

TYPOLOGY OF THE MORPHOLOGICAL SYSTEMS OF THE CONTRASTED LANGUAGES

The morphological systems of the English and Ukrainian languages are characterised by a considerable number of isomorphic as well as of several allomorphic features. The isomorphic features are due to the common Indo-European origin of the two languages, while allomorphisms have been acquired by English and Ukrainian in the course of their historical development and functioning as independent national languages.

The main **typological constants** that make the object of contrasting at the morphological level of English and Ukrainian, and not only of these but also of many other languages, are three. These are 1) *the morpheme;* 2) *the parts of speech;* 3) *their morphological categories.*

The principal typological constant of the morphological level is, of course, the morpheme which is endowed in both contrasted languages with some minimal meaning. As to its structure, the morpheme may be a) simple (one-phoneme): **a-, -s, -t** (**a**like, say**s**, burn**t**) in English and -а, -u, -у, з-, с-, etc. in Ukrainian (весна, хати, беру, з'їсти, сховати) or
b) compound **(-ment, -hood, -ward, -ство, -ський, -цький)** as in **man agement, brotherhood, seaward,** суспільство, **сільський, ткацький.** The complexity of its nature, structure and meaning makes the morpheme one of the main objects of contrastive study at the morphological level. Moreover, the morpheme in English and Ukrainian has some peculiar fea tures, which are characteristic of each of these contrasted languages.

Isomorphisms and Allomorphisms in the Morphemic Structure of English and Ukrainian Words

The morpheme is a minimal meaningful unit and it can be in the contrasted languages either **free or bound. Free or root morphemes are**
lexically and functionally not dependent on other morphemes. They may be regular words (cf. boy, day, he, four, день, кінь, річ, він, три) or they may constitute the lexical core of a word. Eg.: boyhood, daily, fourth, денна, нічний, тричі, etc. In other words, root morphemes in English, Ukrainian and other languages are not dependent on other morphemes in

a word. **Bound morphemes,** on the other hand, can not function independently: they are bound to the root or to the stem consisting of the root morpheme and of one or more affixal morphemes. Cf.: days, spoken, fourteen, overcome, government, дивно, розумом, дні, нашим), etc. Bound morphemes like *-s, -en, - teen, over-, -ment, -о, -ом, -і, ~им* in either of the two languages can not exist independently, i.e. they are not free but always dependent on roots or stems of their words.

Root morphemes. Due to its historical development, English has also a much larger number of morphologically unmarked words, i.e. regular root morphemes, than Ukrainian. Consequently, the number of inflexions expressing the morphological categories is much smaller in English than in Ukrainian. Moreover, a lot of notionals in English lack even the affixes which can identify their lexico-morphological nature. Free root-morphemed words, though fewer in Ukrainian, are still represented in all lexico-morphological classes as nouns, verbs, adjectives, etc. of both contrasted languages. Cf. *arm, pen, boy, work, do, red, he, she, it, five, this, ten, here, far,* etc. Similarly in Ukrainian: *ніс, лоб, чуб, ти, варт, хто, три, тут, де, він,* etc.

Free root morphemes in English and Ukrainian can also be functionals: *but, till, on, not, through, just* (a moment), *мов, геть, так, певне, може, ох, дзень, гав, не, ні, від, на, під,* etc.

Root morphemes in English can often form part of the stem, which is especially characteristic of present-day Ukrainian, for example: *workers, friendliness, concerning, beautiful;* робітництво, **безмежність, переодягнутися, переробивши, тепленько,** теплесенько, etc.

Affixal morphemes in the contrasted languages split into a) *Derivational morphemes* which are in English and Ukrainian mainly suffixes and sometimes also prefixes. The number of suffixes in the contrasted languages considerably exceeds the number of prefixes. So is, naturally, the significance of the former as word-forming means, the latter (prefixes) performing only in a few cases a word-building function in Ukrainian. The number of suffixes in English does not exceed 100, there being 60 noun-forming, 26 adjective-forming, 5 verb-forming and 3 adverb-forming suffixes [13, *159 — 160]*. Among the noun-indicating/form-ing suffixes in English are **-acy, -ance, -ion, -dom, -er, -ess, -hood, -ics,**

-ism, -ity, -ment, -ness, -ship, -ty and others. Cf. *democracy, alliance, delegation,* **freedom,** *writer,* **falsehood,** *politics, feudalism, government, management, fitness, likeness, penmanship, friendship, loyalty,* etc. The adjective-indicating suffixes are: **-able, -al, -ial, -fold, -ful, -ic, -ile, -ish, -less, -ous, -some, -ward, -y** and some others. Cf. *capable, formal, presidential,* **manifold,** *grateful, laconic, futile, selfish, meaningless, dangerous,* **tiresome, eastward,** *happy, silly,* etc. The verb-indicating suffixes are **-ate, -en, -esce, -ify, -ise.** Cf. *negotiate, facilitate, blacken, shorten, acquiesce, beautify, purify, demobilise, organise.* The adverb-indicating suffixes are **-ly, -wards, -ward, -ways:** *quickly, slowly, southward/southwards, sideways,* etc.

Ukrainian word-forming suffixes are more numerous and also more diverse by their nature, there being special suffixes to identify different genders of nouns that are practically missing in English. Thus, *masculine gender* suffixes of nouns in Ukrainian are: **-ник, -івник, -їльник, -ч, -ік/-їк, -ець/-єць, -ар/-яр, -ир, -ист, -іст, -тель, -аль** and others. Eg.: *медик, господарник, рахівник, керманич, кравець, хімік, прозаїк, боєць, шахтар, муляр, бригадир, збирач, діяч, окуліст, вихователь, скрипаль,* etc.

Suffixes *of feminine gender* in Ukrainian usually follow the masculine gender suffix in the noun stem, the most frequent of the former being *-к/а/, -иц/я/, -ес/а/, -ух/а/, -ш/а/, -івн/а/,* etc. Cf. *виховат-ель-к-а, рад-ист-к-а, спів-ан-к-а, уч-ен-иц-я, ткач-их-а, поет-ес-а, коваль-івн-а, морг-ух-а, директ-ор-ш-а, Семенів-на.* The corresponding English suffixes **(-or, -ess, -me, -rix, -ine,** and **-ette)** identify the masculine and feminine sex and not the grammatical gender. Cf. *actor, emperor, actress, poetess, directrix, emperatrix, heroine, suffragette.* English nouns with the so-called gender suffixes do not differ functionally from other nouns which have no such suffixes. Eg: The actor/actress **sang** and The bird **sang.** Ukrainian gender nouns, however, always require corresponding gender forms in attributes and predicates. Eg.: молодий артист співав. Гарна артистка співала. Ранкове небо сіріло. Малі пташки співали, чорний ворон сидів, сива ворона сиділа, сіре котеня нявкало.

Ukrainian suffixes can form nouns of the feminine gender denoting

181

non-human beings as animals, birds, insects, as well as some class nouns, abstract and collective nouns, for example: *сніг-ур-к-а, переп-іл-к-а, цвірк-ун-к-а, паруб-от-а, рід-н-я, бор-н-я, біган-ин-а, бороть-б-а, сприт-ність, свіж-ин-а, балака-ни-на.*

Suffixes of the *neuter gender* are mostly used in Ukrainian to identify abstract and collective nouns and names of materials, babies, cubs, nurslings, as in the following nouns: *жіно-цтв-о, учитель-ств-о, нероб-ств-о, бади-лл-я, заси-лл-я, збі-жж-я, кло-чч-я, смі-тт-я, горі-нн-я, велі-нн-я, терп-інн-я.*

Apart from the afore-mentioned, there exist in Ukrainian large groups of evaluative diminutive and augmentative noun suffixes as in *зір-оньк-а, сон-ечк-о, руч-ищ-е, голов-ешк-а, биц-юр-а, кабан-юр-а,* etc. and patronimic suffixes like -енк-о, -ук, -чук, -ун, -щук, -ець, etc. (cf. *Бондаренко, Головащук, Петрук, Поліщук, Чергинець, Литвинець, Лівшун, Мовчун).*

The number of suffixes forming only diminutive nouns in Ukrainian is as many as 53, compared with 16 suffixes in English, only 4 of which are practically productive (cf. *gooseling, girlie, booklet, daddy, granny).* Neither is there identity in the formation of English and Ukrainian statives, the latter mostly having in Ukrainian the same form as adverbs or modal words (cf. *прикро, душно, треба, краще,* etc.). These groups of suffixes (as can be seen below) pertain to English as well, but they are much less represented. Nevertheless, despite the difference in the quantity and quality of suffixes, they perform in English and Ukrainian an isomorphic (either the word-forming or form-building) function. This can also be seen from the following few examples:

English Word-Forming Suffixes
a) noun-forming suffixes:
-er, -or, -hood, -ment, -ance: *worker, sailor, falsehood, government, alliance, appearance;*
b) adjective-forming suffixes: -y, -ful, -able (-ible), -less: *rocky, joyful, reliable, useless;*

Ukrainian Word-Forming Suffixes
a) іменникові:
-ель, -ець, -ник, -інь, -ість,-ність:
вчитель, борець, робітник, глибінь, чинник, давність, гордість;
b) дієслівні:
-ну, -ти, -ува, -юва: *кусну-ти, зимувати, днювати;*

c) verb-forming suffixes:
-ise, -en: realise, shorten, blacken;
-ate, -fy: elaborate, signify;
d) adverb-forming suffixes:
-fold, -ce, -ward, -ly: twofold,
thrice, nicely, homeward, etc.

c) прикметникові:
-к,-ив, -лив: близький, правдивий,
міський, примхливий;
d) прислівникові:
-но, -чі, -ки, -ма: пошепки, си-
дьма, двічі, горілиць, сонно, віч-
но.

Form-building suffixes in English and Ukrainian, when added to the root (or to the stem of a word), change the form of these words, adding some new shade to their lexical meaning. The suffixes may also change the lexical meaning of the stem, for example: *Ann — Anny, duck — duckling, hill — hillock, friend — friendship. Kyiv — Kyivans. London — Londoner, four — fourteen — forty,* etc. In Ukrainian: *дитина — дитинча, лошак — лошачок. Харків - харкі-в'янин, плітка -пліточка, хід - ходанина - походеньки, швидко - швиденько, хутко — хутенько.*

Prefixes in the contrasted languages modify the lexical meaning of the word. They may sometimes change even the lexico-grammatical nature of the derivative word. As for example:

In English	In Ukrainian
Nouns: co-existence, enclosure, insight, prorector. Verbs: avert, adjoin, bewrap, subordinate. Adjectives: anomalous, eccentric, non-standard, unable. Statives: ablaze, asleep. Adverbs: together. Prepositions: below. Conjunctions: because, unless, until.	безмір, віддаль, зав'язь, під-вид, праліс; вбігати, накрича-ти, обійти, обмити, підвести; антивоєнний, надмірний; вго-лос, заміж, по-нашому, по-німецьки, поміж, понад; оскі-льки, позаяк, прихід, походе-ньки, розбити, переміряти, якнайкраще, щонайшвидше, etc.

Word-forming prefixes pertain mostly to the English language where they can form different parts of speech. For example, verbs: bedew, bemadam, embed, encamp, enable, denude, disable, endear. Adjectives: anti-war, non-party, pre-war, post-war. Statives: aboard, alike, asleep. Adverbs: today, tomorrow, together. Prepositions: be-low,

behind. **Conjunctions:** because, **unless, until.** In Ukrainian only some conjunctions, prepositions and adverbs can be formed by means of prefixes, for example: *вдень, вночі, по-нашому, по-новому, набік, вдруге, втретє, оскільки, внаслідок, вгору, знизу,* **щонайменше.**

Isomorphic is also the use of two (in English) and more (in Ukrainian) prefixes before the root/stem: misrepresentation, re-embankment. In Ukrainian three prefixes may be used to modify the lexical meaning of nouns, adjectives, past participles, and verbs, for example: *недовимолот,* **недовиторг, перерозподіляти,** *недовимолочений,* **не/перерозподілений,** недовиторгувати, **перерозподілити, etc.**

Inflexional morphemes in the contrasted languages express different morphological categories. The number of genuine English inflexions today is only **14** to **16.** They are noun inflexions, for example: -s (-es), **-en, -ren** *(boys, watches, oxen, children);* inflexions of the comparative and the superlative degrees of qualitative adjectives: **-er, -est** *(bigger, biggest);* inflexions of degrees of qualitative adverbs: **-er/-ier, -est/ -iest** *(oftener, oftenest; slowliei; slowliest);* the verbal inflexions: -s/-es, -d/-ed, -t, -n/-en; *he puts/he watches; she learned the rule (burnt the candle); a broken pencil.* The inflexions of absolute possessive pronouns: -s, -e: *(hers, ours, yours, mine, thine).* There are also some genuinely English plural form inflexions of nouns with restricted use. These are the plural form inflexions of *kine* (poetic for cows), *fane* (archaic of foes), and *shoen* (archaic of shoes).

Apart from the genuine English inflexional morphemes there exist some foreign inflexions borrowed and used with nouns of Latin, Greek and French origin only. Among them are Latin inflexions -um - -a *(datum — data, erratum — errata,* etc.); -us — i *(focus — foci, terminus*

— termini); -a — ae *(formula — formulae);* -us — a *(generus — genera);* -is — es *(axis — axes, thesis — theses);* -ix — es *(appendix*

— appendices); -ies — ies *(series — series).* The few pairs of Greek inflexional oppositions in singular and plural are the following: **-is --es** *(analysis — analyses, basis — bases);* -on — a *(phenomenon — phe nomena);* -ion — ia *(criterion — criteria).*

In French borrowings only the plural forms are inflected, whereas in singular there are zero inflexions: 0 - s/x *(beau — beaus/beaux);*

184

0 — x *(bureau — bureaux); 0 —* s *(monsieur — messieurs); 0 —* es *(madam — madams).*

The number of inflexions in Ukrainian by far exceeds their number in English since every notional part of speech has a variety of endings. The latter express number, case and gender of nominal parts of speech and tense, aspect, person, number, voice and mood forms of verbs. For example: *Петра, Петрові, йому, всіма; червоний - червоного - червоному - червоним, двоє - двох - двом - двома; сонний - сонного*

- сонному - сонним; танцюючий - танцюючого - танцюючому

- танцюючим; даю — даєш — дає — даємо — даєте — дають — даватимемо; читав - читала - читали, читатиму - читати меш - читатимете, etc. Because of the difference in the structural nature of the contrasted languages, their paradigms of the same notion als naturally differ, the Ukrainian paradigms being much richer than the English ones. However in Old English the noun paradigm included 9 different inflexional forms, the weak verbs paradigm had 10 forms, and the paradigm of adjectives - 13 synthetic (inflected) forms. The variety of case inflexions of Ukrainian nouns is also predetermined by the ex- ist ence of four declensions, the first and the second of which have differ ent case and number inflexions. This depends on the nouns belonging to the hard, palatalised or to the mixed stem consonant type (cf. *вода — води, учень — учні, поле — поля, лоша — лошата, миша — мишею, доня — донею,* etc.).

Some morphological relations and categories in English and Ukrainian (though much rarer) are expressed with the help of analytical means — prepositions, analytical word forms, and particles; for example: *to give smth. to Peter, not far from the river, written (painted) with (in)pencil.* Analytically expressed are also the degrees of comparison of some adjectives and adverbs (cf. *more calm, most calm; more (most) interesting/important; more (most) quickly (slowly),* etc. In Ukrainian the construction is less frequently used (cf. *більш/мени важливий, найбільш/найменш важливий; більш/мени важливо, найбільш/ найменш важливо, більш/найбільш економна, etc.)*

The future tense in Ukrainian can also be expressed analytically though it is closely connected with the modal meaning of certainty (cf. я *буду* на зборах, ми *будемо* боротися).

Only analytical in form is the expression of the passive voice in English, whereas in Ukrainian the present passive has generally a synthetic form, like the past and future passive which can also have a synthetic form of expression; cf. *the plant is being built, the plant was being built, the plant will have been built.* And in Ukrainian: завод *будується (будувався), завод будуватиметься,* завод *буде будуватися,* завод *був/буде збудований,* though the future form may also be *збудується (коли цей завод збудується).*

The totality of the synthetic and analytical paradigms of the notional parts of speech in a language reflects the structural peculiarity of the language as a whole. Hence, contrastive morphology also deals: a) with the specific traits of morphemes in languages under contrasted investigation; b) with classes of paradigms (both synthetic and analytical) pertaining to a notional part of speech and reflecting its paradigmatic variety; c) with the morphological categories and their manifestation in the contrasted languages, and d) with the parts of speech and their typological features.

It is worth emphasising that the general implicit and dependent grammatical meanings of notional parts of speech in both languages coincide which considerably facilitates their contrastive investigation. Besides, it should be emphasised that in the process of typological investigation only correlated language units and phenomena can be contrasted. That means that the units or phenomena have to be of the same status, i. e. they have to belong to a common class of units or phenomena in both the languages in question. They have to occupy the same place in both the languages' systems and consequently serve as constants for typological comparison. Common/isomorphic in the contrasted languages are also some other morphological phenomena of word-building nature. Among these are first of all to be mentioned such phenomena as agglutination and suppletivity.

Agglutination at the morphological level represents a mechanical adding of one or more affixal morphemes in pre-position, post-position or in interposition to the root morpheme. Somewhat different, however, is the quantitative representation of the parts of speech that are formed in the contrasted languages by means of preposed agglutinating morphemes.

In present-day English, which has more zero-morphemed root words than Ukrainian, there exists a larger number of words belonging to different parts of speech and formed by agglutinating prefixes; for example, the verbs: *adhere, assure, co-exist, bedim;* adjectives: *post-war, pre-war;* statives: *afraid, alike, aloof;* adverbs and prepositions: *be-side, inside, before, afterwards, unwell, etc.*

Prepositive agglutinators apart from forming new parts of speech or creating some shades in the lexical meaning of many such words (cf. *do — undo — overdo, lead — mislead;* Ukr.: *схід — захід — вихід — дохід — прихід,* etc.) can also perform some purely grammatical functions. Thus, they can sometimes turn the intransitive verbs into transitive, for example: *live — outlive, moan — bemoan, weep — beweep, vote — outvote;* Ukrainian: *жити — дожити — прожити — пережити, спати — проспати (переспати), плакати — оплакати.* In Ukrainian pre-posed affixes can change imperfective verbs into perfective (cf. *бити - збити - забити - добити - розбити; вчити - вивчити -довчити - завчити - перевчити).*

Post-positive agglutination is observed in both contrasted languages, being in Ukrainian even more frequent than in English. All Ukrainian infinitives without exception are formed by mechanical adding to the root the post-positive morphemes **-ти/-ть, -ся, -ки, -оньки, -тусі/-туні** (diminutive forms), eg: *набити, пролити, змити, опрацювать, злитися, спатки, їстки, питоньки, купці, спатусі/спатуні,* etc. In English most of the indefinite form infinitives are pure root-morphemed words (cf. *come, live, love, fly, sit, read, swim, warm).* There are only some five verbal morphemes that are agglutinated post-positively. These are **-ate, -en, -esce, -ify, -ise**, eg: *create, blacken, acquiesce, purify, civilise,* etc. A notable difference in Ukrainian exists, however, in the larger amount (up to four) of affixal preposed agglutinators added to the root morpheme, eg: *вхід, вихід, схід, ухил, недосвіт, недовиторг, вздовж, навкруг, навздогін, недопорозподілити.*

Post-positive agglutination is often used to form nouns in both contrasted languages as well. For example, in English: *attendance, diary, freedom, employee, hostess, boyhood, pumpkin, highness, friend-*

ship, _attitude, politics, mighty,_ etc. Similarly in Ukrainian: _чужак,_ _бідняк, дудар, гуляр, багач, борець, дудик, дудник, нудота, колій,_ _сонливість, холодок, ясність,_ etc.

Among other parts of speech formed by means of postpositive agglutinators are English relative adjectives _(economic, Polish, political._ etc.), adverbs of both languages _(nicely, sideways, westwards: гарно,_ _швидко, вище)',_ Ukrainian statives _(треба, можна, жалко, прикро,_ _краще);_ numerals _(fifty, sixty, fifteen, eighteen),_ in Ukrainian: _одинадцять, дванадцять, двадцять, сімдесят,_ etc. Single post-positive affixal morphemes are also agglutinated in the contrasted languages with compound stems of verbs, nouns, adjectives, and adverbs, as in the following words: _backbiting, cockfighting, trustworthy, grasshopper, skyscraper,_ etc. Similarly in Ukrainian: _народоволець, односелець. косоокість, однобічність, мимохідь, загальновизнано, малопереконливо, односторонньо,_ etc.

Isomorphic is also the post-posed agglutination of two affixal morphemes to a stem. The stems thus formed can be of different lexico-grammatical nature: nouns (cap_ableness, equalizer,_ responsibility: adjectives (communicable, meaningful, motionless): numerals _(thirteenth,_ twentieth); adverbs (foolishly, nationally, needlessly, powerfully, down-_wards, Southwards._

Note. Pre-posed agglutinating affixes lose their grammatical relevance in Ukrainian when accent is employed to identify the imperfective aspect of verbs (cf. забити - забивати, набити - набивати, позичити - позичати, etc.). There are many words in Ukrainian with two post-posed affixal morphemes added to the root as in the reflexive and aspect verbs (with the suffixes _знатися, вітатися,_ мазонути, рубонути. стуконути), and also in such nouns as болючість, будиночок, відповідальність, _людськість;_ in adverbs: тихесенько, ранесенько; in dyjepryslivnyks: борючись, опинившись, тримаючись and others.

Root morphemes in the contrasted languages can be agglutinated pre-posed and post-posed simultaneously as in the English words _disagreeableness. incorruptibility, indisputableness, irresponsibility. incommunicableness. unrealistically._ Or in Ukrainian: безвідповідальність, заробітчанин, нереалістично, _некомунікабельність, перешіптуватися, запобігливість,_ etc.

Agglutination is also a productive means of compounding (especially in English) where different parts of speech may be formed in this way — nouns, verbs, adjectives, and adverbs, eg: *chimney-sweep, money-order, long-away, knee-deep, present-day, short-sighted, broad-minded, long-range, hi-jack, to April-fool, goose-step, cross-examine, plate-rack, sideways,* etc. Or in Ukrainian: *бурят-монгол, дизель-генератор, двійка-байдарка, шафа-холодильник, кахи-кахи, тиць-миць, човг-човг, сяк-так, хоч-не-хоч,* etc. Highly productive in English is also the agglutination with the help of prepositions, eg: stick-ш-the-mud, commander-in-chief, matter-of-fact, up-to-date, etc.

Agglutination of predicative units is observed in both languages though more common it is still in the English language, eg: *pick-me-up, forget-me-not, merry-go-round, push-me-pull-me, Gradgrind, Mr. Know-All,* etc. (cf. Ukrainian family names as Куйбіда, Неїжмак, Незовибатько, Непийвода, Підкуймуха, Убийвовк, etc.). Only in English, however, there is observed agglutination of abbreviated parts with root nouns like *A-bomb, H-bag (handbag), Xmas, X-ray,* etc.

Inflexional morphemes in the contrasted languages are also mostly agglutinated to the root or to the stem like other affixal morphemes. Cf. in English nouns: *arms, armies, children;* in adjectives: *longer, longest;* in pronouns: *hers, mine;* in numerals: *fifth, second, first;* in verbs: *does., puts, crept, working;* in participles: *reading, listening, known, taken.* Similarly in Ukrainian: *брати/косарі дерева, дівчата; зелений (зелена, зелене, зелені), батьків, батьковим; п'ята (п'ятий, п'яте, п'яті), п'ятого; ваша (вашій, ваше, ваші), вашого; маю, матиму, матимемо; шитий (шита, шите, шиті), шитого...* Sometimes, as has already been shown, a word may consist of a regular chain of preposed and post-posed affixal (including inflexional) morphemes (cf. redistributions, *недовимолочування).*

Apart from outer morphemes that are agglutinated, i.e. mechanically added to the root or stem, both languages have internal interchanges or alterations. The latter are regular correlations which may involve, as has been shown above, vowel alterations, eg: *bring - brought, know -knew, take - took, shake - shook; рости - ріс; нести - ношу -ніс; вести - відвів - водив; гребти - гріб.*

Exclusively Ukrainian are the sound alterations which appear as a result of declension. Cf. *ти-тебе-тобі-тобою; ви-вас-вам-вами, etc; Львів~у Львові, ніч-ночі, річ-речі,* etc.

Suppletivity. As a means of grammatical expression suppletivity is observed in words, word-forms and morphemes of all Indo-European languages [20,*170]*. At the lexical level it helps express, both in English and Ukrainian, sex distinctions, eg: *boy -- girl, bull - cow, man - woman, cock — hen, хлопець — дівчина, чоловік — жі-нка, півень — курка,* etc. Of suppletive nature are most of nouns forming the LSG denoting kinship. Cf. *father - mother, brother - sister, son - daughter, aunt -uncle; батько - мати, брат - сестра, син - дочка, дядько -тітка, зять - невістка, дід - баба,* etc.

In the system of lexico-grammatical classes of words suppletivity can express in English and Ukrainian different categorial meanings of notionals at the lexical level as in the pairs of verbs *cany — bring, say — tell, take - give; брати - взяти, ловити ~ піймати.* Suppletive forms of a verb paradigm can be used in English and Ukrainian to express some morphological categories. The most striking in this respect is the verb "to be" which has more forms to express different categorial meanings in English than in Ukrainian. Thus, in English "am, is, are — was, were" which are respectively the corresponding forms for tense (the Present and Past Indefinite), for number (singular or plural) and for person am. <u>was</u> for the first person singular, is/was for the third person singular and <u>are/were</u> for plural forms respectively.

The Ukrainian verb "бути" possesses only one suppletive form in present tense — "є", which is used for all persons in singular and plural (cf. я є, ти є, ми є, всі є, кожен є). But: Я був, ти була, ви буди, etc.

As to the suppletive forms of other notionals, they are of form-building, i. e. of categorial nature expressing in the contrasted languages degrees of comparison in some qualitative adjectives and adverbs. Cf. *good — better — best, bad — worse — worst* and *little — less — least. In* Ukrainian: *добрий — кращий — найкращий, доб-рий - ліпший -найліпший, поганий — гірший — найгірший.* In Ukrainian two more adjectives have suppletive forms in the comparative and suppletive degrees: *гарний — кращий — найкращий; вели-кий — більший — найбільший.*

Common in English and Ukrainian are also almost all qualitative adverbs with the suppletive forms in the comparative and superlative degrees: *well — better — best; badly — worse — worst; little — less — least; добре — краще — найкраще; погано — гірше — найгірше; зле — гірше — найгірше; гарно — краще — найкраще.*

Suppletivity of pronouns finds its expression and realisation in English and Ukrainian at different levels: a) at the level of the lexico-grammatical class of words as a whole (pronouns are regular signs of signs, i. e. representation nouns): *Pete, lion, tiger-he, fox, ship-she; дім, лис, хліб-він; життя, поле-воно; люди-вони;* b) at the level of paradigmatic word forms: *I — me, he — him, she — her, we — us; я — мене, воно — його, він — його, ми — нас, вони — їх,* etc. c) at the level of different case forms of pronouns (cf. the objective and possessive case forms: *me, him, her, us, them; his, hers, ours, yours).* These forms are more numerous in Ukrainian where all pronouns are declinable: *я — мене, мені, мною; він — його, йому, ним, на ньому, вона — її -нею; ми — нам — нами; що — чого — чому — чим, ніщо — нічого — нічим,* etc.

Some common systemic relations can be observed in the suppletive forms of the possessive pronouns in the contrasted languages as well. In Ukrainian the pronouns' paradigm is much richer, since there exist separate forms to express different numbers and genders. Cf. *я, мене, мій, моя, моє, мої; вона, нею, її, воно, його, ним; ми, наш, наша, нашої, нашій; вони, їхній, їхня, їхнє, їхнього,* etc. In English, however, there exist possessive absolute suppletive forms of pronouns, which are absolutely unknown in Ukrainian *(mine, hers, yours, ours, theirs).* Ukrainian, on the other hand, has fully and partly and suppletive forms of some interrogative and indefinite pronouns, which are not available in English *хто — кого, кому, килі; що — чого, чому, чим; хтось — когось, комусь, кимсь.* They also retain their suppletive forms in compound pronouns used in different case forms: *хто-небудь — кого-небудь, кому-небудь, ким-небудь; що-небудь, чого-небудь, чому-небудь, чим-небудь.* Least represented at the word form/morphological level in both languages are suppletive forms of numerals, there being only two ordinal numerals of the kind in English *(one — the first, two — the second)* and only one in Ukrainian *(один — перший),* whereas all simple

191

numerals (digits) are suppletive in both languages. Cf. *one — two, three — four, five — six, seven — eight, nine — ten.* Similarly in Ukrainian: *один — два, три — чотири, п'ять — шість, сім — вісім,* etc.

Typology of the Parts of Speech
in the Contrasted Languages

The identification of the parts of speech in the contrasted languages is not always an easy matter though the main subdivision of words into notionals and functionals seems to be indisputable. The ambiguity of form and meaning of many English notional words, however, brought some grammarians to the assumption that there exist no proper grounds and justification for singling out some notional parts of speech in present-day English. C. Fries [41, *94 — 100],* for example, suggested a purely functional approach to the classification of English words. He singled out class 1 words (those performing the function of the subject), class 2 words (those performing the function of the predicate), class 3. words (adjectivals), i. e. attributives, and class 4 are were in Fries' classification adverbial function words or word-groups. C. Fries tried to avoid even mentioning the usual term of "parts of speech". The term is also avoided by this grammarian in his classification of "function words", which are allotted to 15 different groups and include also some pronouns, adverbs and verbs.

A typologically more relevant classification has been suggested for English notionals by C. T. Hockett who distinguishes in English "parts of speech" and "classes of words". Among the notionals three pure "classes of words" (or regular parts of speech) are distinguished: "class N words", "class V words" and "class A words". [43, *226 — 227]* These "classes" are mainly singled out with regard to the morphological (or rather paradigmatic) properties of these notionals which, having the structure of mere roots or stems, can "show more than one pattern of usage", as C. T. Hockett puts it. In other words, they may follow either the noun or the verb and an adjective pattern. Hence, the grammarian singled out apart from the N, A, V classes of words some double and triple word

192

stem classes. These are, for example, the NA class, represented by many words, such as *American, human, innocent, private, savage, sweet,* which may function both as nouns and adjectives (cf. *American scientists, an American).* The NV class are words which can respectively have the meaning and perform the function of the noun and verb (cf. *a book, to book smth.).* The AV class represents words which can show the adjective and the verb pattern (cf. *clean hands, to clean the room).* The NAV class represents words which can follow the noun, the adjective and the verb pattern respectively (cf. *the fat of meat, fat meat, to fat (up) fowls).* Thus, "classes of words" clearly reflect the amorphous grammatical nature of many English nouns, verbs, adjectives and sometimes adverbs which in the course of their historical development have been reduced, as a rale, to regular roots or stems. As a result, their true lexico-grammatical nature, i. e. their proper lexical meaning, and consequently their formal and functional characteristics can not be discriminated when taken out of a word-group or sentence. The word "export", for example, may be noun or verb (when indicated by stress or determined by the particle "to"). "Negro" may also be noun *(a Negro)* or adjective *(Negro and white schools);* "blue" may be noun *(the blue of the sky),* adjective *(the blue sky),* or verb *(to blue smth.).*

In Ukrainian, on the other hand, the lexical meaning and "formal" (morphological) characteristics of such notional words as *експорт, негр, синь, синій, синіти, синіючий, синіючи,* etc. are always explicitly displayed already at language level, i.e. when taken separately, out of context (as in dictionaries). Therefore, many notionals in English, unlike their lexico-grammatical equivalents in Ukrainian, are variable, i. e. they may change their nature depending on the contextual environment and their functional significance which they acquire in a syntaxeme.

The variability of some English notionals, which can often shift from one part of speech to another without any morphological changes in their form/structure is certainly the main typological (allomorphic) difference pertaining to the nature of some notional words as compared to the corresponding classes of words in Ukrainian. It becomes especially evident when dealing with the conglomerates like NV, AN, ND, NVA and the like, which are in reality no regular parts of speech but one-lexeme units

able to realise different functional meanings depending on their functionally relevant place occupied in a syntaxeme (word-group or sentence).

Nevertheless, the existence of the kind of morphologically indistinct notionals in present-day English does not deprive the language of the regular system of notional parts of speech in general and those of nouns, verbs, and adjectives in particular.

These same parts of speech, though considered to be "words in their dictionary form", functioning "as constituents of phrases", are also identified in English by R. Quirk, S. Greenbaum, G. Leech and J. Svartvik, [54,*25 — 27*] Along with the four notionals, these grammarians also point out "a set of parts of speech", having a "closed system" in English. The "set" includes "article, demonstrative (that, this) pronouns, preposition, conjunction and interjection." [Ibid.]

There is no doubt whatsoever concerning the status and the set to which, for example, different proper nouns like *Ann, Peter, Sam,* etc. should be allotted. Neither can there be any doubt in the substantival nature of words denoting specific national notions *(Miss, sir, hopak)* or internationalisms *(actress, emperor, computer, phoneme)* and many regular class nouns *(boy, girl, tree)*. Neither can there be any denying the fact that words like *"do, hear, listen, read, write"*, etc. can be allotted at first sight by every English language speaker to verbs, since they express action, whereas words like *"happy, new, older/younger"* are recognised as qualifiers of nouns, i. e. adjectives, and words like *"slowly, quickly, unanimously"* will be unerringly taken for qualifiers of actions, i. e. adverbs. Easily enough, already at language level, are identified pronouns *(he, she, we, they, who),* numerals *(ten, the first, the tenth),* conjunctions *(and, or, if, because)* and many other words having the same lexico-grammatical nature in English, Ukrainian, and in many other languages.

Consequently, apart from the semantically and morphologically indistinct conglomerates / "word classes"/ like AN, NVA,VN, etc. having no definite differentiation at language level, there also exist in English a bulk of words whose lexico-grammatical nature as a part of speech is quite evident and indisputable. These words clearly disclose their lexico-grammatical identity already at language level (when taken separately, i.e. when singled out as in dictionary).

194

There is much common ground for a typological contrasting of the functional parts of speech as well, which in English and Ukrainian have often their lexico-grammatical nature quite explicit already at language level. This is observed, for example, in case of conjunctions *(and, but, or, if, either - or, neither - nor,* etc.), prepositions *(at, in, on, under),* interjections *(ah, oh, alas, humph),* and some particles (not, *to).* Most of these functionals, except for the articles, have absolute semantic and functional equivalents in Ukrainian. For example: *and - і, but - але, проте, or чи, if-якщо/якби, either-or, чи-чи, in - в/у, on - на, under - під, ah/oh-ах/ох, not-ні/не,* etc. As a result, these and a number of other functionals in English and Ukrainian are typologically relevant, i. e. isomorphic, in other words common.

It must be pointed out, however, that some parts of speech both among the notionals and among the semi-notionals/functionals are still disputable in the contrasted languages. Far from unanimously recognised as a separate part of speech by most Western and some Ukrainian and Russian linguists (A. Hryshchenko and co-authors, L.S. Barkhudarov, M.Y. Blokh) is, for example, the stative *(alike, asleep),* which is considered by these grammarians to be a "predicative adjective". Still other Western grammarians are not quite sure about the numerals which they are inclined to identify as nouns (cardinals) or as relative adjectives (ordinals). Among these grammarians are also R. Quirk, S. Greenbaum, G. Leech and J. Svartvik. Up to now there is no unanimity yet among some grammarians concerning the status of the modal words ("perhaps, sure, certainly," etc.), or particles and even articles, which are not always recognised in English as a separate functional part of speech. [16, 49] This idea might have come to life because of the common in both languages phenomenon of "migration" of some parts of speech from one to another. For example: *a just man (adj.), he has just come (adv.), just a moment, please (particle).* Similarly in Ukrainian: хто *там?* (adv.), де *там?* (particle); *а там* ще люди (conjunctive element). Надворі *холодно* (adv.); мені *холодно* (stative), etc.

On the ground of identical or similar semantic, morphological/formal and syntactic/functional properties pertaining to common lexico-grammatical classes of words, the number of notional parts of speech in English and Ukrainian may be considered (from the typological point of

view) all in all the same - seven. Namely: noun, adjective, pronoun, numeral, verb, adverb, stative - іменник, прикметник, займенник, числівник, дієслово, прислівник, слова категорії стану.

As to the functionals (semi-notional words, as they are still sometimes called) their number in the contrasted languages is not identical, because present-day English has the article which is missing in Ukrainian. The rest of functionals are all common: conjunctions, prepositions, modal words and modal expressions, particles, exclamations, articles (in English), сполучники, прийменники, модальні слова та вирази, частки, вигуки.

Typological Features of the Noun
as a Part of Speech

The noun as a part of speech is characterised in English and Ukrainian by a common lexico-grammatical nature of substantivity or "thingness". This meaning (thingness) finds its realisation not only in concrete nouns *(book, boy, house, tree, fish, meat,* etc.) but also in abstract nouns *(love, hatefulness, business, information, etc.).* Hence, typologically isomorphic are also the main paradigmatic classes of nouns, which are two: 1) common nouns and 2) proper names.

Each of these two main classes of nouns is sub-categorised in English and Ukrainian into several minor groups which can be found below (Table 10,11).

Common Nouns split in the contrasted languages into the following subclasses:

Table 10

Concrete nouns	Abstract nouns	Collective nouns	Names of materials	Class nouns
arrow, cap, carp, doll, tree, house, book; стріла, дерево, кашкет, короп, лялька, дім, хата.	fear, hatred, knowledge, news; страх, ненависть, знання, вість, сум, радість.	cattle, crew, family, militia, government, poultry; худоба, екіпаж, сім'я, міліція, гроші.	air, flour, iron, salt, snow; повітря, цукор, борошно, залізо, сіль, сніг, пісок.	bird, desk, book, cat, flower, glove, kite; птах, квітка, книж-змій, кіт.

196

Proper names in their turn split in English and Ukrainian into some common subclasses as well. The main of them are as follows:

Table 11

The Main Classes of Proper Names

Names/Nicknames of people(s), nationals	Family names	Geographical names	Names of companies, newspapers, journals, etc.
Ann, Yankeys, English, Michael, the Dutch, Nelly, Ukrainians, Oscar — англійці, Ганна, Данило, Михайло, Леся, українці, Надія, Ярослав Мудрий	Adams, Byron, McDonald, Newton, Smith, Shakespeare - Аврамчук, Лукаш, Сміт, Довженко, Винник, Кизима, Шумило, Петлюра, Коновалець, Мельник, Каденюк.	Alaska, Chicago, Leeds, Ottawa, the Black Sea, the North Sea, the Buh, Аляска, Вінниця, Київ, Моринці, Чорне море, Північне море, Буг.	Ford, Standard Oil, Rolls-Royce, Volkswagen, The Daily Telegraph — "Світоч", фірма "Світанок", "Форд", "Прогрес", "Всесвіт", "Дзвін", "Дніпро".

Isomorphism is equally observed in the existence of some other grammatically and typologically relevant groups of nouns in English and Ukrainian. Among these are, first of all, life nouns *(boy, girl, cat, cock, goat, wolf — хлопець, дівчина, кіт, півень, цап, вовк);* inanimate nouns *(atom, bell, door, stone — атом, дзвін, двері, шлях);* count nouns *(pen, star, tree, wall — ручка, зірка, дерево, стіна),* and noncount nouns (air, honesty, slavery — *повітря, чесність, рабство), etc.* There is some allomorphism, however, in the realisation of the meaning (and category) of number and quantity in some groups of nouns in the contrasted languages.

Among these are some collective nouns, which may be used in English both in singular and in plural (when the constituent members of these collective nouns are meant). Cf: *My family is small — My family are early risers. The crew has prepared the aircraft for the take off — The crew are all young.* Hence, in plural these collective nouns become nouns of multitude, as *militia, police, cattle,* having always, however, a singular meaning in Ukrainian (cf. *вся родина зійшлася, поліція/міліція слідкує за порядком,* etc.).

The most characteristic divergent feature of English nouns as com-

pared with the Ukrainian ones is their usually indistinct lexico-grammatical nature at language level. As a result, determiners (usually the definite or the indefinite article or demonstrative pronouns) are used to identify these nouns: *the* bear, *the* round of talks, *that* round of talks. Besides, English nouns are often determined by the -'s/-s- element (cf. *today's weather, London's population,* etc.).

From the morphological side, the noun is characterised in the contrasted languages by the existence of a system of suffixes and prefixes performing, as a rule, isomorphic functions in both contrasted languages. These suffixes fall into several common in English and Ukrainian subgroups. Among them are traditionally distinguished productive and unproductive suffixes, native and borrowed (or international) suffixes, as well as different semantic groups of suffixes which, when added to various roots or stems, may form agent nouns. These common classes in the contrasted languages are as follows:

English Agent Nouns Suffixes	Ukrainian Agent Nouns Suffixes
-ant: servant, irritant; **-ent**: dependent, solvent, student **-ar**: beggar, scholar; **-er**: weaver, teacher, interpreter, farmer; **-ier**: cashier; -or: sailor, translator, tailor.	-ник: завойовник, обвідник; -яч-ач: глядач, перекладач, копач, наймач; -ець: їздець, кравець, співець; -тель: вихователь, учитель; -щик/ -чик: гонщик, пайщик, датчик.

Apart from these there are some more productive and unproductive agent suffixes in both languages. Cf. in English **-yer:** *lawyer;* -eer: *auctioneer, profiteer;* **-ard/-art:** *sluggard, braggart;* -ster: *rhymester, youngster;* in Ukrainians **-тай/-тяй:** *глитай, шахрай, гультяй;* **-аль:** *коваль, стригаль,* **-ень:** *в'язень, лежень, учень;* **-ух:** *пастух, питух;* **-ар/-яр:** *лікар, голяр;* -ак/-а: *забіяка, рубака* (augmentative); -ун: *бігун, свистун;* **-ак/-як:** *жебрак, пияк,* etc.

Completely missing in English but available in Ukrainian are augmentative suffixes, eg: **-ил-**: *вітрило, барило;* **-ищ-**: *вовчище, дубище, вітрище;* **-ук-/-юк-**: *каменюка, зміюка;* **-уг-/-юг-**:

198

дідуга, злодюга; **-ур-/-юр-:** *ціпура, басюра;* **-ан, -ань:** *дідуган, го-лювань, здоровань;* -ер- *бабера;* -яр- *мисяра, носяра;-яг-/ -як-: чо-лов'яга, гуляка, Мусіяка,* and some others.

Diminutive suffixes of nouns, as was already mentioned, are 53 in Ukrainian and only 14 or 16 in English nouns. Cf. -y **(-ie,** -ye), **-ling (-ing, -ock, -let, -et, -ette, -ee, -een, -erel/-rel, -kin, -ule, -cole, -el/-le,** some four of these being productive as in the nouns *daddy, grannie; booklet,* kitchenette, *launderette,* gooseling, *kingling; ladykin, mouskin,* etc. Diminutive nouns are much more numerous in Ukrainian: **-оньк-:** *голівонька, дівонька, кізонька;* **-очок:** *горбочок,* садо-чок; -унь: братунь, *Лідунь* (diminutive from Ліда); -к-: *лапка, ніж-ка;* **-очк-:** *Ліночка, різочка;* **-еньк:** *ненька, рученька,* etc.

Isomorphic in both languages are also other groups of suffixes, the main of which being as follows:

1. International suffixes which also form nouns denoting doc-trine, action, act or fact of doing, manner of action, state, condition, etc. For example: *-ism: feudalism, materialism, realism, hypnotism, barbarism, despotism, colloquialism;* in Ukrainian: **-ізм/изм:** *дарві-нізм, колоквіалізм, реалізм, гіпнотизм, деспотизм, ідіотизм, вар-варизм.*

This group of affixes presents a typologically common subclass not only in English and Ukrainian but in other European languages as well, with the most frequently occurring: -ade: *cavalcade, blocade;* -age: *fuselage, tonnage;* -ist: *utopist, therapeutist;* **-or:** *rector, protec-tor;* **-tion:** *protection, selection;* -ssion: *emission, session;* -ate: *diplo-mate, protectorate;* -ess/-ness: *actress, baroness;* -ics: *athletics; -y: agony, irony.* All these suffixes have naturally their equivalents in Ukrainian: -ізм-, -іст/-ист: *активіст, шовініст, артист;* -ор: *ав-тор, оратор;* **-ці-я/-сі-я, -ція:** *асиміляція, сесія, протекція;* **-ад-а:** *блокада, бравада;* **-аж:** *тоннаж;* **-ик-а:** *атлетика;* -к-,-ес/-ис-а: *поетка, поетеса, директриса; -і-я: економія, іронія.*

2) Suffixes forming nouns designating abstract notions of state, act, art, skill, quality, condition, etc. These suffixes in both languages are mostly **national by nature.** Cf. **-dom:** *freedom, serfdom;* **-hood:** *brotherhood, falsehood,* -ess; *easiness, loneliness;* -ing: *being,*

199

meaning: **-ion, -sion:** *creation, tension,* etc. Or in Ukrainian: **-ність:** *вільність, рівність;* **-ство:** *братство, рабство;* **-ивість:** *вродливість, мінливість;* **-ість:** *легкість, самотність;* **-тт-я:** *буття, вороття;* **-нн-я:** *творіння, напруження;* **-енн-я:** *вдоволення, захоплення, прикріплення,* etc.

An exception makes one suffix which is pertained only to English and denoting the recipient of action, namely the suffix **-ee** *(evacuee, examinee, employee, refugee).*

Prefixal morphemes in both languages have many typological features in common as well. Thus, they may be *national, foreign* or *international by* origin. Genuinely national Germanic prefixes in English are: **mis-** *(misunderstanding),* out- *(outcome),* **with-** *(withdrawal),* **over-** *(overflow),* **in-** *(insight),* **un-** *(untruth),* **under-** *(undergo),* and some others. In Ukrainian genuinely Slavonic by origin are the following prefixes: **па-** *(пасинок),* **пра-** *(прадід),* без- *(безмежжя),* **від-** *(віддаль),* **за-** *(завулок),* **пере-** *(перенапруга),* **при-** *(прибудова),* **над-** *(надбудова),* **пра-** *(праліс),* **під-** *(підгрупа),* **спів-** *(співвиконавець),* не- *(небилиця)* and some others.

Foreign by origin (usually international) nouns-and-adjectives-forming prefixes are mostly identical in the contrasted languages. The most common of them are the following: **ante-/anti-:** *antethesis, antibody;* **ex-:** *ex-champion, ex-chairman;* **extra-:** *extraordinariness, extraterritoriality;* **hyper-** *hyperbolism, hypersonic;* **un-, in-, il-, ir-:** *unbalance, unblock, indelicate, illogical, innovation, illiteracy, impressionistic, impossibility, irregularity, irresolute;* **super-, ultra-, vice-**, etc.: *superprofit, superrealism, ultramarine, ultraliberal, viceconsul, vicegerent, vice-governor* etc. These prefixes have the same lingual form in Ukrainian where they are used in almost the same international words: *антитеза, екс-чемпіон, екстравагантність, гіпертрофічний, гіпостиль, інновація, інокуляція, інтервенція, інконгруентний, суперсегментний, сюрреалізм, ультраправий, ультрафіолетовий, віце-королівський, віце-президент,* etc.

English and Ukrainian derivative nouns when in their extended form have the same structure: prefix + root + suffix + inflexion (if any).

Sometimes, as has been pointed out, a derivative noun may consist of more than one suffix and more than one prefix. English and Ukrainian nouns may also be compound (cf. *airbus, headache, waterway)* or composite *(take-off, go-between, sister-in-law, plant мати-й-мачуха, хліб-сіль).* Some Ukrainian compound nouns have a similar structure: root/stem + inflexion: *лісостепом, льонтрести, Засядьвовк, Неїжмак, Панібудьласка — Засядьвовка, Панібудьласків, Неїжмака/Неїжмакові/Неїжмакам, Печиборщ — Печиборща, Печиборщеві, Печиборщам* and naturally Клички - Кличкам, etc.

Morphological Categories of the Noun

The only morphological category of the noun which is almost always marked in present-day English is that of number. Like in Ukrainian, it is mostly realised synthetically, i.e. through zero and marked inflexions respectively. Eg: *child — children, ox — oxen,* and correspondingly *baths, cargos, jubilees, bushes, watches, countries, heroes/ vetoes,* etc. An irregularity can be observed in the position of the English inflexion -s in various compounds, eg: *take-off = take-offs, sit-in = sit-ins, forget-me-not = forget-me-nots, merry-go-round = merry-go-rounds, Commander-in-chief = Commanders-in chief; passer-by = passers-by.*

Completely allomorphic, i.e. pertained only to the English language is the formation of plural number by way of sound interchange (ablaut) as in the following seven English nouns*: foot — feet, tooth — teeth, goose — geese; man — men, woman — women; louse — lice, mouse — mice.*

A few simple life nouns have in English one and the same form for singular and plural (cf. *grouse, sheep, deer, swine, plaice).* Usually, these nouns also have the zero marked plural form: *carp, pike, trout, deer, salmon.* Apart from the genuinely English there are some borrowed noun inflexions. These are Latin: -a- -ae: *alga — algae, larva — larvae;* -us- -i: *stimulus — stimuli, terminus — termini;* -um- -a: *curriculum — curricula, erratum — errata,* etc. Several Greek bor-

rowings preserve their singular and plural inflexions as well: -is ----- es *(analysis — analyses, basis — bases, ellipsis — ellipses)* and -on---- a *(criterion — criteria, phenomenon — phenomena),* though some nouns often take regular English plural forms (cf. *memorandums, ganglions, solos, tempos, metropolises,* etc.). Unlike English, Ukrainian number inflexions are partly predetermined by the declension groups to which the nouns are allotted, and partly by the gender of nouns and final consonant or vowel, which can respectively be *hard, soft* or *mixed* (sibilant). Moreover, many Ukrainian nouns have both number oppositions marked. Thus, masculine, neuter and feminine gender nouns of the first and second declensions have the following endings (Table 12):

Table 12

Declension	Inflexion	Hard consonant group	Inflexion	Soft consonant group	Inflexion	Mixed / sibilant consonant group
I	а-и	Ганна - Ганни, сирота - сироти хата - хати	я - і	буря - бурі вишня - вишні сім'я - сім'ї	а-і	груша - груші межа - межі площа — площі
II	?-і ?-і ?-а ?-й	ятір - ятері комар - комарі крило — крила весло — весла батько - батьки	?-і ? — ї е-я е- я	день - дні край - краї поле - поля море - моря Місце - місця	е-а е-і 7-і ?-і ?-і	селище - селища плече - плечі кущ - кущі хрущ - хрущі ткач - ткачі

The third and fourth declensions nouns in Ukrainian may also have hard, soft and sibilant (шиплячі) final consonants. Their singular and plural number oppositions are as follows: in the III declension: й — і: *мати — матері,* 0 — *і: вість — вісті, тінь — тіні, піч — печі, матір — матері.* In the IV declension: а — /т/а: *дівча — дівчата, курча — курчата, лоша — лошата,* **я** — **л/н/т+я:** *ім'я — імена,*

202

маля — малята, теля — телята, ягня — ягнята.

Present-day Ukrainian has no such variety of inflexions which are all of consonantal nature as the English language has (cf. -s/-es, **-ren/-en).** The major allomorphic feature in the system of noun categories is the existence in Ukrainian (as in Russian and Byelorussian) of dual number (двоїна), which is often mixed up with the plural or replaced by it by many Ukrainians. The nouns express dual number only in connection with the numeral adjuncts *two, three and four.* This number is mostly indicated by stress which differs, as a rule, from that of the plural form, eg:

Singular — Plural — Dual	Singular — Plural — Dual
берег - береги - два (три, чотири) бе'реги; дуб — дуби but два (три, чотири) 'дуби; слово — слова but два (три, чотири) слова; село - села (дві, три, чотири) сел'і, etc.	верба - в'ерби but дві (три, чотири) верб'и; душа — 'душі but дві (три, чотири) душі'; квітка — квітки but дві (три, чотири) кв'ітки; шапка - шапки, дві (три, чотири) шапки, etc.

Note. In some nouns the stress in plural and dual number forms may coincide, eg: *сповідь — сповіді — дві/три сповіді; борець - борц'і, два/три, чотири борц'і; танець — танці; два/три, чотири танці/ ранці; чобіт - 'чоботи, два/три, чотири 'чоботи,* etc. Several nouns retain their dual number form in the instrumental case (cf. *очима, плечима, грошима, дверима, ушима/ вухами).* In many regions of Ukraine other dual forms of nouns may be observed too, eg: *дві руці; дві/три нозі; три, чотири кілі; три/чотири слові; дві/три, чотири літі, (дівка/парубок на дві/три селі),* etc. [5, *126]*

Typologically isomorphic, on the other hand, is the existence in English and Ukrainian of the classes of singularia and pluralia tantum nouns mostly expressing quantity. The singularia tantum include some semantic groups of mainly common nouns which rarely denote singular notions like 1) parts of the world: *the North, the South, the East, the West, the North-West the North-East (північ, південь, захід, схід, північний захід),* etc. The great majority of singularia tantum nouns are names of

materials: *iron, copper, snow, milk, bread; срібло, золото, сніг, хліб, сіль, молоко,* etc. These and other nouns in both contrasted languages denote plurality of substances and things, whereas abstract notions have a singular expression of number. Nouns of this semantic class are especially amply represented in Ukrainian where there may be singled out the following subclasses of them: a) derivatives formed with the help of the suffixes **-ств-о (-цтв-о):** воїнство, селянство, студентство, козацтво; b) nouns formed with the help of suffixes **-я(j)+(а):** листя, колоддя, гілля, пруття, колосся, волосся, вороняччя, струччя; c) nouns formed with the help of the suffix **-н-я**: комарня, мурашня, пташня, офіцерня; d) nouns formed with the help of the suffix -в-а: братва, дітва, грошва, мишва, мурашва; e) nouns formed with the help of the suffix **-от-а:** жінота, парубота, біднота, дрібнота, etc.; f) nouns formed with the help of the suffixes **-инн-я (-овинн-я):** картоплиння, гарбузиння, кукурудзиння, бобовиння; g) nouns formed with the help of the suffixes **-ин-а (-овин-а):** дичина, садовина, ярина, h) nouns formed with the help of the suffixes **-ник-няк:** сливник, липняк, осичник, вишняк, підосичник, etc.

Apart from these there are some foreign nouns with the suffixes -ур-а (професура, адвокатура, мускулатура, etc.); nouns with the suffix **ик-а (-ік-а, -атик-а):** символіка, проблематика, синоніміка. This group also includes nouns with the suffixes **-ет, -ат:** генералітет, імунітет, секретаріат, плагіат and singularia tantum nouns with the suffix **-іан-а**: Шевченкіана, Шекспіріана and some others.

It should be emphasised that far from all Ukrainian singularia tantum nouns have corresponding equivalents within the same semantic groups in English and respectively in Ukrainian. This can partly be seen in the equivalents representation Table 13 below.

Table 13

Isomorphic Semantic Groups of Singularia Tantum Nouns

ENGLISH	UKRAINIAN
1. Nouns denoting parts of the world: the North, the South, the East, the West, the North-West, the North-East, the South-East, the South-West.	1. Північ, південь, захід, схід, північний схід, північний захід, південний схід, південний захід.

ENGLISH	UKRAINIAN
2. *Names of materials:* gold, silver, iron, copper, milk, butter, snow, dirt, sand, water, hay, straw, bread, coffee, sugar, wood, etc.	2. Золото, срібло, залізо, алюміній, мідь, молоко, масло, бруд, сніг, пісок, вода, хліб, деревина, сіно, солома, цукор, etc.
3. *Collective nouns:* brushwood, foliage, leafage, furniture, shrubbery, rubbish, peasantry, hair, professorate, womankind, etc.	3. Білизна, збрід, крам, віниччя, гарбузиння, капустиння, паліччя, збіжжя, птаство, волосся, професура, селянство, жіноцтво, etc.
4. *Abstract notions as:* courage, knowledge, advice, recognition, friendship, kindness, news, information, business, love, peace, patriotism, weather, etc.	4. Відвага, знання, буття, кохання, любов, мир, патріотизм, погода, прогрес, визнання, гамір, сумління, буття, виховання, ненависть, каяття, etc.

Therefore the main classes of singularia tantum nouns are of isomorphic nature, though their representation is not always equal in the contrasted languages. Thus, there exists no identity between the Ukrainian collective nouns ярина (spring crops), озимина (winter crops), зілля (herbs), бадилля (potato leaves) which are pluralia tantum in English. Neither are there corresponding singularia tantum equivalents in English to the Ukrainian nouns formed with the help of the suffixes -н-я (офіцерня, комарня), **-ник, -няк** (сливник, вишняк) and -в-а (братва, дітва) whose corresponding equivalents in English are nouns in plural (officers, mice, kids/ children) or in singular - cherry/plum trees orchard, lime-trees grove, etc.

No complete coincidence can be observed in the semantic classes of the pluralia tantum nouns in English and Ukrainian where common lexico-semantic classes are not completely the same either. Completely coincide only nouns belonging to the so-called summation plurals (scissors, tongs, skates, shorts, trousers: *ножиці, обценьки, терези, шорти, штани, окуляри,* etc. Besides, common are also the pluralia tantum nouns belonging to the semantic group of geographic names: *Athens, the Netherlands, the Bahamas, the Andes; Афіни/Атени, Нідерланди, Карпати, Анди, Бровари, Лубни, Суми,* etc. 3) Nouns denoting remnants are only partly common too. They are: *scraps, leavings, remains* (of food), *siftings, sweepings; висівки, недопитки, перебірки, одвійки, помиї, вишкрібки,недоїдки,* etc.

Not always coinciding, however, are nouns denoting in English and Ukrainian some abstract notions *(contents, goings-on, means, manners, savings; злидні, манери, надра, заощадження)* and names of some games which are not always the same in the contrasted languages either, eg: *cards, billiards, drafts, darts, skittles (карти, шахи, шашки, кеш).* Among these are the nouns *більярд* and *барак* which belong to common class nouns in Ukrainian. Consequently, a number of nouns may have plural meaning in English and singular meaning in Ukrainian or vice versa as: *barracks, goods, customs, works, suds, police/ militia, arms, gymnastics, etc.,* their Ukrainian equivalents being *казарма, товар/майно/добро, мито, поліція/міліція, зброя, фізкультура,* etc. Ukrainian plurals *вершки, дріжджі, дрова, гроші,* on the other hand, have singularia tantum equivalents in English *(cream, yeast, firewood, money,* etc.).

Hence, the common/fully or partly corresponding table of these semantic classes of nouns has the following counteropposed representation:

Table 14

Isomorphic Semantic Groups of Pluralia Tantum Nouns

ENGLISH	UKRAINIAN
1. *Summations nouns:* trousers, shorts, tongs, scissors, scales, spectacles, eyeglasses, opera-glasses, leggings, strachies, pincers, etc.	1 . Штани, шорти, обценьки, ножиці, терези, окуляри, сани, ночви, в'язи, баки, граблі, ворота, цимбали, стречі, леггінси, etc.
2. *Names of remnants (залишки):* scraps, slops, sweepings, siftings, leavings, remnants, etc.	2. Покидьки, помиї, висівки, недоїдки, недопитки, зметини, вишкрібки, etc.
3. *Names of some games:* drafts, cards, darts, skittles, billiards, etc.	3. Шахи, шашки, карти, дротики, кеглі, городки, гилки, etc.
4. *Some abstract and concrete notions:* outskirts, tigins, (inverted) commas, goings-on, contents, means (кошти), etc.	4. Будні, злидні, іменини, родини, заручини, хрестини, лапки, посиденьки, витребеньки, жмурки, etc.
5. *Some geographical names* like Athens, the Netherlands, the Alps, the Urals, the Carpathians, the Azores, the Bermudas, the Philippines, etc.	5. Атени, Нідерланди, Альпи, Карпати, Азори, Бермуди, Філіппіни, Бровари, Суми, Лубни, Жуляни, Черкаси, etc.

206

Some semantic classes of pluralia tantum nouns are more numerous in Ukrainian, than in English. Among them are, for example, nouns denoting such actions as *проводи* (seeing-off), *вхідчини* (house-warming) or monetary notions as *фінанси* (finance), *ресурси, кошти* (means); no pluralia tantum equivalents have such Ukrainian notions as *дрова* (firewood), *вершки* (cream), *одвійки, дріжджі* (yeast). Neither has present-day English pluralia tantum equivalents to such notions as *посиденьки, походеньки, вечірниці, витребеньки, побігеньки, (пі)жмурки, пересміхи, хвастощі, пустощі, гульбощі, ласощі, прикрощі, мудрощі, ревнощі, скупощі* and others. Consequently, present-day Ukrainian seems to have a larger number of both the singularia and pluralia tantum nouns in some semantic classes of this part of speech, than the English language has.

The Category of Case and its Realisation in English and Ukrainian

Unlike the category of number, the category of case in present-day English has always been disputable. So was for some time the question of expressing case relations which has also remained for a longer time disputable. Some grammarians found in present-day English two cases (O. Jespersen, V. Yartseva, B. Rohovska, B. Khaimovich), others found in English four cases (G. Curme, M. Deutschbein), and still other grammarians were inclined to see in English five, six and more cases (J. Nesfield, F. Sonnenschein). The Russian grammarian G. N. Vorontsova recognised no cases in English at all, since the -'s sign she treated as a postpositive particle expressing possession. R. Quirk, S. Greenbaum and co-authors speak of common and genitive cases (-'s genitive and of-genitive). As to Ukrainian nouns they may have 6 or 7 marked singular and plural oppositions in the nominative, genitive, dative, accusative, instrumental, locative and vocative case, eg: *хмара, хмари, хмарі, хмару, хмарою,* (на) *хмарі, хмаро* (first decl.), vocative case; or in plural: *степи, степів, степам, степи, степам, степами,* (у) *степах, степи* (second decl., vocative case).

No identity exists in the contrasted languages in the expression of the

category of gender either and many languages make these distinctions different and unequal. Thus, in Ukrainian, Russian, German and other languages there are three grammatical genders — masculine, feminine, and neuter. In Italian, Spanish, French, Danish — two genders (masculine and feminine), in Estonian, Finnish, Japanese and Turkic languages no gender distinctions are made, but in the Bantu language, as E. Sapir points out, there are about 42 genders realised with the help various inflexions.

The morphological category of gender in Ukrainian is identified either through separate inflexions of the adjunct/attribute or through the inflexion of the finite form of the verb that conjugates with a noun. For example:

Masculine gender	Feminine gender	Neuter gender
каштан цвів/ріс ведмідь ходив/спав обід захолов/замерз життя проходило хлопець сміявся/був	яблуня цвіла/росла вода замерзла Відвага перемогла лисиця ходила/бігла дівчина сміялася/була	жито цвіло/росло лоша ходило/бігало жито зійшло сонечко пригрівало дитя сміялося/було

In present-day English no gender distinctions of the kind are possible, as can be seen from the following sentences:

the actor plays the actor played the actor is/has the actor was	the actress plays the actress played the actress is/has seen the actress was seen	the child plays/smiles the child played/smiled, etc. the child is/has seen the child was seen/heard, etc.

The form of the verbal predicate, therefore, does not reflect or in any way testify to the existence of any gender distinction in the three above-given nouns. This is not so in Ukrainian. Cf. *актор грав/був, актриса грала/була, дитя грало/було, дитя грає/буває,* etc.

Absence of the morphological category of gender in English, as could be already noticed, is also easy to be proved by the unchanged attributive adjuncts to nouns which have this category in Ukrainian, eg:

the *great* emperor lived long — *великий* імператор *жив* довго the *great* heroine lived long — *велика* героїня *жила* довго the *great* desire lived long — *велике* бажання *жило* довго The adjective "great" does not reflect any sex or gender distinction of the English head nouns "emperor", "heroine" or "desire" as it is in

Ukrainian ("великий імператор", "велика героїня", "велике бажан-ня"). Unlike English, the categorial meaning of the gender category and the objective/extralingual category of sex are distinctly indicated by the verbal predicate in Ukrainian: "імператор жив", "героїня жи-ла", "бажання жило".

The morphological category of gender and the objective (natural) category of sex may also be indicated in Ukrainian by the following means: a) by a marked inflexion in the nominative case *(книжка, се-ло, яйце, батько, мати, сестра);* b) by the zero inflexion *(дуб, час, ніч, річ, вість);* c) by suffixes only or by the root suffixes + endings *(робітник, вівчар, стрілець, орач, вчительк-а, робітниц-я, по-етес-а, поетик-а);* d) by means of a modifying word: *наше київське метро (кашне, кіно), цей кабальєро, такий великий ґну, гарний поні, ця молода леді/дама, пані,* etc.

The possessive conjoint or possessive absolute pronouns, however, may sometime be used in English to indicate the extralingual category of sex, eg: *the bear and his life, that actress and her voice, his child and its toys, the directrix and her school; the desire of mine/hers, those friends of hers, etc.*

A testimony to there being no grammatical gender in English nouns is the use of appositional pronouns and nouns to indicate the sex of living beings as in *boy-friend - girl-friend, man-servant — maid-servant, woman/female novelist — man/male novelist, jack-ass — jenny-ass, billy-goat — nanny-goat, tom cat — pussy cat, he-bear — she-bear, male elephant — female elephant, (bull elephant - cow elephant), cock-sparrow — hen-sparrow, cock-pheasant — hen-pheasant.* Neither can the English suffixes -ist, -er/-or, -ess, -o, -ine express the morphological gender (but only sex) as in *emperor, wid-ower, actress, goddess, heroine, hobo,* and many other living beings.

All lifeless things in English, unlike Ukrainian and some other lan-guages, are generally associated with the pronoun it (the neuter gen-der). Cf. *The tree and its leaves; the desire and its realisation; the stone and its age; the tulip and its colour; the pond and its inhabi-tants; the carbonic acid and its use,* etc.

In Ukrainian, on the contrary, each noun irrespective of its being a life

or lifeless thing, belongs to a concrete gender. Thus, the *stone* (камінь) like the *wolf or bull* is masculine (he він), the carbonic acid or the star, the river, the cow have feminine gender (річка, зірка, думка, корова). Similarly with many life and lifeless nouns having neuter gender distinctions (cf. життя, сміття, курча, дитя, небо, жито, мито, etc.).

When personified, English life and lifeless nouns may be referred to different (sometimes quite unexpected genders). Thus, the Reed in the Happy Prince by Oscar Wilde became feminine and the Swallow who fell in love with it became (was personified by the author) masculine (he). In spoken English all strong or fearful animals, birds and natural phenomena or celestial objects are usually referred to masculine gender. Thus, the **wolf,** the **dog, the buffelo** like the **tiger, the lion, the elephant** or the **eagle** are referred to masculine gender. Consequently, the **wolf** or the **bear, or death** is always *he.* All weaker, timid or sly animals and birds are referred to the feminine gender. Hence, the **cat,** the **fox** or the **hare,** the **nightingale, or tomtit** are each referred to feminine gender (she). Though not without exceptions. The **daisy,** for example, is he in O. Wilde's fairy tale The Nightingale and the Rose-tree as well as the timid little lizard that is also referred by the author to masculine gender. So is the timid rabbit in American folk-tales (The Rabbit, his Friends and Animals) and the **monkey** like the **parrot** who are usually masculine.

The names of vessels (boat, ship, steamer, cruiser) and vehicles (coach, car, carriage) are usually associated with famine gender. So are the names of hotels and inns. The names of celestial bodies may be feminine, masculine and neuter. The sun which is strong and powerful is, naturally, *he,* whereas the moon, the Paradise and the Earth are associated with the pronoun she (feminine gender). The countries are also mostly of famine gender. Hence, Ukraine, the USA, France, Italy, Russia, India, Pakistan, Uzbekistan, the Argentine or the Philippines, China, etc. are all feminine. Mythical, mythological and various abstract notions are treated accordingly (depending on their corresponding meaning). Consequently, the notions like devil, dickens or genius (pl. genii, злий дух) are referred to masculine gender, but the nymph is naturally she. So are pleasant abstract notions like **love or peace,** whereas fearful and dangerous notions like **war** or **death,** etc. are masculine.

The Category of Definiteness and Indefiniteness

The noun in English and Ukrainian, as in other languages, possesses the semantic category of **definiteness and indefiniteness.** In other words, when a noun (even a proper name) or family/geographical name is taken out of its context to which it belonged, its meaning may not be definitely understood, i.e. identified. Thus, the proper names Mykola, Petro or Anatoliy when used for the first time (eg. *I met Petro/Mykola yesterday evening)* may not be definite enough for the listener or collocutor who may inquire: *which Petro/Mykola?* Your friend/cousin *Petro/Mykola! You mean your co-student Petro/Mykola?* etc. Even when one uses the geographical name like **Beskyd** the real meaning of this proper noun may not be clear to the listener who has not enough preliminary information about the used name. This is because "Beskyd" may be the name of a mountain in the Carpathians as well as a tourist camp or a hotel there. Similarly identified must also be many other nouns in Ukrainian despite its being a predominantly synthetic by structure language. Thus, it may be sometimes far from easy to unanimously identify the real meaning, for example, of such a seemingly transparent for every Ukrainian listener name as Київ. Even in the sentence as *Він мешкав деякий час у Києві* (when used in oral speech) and when the listener does not see this noun written, it may mean the city named Київ or the "Київ" hotel (then it is in inverted commas in Ukrainian). Similarly when one hears the English king's name Charles, one would naturally inquire which king Charles? The first, the third or the fifth? Only when the substantivised numeral is added (Charles the First or Charles the Third, etc.), will the King's name become definite (clearly and finally identified).

The category of definiteness and indenfiniteness may be identified in English and Ukrainian both at language level (when the noun is out of a concrete context) and at speech level, i.e. in oral presentation or in a written microtext. The main means of making the noun definite in English is to use the definite or indefinite (zero) article or any other determining or identifying adjunct. For example: Bristol (zero article)

means the town of Bristol, whereas **the** Bristol is the name of a hotel or an inn, ship, etc. Similarly even with such a proper noun as Украї- на which, when used without the definite article, means the country of Ukraine, but when presented in inverted commas it will mean any- thing: готель "Україна", концертний зал "Україна" or an agricul- tural enterprise/joint venture "Україна". The definite article may also determine, i.e. make definite some other groups (or single) nouns as, for example, those denoting generic nouns or unique objects on the globe, or even in the universe as in the following sentences: *The lion* is a wild animal. *The sun* is a bright celestial body. *The Bible* is a holy book of all Christians.

The category of definiteness may be also indicated by syntactic, i.e. lexico-syntactic means. Namely, by an appositive noun or a sub- stantivised numeral, an adjective or any other adjunct: Cf.: *the Tory* government, King *Henry V,* the first Summit meeting, уряд торі, ко- роль *Генріх П'ятий,* готель "Колос", дівчина-парашутистка, *пер- ша зустріч у верхах, четвертий універсал* уряду УНР, etc. Hence, the categories of definiteness and indefiniteness may be expressed both by preposed and postposed identifiers simultaneously (as in the last example *четвертий > універсал < уряду УНР).* Or such an ex- ample: the noun *congress* or its Ukrainian variant *з'їзд* when used out of a context remains absolutely non-related to any concretely identi- fied event. Even when preceded by a numeral *(the first* or the *second* congress) it remains far from semantically identified. Only when ex- plicated by one more identifier - *the first* congress of ecologists, the noun congress becomes more or less exhaustively identified. Similarly in Ukrainian where the noun *з'їзд* becomes definite (or indefinite) when it is explicitly identified: *з'їзд екологів, з'їзд* екологів України, *черговий/ позачерговий* з'їзд екологів України, etc.

The category of indefiniteness apart from being indicated in Eng- lish by the indefinite article *a/an,* may also be made explicit by the indefinite pronouns *any, some,* etc., and by the numeral *one* as well as by the indefinite *article plus an adjectival, participial* or any other adjunct. Eg: There is *some boy* wants to see you. (King) "Was there a

212

Mr Palgrave?" (H.E. Bates) — "there's *a marvellously* good *restaurant called L'Ocean* about six or seven miles down the coast". (Ibid.) Cf. in Ukrainian: Там *ніякого містера Палгрейва* не було?

The expression of indefiniteness in Ukrainian is likewise realised with the help of the indefinite pronouns *якийсь (якась, якесь),* through the indefinite numeral *один (одна, одне)* or via the indefinite pronouns *якийсь/ якась, якесь* plus the adjuncts expressing the characteristic features of the person or object. Eg: *Якийсь* Петренко там чекає на вас. Був собі *один чоловік* і мав він два сини. Навіть *один страшний* день війни запам'ятався кожному навіки.

Unlike English where indefiniteness is expressed via the corresponding markers, in Ukrainian it may sometimes be expressed also through grammatical shifting of the indefinite noun into the final position of the sentence. For example:

The door opened and *the teacher* entered the classroom	Двері відчинилися і *вчитель* увійшов до класу.

To express indefiniteness, the noun will be shifted to the final position:

The door opened and a *teacher* entered the classroom.	Двері відчинилися і до класу ввійшов *учитель*.

Therefore, the category of definitess and indefiniteness is equally pertained to both contrasted languages.

Typology of the Adjective

The adjective as a part of speech is characterised in English and Ukrainian by its common implicit lexico-grammatical nature and common functions in the sentence. It expresses the quality of things or substances *(a nice* flower, *urgent* measures) and can serve as a predicative complement after the copula-verb *(the* child *was small,* she *grew nervous;* дитя *було маленьке,* вона *стала нервовою),* etc.

According to their typological characteristics, adjectives split into some isomorphic and allomorphic classes presented in the table below.

Table 15

Typological Classes of English vs. Ukrainian Adjectives

Isomorphic Classes of Adjectives				Allomorphic Class
Qualita-tive Якісні	Relative Відносні	Possessive and relative Присвійно-відносні	Suppletive Суплетивні	Possessive Присвійні (only in Ukrainian)
cold, big, small, red, green, yellow, холодний, великий, малий, червоний, вартий, жовтий, великий	golden, wooden, English, золотий, дерев'яний, англійсь-полив'яний, святковий, вечірній, осінній	Byronian, Shakespearian, Shevchenkinian, Lermontovian, байронівський, Шекспірівський, Шевченківсь-Тичинівський, Малишківський, Лермонтовсь-Дніпровський	good, better, best; bad, worse, worst; little, less, least; добрий, гарний, кращий, найкращий, поганий, гірший, найгірший	мамин/материн, батьків/татів, сестрин, братів/братова, братові (книги), котиків/вовків (хвіст), лисиччина (хатка), сомові (вуса), соловейкові співи/ гніздечка, etc.

Qualitative adjectives in both contrasted languages undergo grading, whereas relative adjectives express qualities characterising objects and phenomena through their relation to other objects and phenomena *(Cf. economic progress, private property, urban population; економі-чний розвиток, приватна власність, міське населення).*

Relative adjectives in the contrasted languages, as was shown above, fall into two subgroups: a) possessive and relative (присвійно-відносні), which are formed in English from nouns denoting family names or names of countries by adding the suffixes **-ic, -ian** *(Ae-sopian, Shakespearian, Shevchenkinian, Tolstovian, Lermontovian);* b) genuinely relative adjectives which have some inherent possessive meaning *(Cuban, Brazilian, Portugese, western, eastern) or: Kyiv parks, London docks, Taras Shevchenko Prise winners* etc.

Note. Many English relative adjectives are also regular root words, i. e. base adjectives: <u>gold</u> *ring, the* <u>Iron</u> *Curtain,* <u>Boston</u> *harbour,* <u>York</u> *cathedral,* <u>Paris</u> *papers,* etc.

Ukrainian possessive and relative adjectives are formed by adding the suffixes **-евк/-івськ-/-цьк-, -зьк-** to the noun stem: *батьківсь-кий, учнівський, Шевченківський, Малишківський, вояцький, ко-заць-*

214

кий, запорізький, or only by adding the suffixes **-ин/-ін, -ач/-яч-** to the root: *журавлиний, качиний, зміїний, солов'їний, гусячий, жаб'ячий, телячий, волячий.*

Pertaining only to Ukrainian (and to some other Slavonic languages), however, are *possessive adjectives,* which are formed from common and proper nouns denoting living beings by adding to their roots/stems the suffixes **-ів/-їв, -ин/-їн, -ов-а, -ов-е, -ев-а, -ач/-яч:** *батьків, Сергіїв, Миколин, сестрин, Маріїн, лікарів, водіїв, командирів, лисячий, комарів, цвіркунів, жабин, равликів/равликова.* Their corresponding forms in English are genitive case forms of nouns: *father's, Nick's, lion's* (hunger), *her brother-in-laws (book), frog's* (leg), (my) sister's dress, fox's tail, etc.

As to the structure of adjectives they fall in English and Ukrainian into three far from equal by their number groups:

1. Base (simple) adjectives, which are regular root words (cf. *big, bold, clean, high, old, red, thin, wet, young, small, tall,* etc.

Such base adjectives are few though structurally regular stems in Ukrainian. Cf. *винен, годен/згоден, давен, дивен, зелен, певен, ладен.* Regular base adjectives, like those in English, are rather rare a few in Ukrainian. They are: *варт, рад, жив (і здоров).*

2. **Derivative adjectives** which are in English regular stems: *boy ish, capable, despotic, grammatical, tedious, rural, urban, English, Germanic, beautiful,* etc.
The Ukrainian language has many derivative adjectives though almost all of them are structurally non-stem adjectives. They are formed with the help of different suffixes, the main of which are as follows: **-н-, -езн-, -ськ-/-зьк, -цьк-** *(товариський, паризький, бузький, козацький);* -ан-/-ян-, -ов-/-ев, -ев *(гречаний, кропив'яний, березовий, грушевий, баєвий);* **-льн-** *(доїльний, поїльник);* -ч-*(виборчий, вірчий),* **-езн-, -ач-,- яч-, -ущ-, -ющ-, -уват-, -еньк-, -есеньк-,** etc. as: *величезний, добрячий, багатющий, синюватий, білястий, дрібнесенький, гарнесенький,* etc.

Derivative adjectives are formed in English with the help of the following suffixes: **-al/-ial** *(annual, bacterial);* **-able/-ible** *(capable, sensible);* **-ary/-ory** *(contrary, advisory);* **-an/-ian:** *(urban, Ukrainian);* **-ant/-ent** *(defiant, divergent);* - ern *(eastern, western);* **-ful**

(tactful, useful); **-ic/-ical** *(basic, political);* **-ish** *(bookish, womanish);* - ive *(active, conclusive),* **-less** *(careless, hopeless);* -ous *(tedious, poisonous);* -ow *(narrow, yellow);* **-ward** *(westward, backward)',* -y *(milky, tidy)* and some others.

Many of these suffixes can form qualitative adjectives as well (cf. *beautiful, foolish, dangerous, happy,* etc.).

A considerable number of suffixes, some of which have already been mentioned above, form Ukrainian possessive adjectives from nouns. They are **-ів, -їв/-ев-а, -єв-е, -єв-і:** *Антонів, Петрів, водіїв, водієва, водієве,* водієве;-ин-/-ин-а, **-ин-е, -ин-і:** *Галин, Галина, Галине, Галині;* **-їн/-їн-а, -їн-е, -їн-і:** *Надіїн, Надіта, Надіте, Надіті;* -ач-/-яч-: *мишачий, дитячий:* **-ськ-/-цьк-:** *синівський, читацький.*

3. Compound adjectives unlike basic and derivative ones are characterised in the contrasted languages by some structural or lexical allomorphisms. Thus, they may sometimes not correlate in English and Ukranian semantically. For example, the English compound adjective *breast-high* can have in Ukrainian only a phrase equivalent *занурений до грудей/що дістає до грудей; ice-cold is холодний як лід/ крига.* The English compound adjective *upright* on the other hand corresponds to the Ukrainian simple derivative adjective *чесний* or *прямий, вертикальний,* which are structurally non-equivalent (they are not compound in Ukrainian). Of course, there exist also many equivalent compound adjectives like *four-storied, all-national, all-steel, all-powerful, many-sided,* and others which have corresponding semantic and structural equivalents in Ukrainian: *чотириповерховий, загальнонародний, суцільносталевий, всемогутній, багатосторонній* and others.

Absolutely allomorphic (for English) is the formation of Ukrainian adjectives with the help of diminutive and augmentative suffixes, the most often used being **-еньк-, -есеньк-, -ісіньк-, -юсіньк-** *(гарненький, малесенький, чистісінький, тонюсінький),* and -езн-, -енн-, -ач-/-яч-, -ущ-/-ющ- for augmentatives *(величезний, здоровенний, добрячий, багатющий, клятющий),* etc.

Absolute isomorphism is observed, however, in the existence of derivative prefixal and suffixal (префіксально-суфіксальних) adjectives in English and Ukrainian. For example: *abnormal/subnormal -*

анормальний/субнормальний, anti-national - антинародний, arch-bischopic - архієпископський, counteractive - протидіючий, ultra-leftist - ультралівацький, indisputable - незаперечний/ безперечний, etc.

Very productive in Ukrainian are prepositional by origin prefixes, that partly correspond to English adverbial postpositions, which may also become prefixes (cf. *to mention above — above-mentioned, to grow over — overgrown,* etc.). These prefixes in Ukrainian are as follows: без- *(без думки — бездумний),* до- *(до центру — доцентровий),* **від-** *(від центру — відцентровий),* на- *(на стіл — настільний),* під- *(під горою — підгірний),* **перед-** *(перед святом — передсвятковий); зя-(за Дніпром — задніпровський),* etc.

Of allomorphic nature in both contrasted languages are also compound adjectives consisting of the initial adjectival, substantival, numerical, pronominal, or adverbial component and a concluding substantival, verbal or some other root/stem. These adjectives in Ukrainian have always, naturally, their endings for gender, case and number, whereas in English they are mostly marked by the participial -ing or -ed endings (sometimes by the -ty suffix or without any markers at all), eg: *black-maned — чорногривий (чорногрива, чорногриве/-і), easy-going — добродушний (-а: добродушна, -е: добродушне, -і: добродушні), well-known — добре відомий (добре відома, добре відоме, добре відомі), silk-like — шовковидний (-а: шовковидна, -е: шовковидне, -і: шовковидні),* etc.

Grading of Adjectives in English and Ukrainian

Most qualitative adjectives in English and Ukrainian are gradable. Gradibility in both contrasted languages is achieved by means of the positive (звичайний), the comparative (вищий), and the superlative (найвищий) degrees markers. The way of grading in the contrasted languages may be synthetic or analytical. The employment of the synthetic way of grading is restricted in English mostly to base adjectives, eg: *big, bigger, biggest; long, longer, longest; young, younger, youngest,* etc. This way of grading have also English adjectives in -**able, -er, -ow,** -y *(narrow, narrower, narrowest; happy, happier, happiest; clever,*

cleverer, cleverest, etc.) and the two-syllable adjectives with the concluding stressed syllable (eg: *concise, conciser, concisest; complete, completer, completest; polite, politer, politest,* etc.). In colloquial emphatic speech base and disyllabic adjectives may be graded in the analytical way too: The roar grew *more loud;* the passengers *more numerous,* the shops *more busy...* (Dickens). It appeared to me that he was *more clever* and *cold* than they were... (Ibid.)

The analytical forms of grading are more often employed in English than in Ukrainian, eg: *important, more/less important, the most/the least important; interesting, more/less interesting, the most/the least interesting,* etc. But: *більш/менш, найбільш/найменш придатний, більш/менш економний; більш/менш дозрілий.*

In Ukrainian the synthetic way of grading is more often used. It is formed by means of the suffixes -іш-/-ш - and the prefixes **най-, що-най-or якнай-,** eg: *добрий, добріший, найдобріший / якнайдобріший; сміливий, сміливіший, найсміливіший; молодий, молодший, щонаймолодший; добрий, добріший, щонайдобріший,* etc.

Ukrainian adjectives that form their comparative and superlative degrees by means of the suffix -ш- undergo some transformations in their stems which is allomorphic for English adjectives. These are as follows: a) the suffixes **-к-, -ок-, -ек-** fall out: *глибокий, глибший, найглибший; далекий, дальший, найдальший);* b) the suffix -ш - changes -ш- into -жч- *(дорогий, дорожчий, найдорожчий; близький, ближчий, найближчий; дужий, дужчий, найдужчий);* and c) the final consonant *Id* before /т/ changes as the result of dissimilation/assimilation processes into /щ/, i. e. /с -» щ, ст -» щ/: *високий, вищий, найвищий; товстий, товщий, найтовщий.*

The comparative or the superlative (or both) degrees of some Ukrainian adjectives, as was already shown above, may be formed by analytical means, most of which are intensifying adverbs: *більш/менш, найбільше, багато/набагато, значно, куди;* eg: *більш/менш важливий, багато/набагато важливіший, значно сильніший; багато/набагато більш індустріальний, куди більший/куди кращий, набагато ліпший.*

Of isomorphic nature in the contrasted languages, as was pointed out

218

in the table above, is the existence of suppletivity (in actually the same English and Ukrainian adjectives), eg: *good, better, best; bad, worse, worst; little, less, least; добрий, кращий, найкращий; поганий, гірший, найгірший; гарний, кращий, найкращий.*

Some groups of adjectives in the contrasted languages have no grading. They are a) adjectives denoting a constant feature of the noun referent *(blind — сліпий, deaf — глухий, barefooted — босий, nude — голий);* b) adjectives expressing the similarity of colour *(lilac — бузковий, lemon — лимонний, cream — кремовий, ruby — яскраво-червоний, chestnut — темно-коричневий;* с) adjectives denoting colour of hair or eyes *(dun — буланий, raven-black — вороний, bay — карий);* d) adjectives expressing the intensive property with the help of suffixes or prefixes *(bluish, reddish, yellowish; синявий, синюватий, жовтуватий, жовтісінький, здоровенний, злющий, прегарний, супермодний).*

Isomorphic is the process of adjectivation of some parts of speech, eg: *prince charming (чарівний принц), beaten track (битий шлях), the accurst enemy (клятий ворог), biting frost (пекучий мороз), folding-chair (складаний стілець).* In English some infinitives and adverbs can also become adjectivised which is an allomorphic feature unknown in Ukrainian. Eg: *the president elect (новообраний президент), clasp-knife (складаний ніж), the only chance (єдина можлива нагода), the well-to-do people (заможні люди), the then trainer (тодішній тренер).*

Isomorphic is also the process of substantivisation of adjectives in English and Ukrainian, there being distinguished a) wholly substantivised adjectives *(a native, a relative, a black/white, a monthly/weekly, the pink, the orange, Italian, Ukrainian, Brown/the Browns, Black, Long, White).* Similarly in Ukrainian: *диспетчерська, прийомна, слідчий, черговий (-а, -і), їздовий;* family names like *Береговий, Вороний, Глухенький, Степовий, Сліпий, Тихий;* b) partially substantivised adjectives in both languages have no plural or singular and gender or case distinctions (in English); eg: *the poor, the rich, the young; the English/French* (nation); *the beautiful, the useful, the unemployed;* (for) *the best,* (in) *the open,* (in) *the negative,* (in) *the affirmative.* Partially substantivised adjectives in Ukrainian are usually of neuter gen-

der, eg: *головне, важливе/найважливіше, основне/в основному, в найголовнішому, (ходити в) теплому/шовковому, бути в літньому/ в зимовому,* etc.

The functions of adjectives in the sentence are common in the contrasted languages.

The Numeral as a Part of Speech in English and Ukrainian

The Numeral in the contrasted languages has a common implicit lexico-grammatical meaning expressing quantity *(two, ten, twenty-one, два, десять, двадцять один).* It may denote a part of an object *(one-third, two-fifths, одна третя, дві п'ятих)* or order of some objects *(the first, the tenth - перший, десятий).* The syntagmatic properties of numerals are characterised in the contrasted languages by the identical combinability of numerals a) with nouns *(four days, the first step; чотири дні, перший крок);* b) with pronouns *(all three, some five or so; всі три, якихось п'ятеро з них);* c) with numerals *(two from ten, one of the first, the second of the ten; два від п'яти, один із перших, другий з-поміж п'яти); d)* with adverbs *(the two below/ahead, двоє спереду);* e) with the infinitive *(the first to come/to read; перша співати, другий відповідати),* etc.

In the sentence the numeral performs the same function as the noun (cardinal numerals) and adjective (the ordinal numerals), i.e. it can be subject *(Four* are present), object (I like the *second),* attribute (It is my *second trip),* a simple nominal predicate (cf. *the two there; їх десять там)* and the adverbial modifier *(they marched three and three; вони йшли по три).*

All numerals in the contrasted languages fall into some common and divergent subclasses. Common are 1) *cardinal;* 2) *ordinal* and 3) *fractionals* (common fractions and decimal fractions). Cardinal numerals in both languages denote number: three, five, ten, twenty-one, etc. три, п'ять, десять, двадцять один. Ordinal numerals denote order of persons or objects and are used in English speech with the definite article: *the third, the fifth, the tenth, the twenty-first, the one hundred and twenty-third,* etc. Ukrainian ordinal numerals are semantically of isomorphic nature: *перший, третій, п'ятий, двадцять п'ятий, сто*

двадцять п'ятий. The main allomorphic feature of numerals (like other nominals) find their expression in the existence of morphological/categorial endings pertained to most numerals that are declinable in Ukrainian. They have number, case and partly gender distinctions. For example, the category of case: *десять, десяти, десятьом, десятьма; другий, другого, другому, другим; дві треті, двох третіх, двом третім; дві цілих і три десятих, двом цілим і трьом десятим,* etc.

An exception makes the category of gender of the cardinal numerals *один* and *два* which have three gender distinctions *(один, одна, одне; два, дві, двоє).* All other cardinal numerals have a common form for masculine and feminine genders and a separate form for the neuter gender, eg: *три жінки, три чоловіки,* but *троє дітей; п'ять дубів/ лип* and *п'ятеро курчат,* even *п'ятеро хлопців/дівчат* (not only when they are small. Cf.: *Там було з п'ятеро хлопців).* The category of number have only ordinal numerals in Ukrainian. Cf. *перші (вони були першими), другі (прийшли другими); Ніхто не хотів бути тринадцятим,* etc.

Common and decimal fractionals have an identical expression in both languages: 1 *3/4 one and three fourths, 3 1/5 three and one fifths; or 0.5 zero point five (or naught point five); 14.33 fourteen point thirty-three,* etc. Ukrainian fractionals are, naturally, declinable. They have case forms. Eg: *0,1 нуль цілих і одна десята, нуль цілих і однієї десятої, нуль цілих і одній десятій/однією десятою; 3¹/₂ три цілих і одна друга (однієї другої, одній другій, однією другою),* etc.

Apart from the above-given subclasses, the Ukrainian language has two more subclasses of numerals unknown in English. Namely: 1) The **indefinite cardinal numerals** which express a) common homogeneous objects *(декілька/кілька голубів/риб, квіток); кільканадцять книжок (гривень/риб); кількадесят/кількасот чоловіків, жінок)* or b) an indefinite quantity of objects: *багато/небагато книжок (цукру, добра, користі).* 2) Ukrainian has also **collective numerals** which denote a quantity of objects in their totality (сукупність) or indivisible unity, eg: *двоє, троє, семеро, п'ятнадцятеро, тридцятеро* (дітей, вікон, чоловіків). Collective numerals have parallel diminutive forms: *двоє - двійко/двієчко, п'ятеро/п'ятірко, п'ятірочко* (діток, хлопчиків, каченят/каченяток). Collective numerals are also used in

dual number *(обоє, обидва, обидві: обоє* дітей, *обидва* чоловіки, *обидві* руки/руці). These numerals may often be used, as was already illustrated, with nouns irrespective of their gender *(п'ятеро чоловіків, п'ятеро жінок, п'ятеро дітей, семеро немовлят, десятеро поросят).* Consequently, the classes of numerals in the contrasted languages are partly different. This can be seen from the given table below.

Classes of Numerals in English vs. Ukrainian

Isomorphic/Common Classes			Allomorphic Classes Pertained only to Ukrainian	
Cardinal Кількісні	*Ordinal Порядкові*	*Fractional com- mon/decimal*	*Indefinite Cardinal Неозначені*	*Collective Збірні*
one, ten, fifteen, thirty, fifty-one, one hundred and twenty-two; один, десять, п'ятдесят, тридцять, п'ятдесят один, сто двадцять два, etc.	the first, the tenth, the fifteenth, the thirty-first, the one hundred and fifty-third; перший, п'ятий, десятий, п'ятнадцятий, п'ятдесятий, сто двадцять перший, etc.	one-third, three-fifths, five and two-thirds, zero point one, three point twenty, etc. одна третя, три п'ятих, один цілий і дві третіх, нуль цілих і п'ять сотих, п'ять десятих,	кілька, декілька, кількадесят, кільканадцять, кільканадцятеро, кількасот, багато, багатьом, багатьма, небагато, багатенько, немало, чимало, скільки, стільки, etc.	двоє, двієчко, обоє, четверо, обидва/обидві, четверо, двадцятеро, двадцять п'ятеро, сто двадцять двоє, двісті десятеро, кільканадцятеро, etc.

Numerals in English and Ukrainian may be of isomorphic and allomorphic structure. Namely: 1) Simple *(one, two, ten, eleven; один, п'ять, десять, десятеро, двійко, мало, багато,* etc). 2) Derivative numerals, pertaining to English only (cf. *thirteen, fourteen... nineteen, twenty, thirty, fifty... ninety).* 3) Compound numerals in English are all from *twenty-one (twenty-two,* etc.) to *ninety-nine.* In Ukrainian compound are numerals in **-надцять** (from *одинадцять* to *дев'ятнадцять),* and in tens (from *двадцять* to *дев'яносто),* except *сто.* Compound are also fractionals *півтора, півтораста;* the indefinite cardinals *кількадесят, кільканадцять, кількасот, стонадцять,* and all ordinals derived from compound cardinals *(одинадцятий, дванадцятий, дев'яностий,*

двохсотий). 4) Composite in the contrasted languages are numerals consisting of compound/composite + simple numerals or vice versa, eg: *one hundred and twenty, twenty-two thousand, five hundred and thirty-one; сто два, триста один, дві тисячі п'ятсот тридцять два, сімдесят тисяч сімсот дев'ятнадцять,* etc. Composite are also fractional numerals, such as *one-fifth, three-ninths, one and two-fourths; одна третя, п'ять шостих, три цілих* і *одна четверта,* etc.

All classes of numerals are declinable in Ukrainian, which makes this morphological feature allomorphic for the English language. Cf. *десять, десятьох, десятьма; перший (перша, перше, перші); першого, першому, першим, першими,* etc.

Similarly with fractional numerals: *дві третіх, двом третім, двома третіми; одній цілій і двом п'ятим, двох цілих і однієї п'я-тої; двома цілими і трьома п'ятими,* etc.

Some Ukrainian numerals may have different forms in the same case as can be seen from the following table of their declension:

Nomin.	п'ять	N.	одинадцять/ п'ятдесят
Genit.	п'яти, п'ятьох	G.	одинадцяти, одинадцятьох
Dative	п'яти, п'ятьом	D.	одинадцяти, одинадцятьом
Accus.	п'ять, п'ятьох	Ac.	одинадцять, одинадцятьох
In-	п'ятьма, п'ятьома	Ins.	одинадцятьма, одинадцятьома
Loca-	(на) п'яти/ на п'ятьох	Loc.	(на) одинадцяти, (на) одинадцятьох

Parallel forms of declension have also numerals denoting tens: Cf. N. п'ятдесят, G. п'ятдесяти, D. п'ятдесяти/п'ятдесятьом; A. п'ятде-сят, п'ятдесятьох, Ins. п'ятдесятьма, п'ятдесятьома, Loc. (на) п'ят-десяти, (на) п'ятдесятьох.

Ukrainian numerals denoting hundreds have similar forms of de-clension: N. сімсот, G. семисот, D. семистам, Ac. сімсот, Ins. сьо-мастами, L. (на) семистах.

Apart from case forms Ukrainian numerals have also gender and number categories. Cf. *два, дві, двоє; перший, перша, перше, пер-ші; двадцять один, двадцять дві, двадцять двоє,* etc.

Isomorphic are the syntactic functions of numerals which may be in the sentence 1) as subject: *The first/ten have arrived. Пер-ші/десять вже прибули.* 2) Compound nominal predicate: *He was first; They*

were twenty. Він був першим, їх було двадцятеро. 3) As an attribute: *This was his first visit to London; She saw twenty swans. Це були його перші відвідини Лондона. Вона бачила двадцять лебедів.* 4) As an adverbial modifier (manner): *They ran four and four. Вони бігли по чотири (в шерензі).*

Typological Characteristics of the Pronoun

The Pronoun as a part of speech correlates in English and Ukrainian with the following parts of speech as their deictic substitutes: a) with nouns: *he/Pete, she/Ann,* etc.; b) Some classes of pronouns may also correlate (attributive function) with adjectives (his, her, your, etc. book); the first/ second, etc. look; c) Several pronouns also correlate in English and Ukrainian with numerals when they denote generalising quantity: кілька, декілька *(some, much, few/a few).* Their Ukrainian equivalents *кілька, декілька, кільканадцять,* however, belong to indefinite cardinal numerals. Hence, these words correlate lexically and functionally, performing in both languages the attributive function. Eg: *some/few friends, much snow/water, кілька/декілька друзів. Багато снігу/води,* etc.

Most Ukrainian pronouns have the following morphological categories: 1) that of number *(мій — мої, наш — наші);* 2) case *(мого, моєму, моїм)* and 3) gender *(мій брат, моя сестра, моє завдання).* English pronouns have nominative case *(somebody),* genitive case *(somebody's, my, his, her, your, their),* and objective case *(me, him, her, us, them, whom).* [54; 96]

There exists generally almost complete isomorphism in the classes of pronouns though some of them are not yet finally identified and unanimously accepted by many grammarians, at least by the majority of West European grammarians. To these belongs (for a longer time disputed already in English and Ukrainian) the whole group of indefinite pronouns. Some grammarians and researchers restrict this class of pronouns quantitatively by singling out of the class some semantically distinct subclasses of them. Thus, the authors of the Ukrainian scientific Morphology (Морфологія 32: 283-284) allot to this class only the following undoubtedly indefinite pronouns: *дехто, будь-хто, будь-що, хто-небудь, нічий, ніякий, котрийсь,* and some others. The Kharkiv grammarians

Khaimovych B. and Rohovska B. (47: 111-116) subdivide the English indefinite pronouns into some subclasses. Namely, into: negative pronouns *(nobody, nothing,* etc.), generalising pronouns *(all, both, every, each),* quantitative pronouns *(little, many, much, few)* and contrasting pronouns *(another, other, otherwise, one, ones).* The Petersburg grammarian I. Ivanova and her co-authors (15) completely agree on the point with B. Strang, V. Zhihadlo and other grammarians. They also restrict the class of indefinite pronouns to *some, any, every, no* and to their *derivatives (somebody, anybody, nothing, nobody,* etc.). There also exist some quite different nomenclatures within the group of indefinite pronouns in other English and Ukrainian grammars. Despite all this the class of indefinite pronouns can not be questionable or discarded altogether since it is in the typological system of this subclass of pronouns in at least all European languages. The matrix of English and Ukrainian pronouns can be presented in the following classes of them:

Table 17

Personal/Особові	Possessive/Присвій	Reflexive/Зворотн	Demonstrative/Вка
I, he, she, it, we, you, they; я, ти, він, вона, воно, ми, ви, вони.	my, his, her, its, our, your, their, mine, hers, yours, ours; мій, твій, її, наше, ваше, ваш, їхня,	myself, itself, himself, yourself, yourselves, ourselves; себе, собі, собою, (на) собі	зівні: this (these), that (those), such a, (the) same; цей, той, ті, той самий, та сама, такий

Relative/Відносні: who, what, which, whose, хто, що, який, котрий, чий/чия, чиє, чийого, чиї, чиїх.	PRONOUNS ЗА- ЙМЕННИКИ	Interrogative\Питальні: who, whose, what, which, how much; хто, що, який, котрий, які саме, хто саме.

Indefinite and Negative: any, anybody, somebody, something, nobody, none,
nothing; дехто, декого, декому, будь-що, будь-хто, нічий, який-небудь, котрийсь, котрий/котра-небудь.

Reciprocal/Взаємні:
each other, one another;
один одного, одна одну,
одне одного, одні одних.

225

Each of the eight classes of pronouns in the contrasted languages is endowed with some isomorphic and allomorphic features of its own. This can be seen from their short characteristics that follows.

1. Personal Pronouns (seven in English: /, *he, she, it, we, you, they)* and eight in Ukrainian (because of the existence of *ти — thou* which was substituted in English by you). All personal pronouns in Ukrai nian are declinable: *я, мене, мені, мною, на мені.* They have person and gender distinctions *(мій олівець, моя ручка, моє завдан-ня).* All English personal pronouns, except **it** and you take their explicit objective case forms *(me, him, her, us, them).* Of peculiar nature and meaning is the **it** pronoun in English which may be used a) anaphorically (cf. the book is on the table — *it* is on the table); b) as an anticipatory element *(It* is necessary that...); c) as an impersonal pronoun *(It* is cold); d) as a demonstrative element *(it* was he who said that); e) as a formal element (to foot *it* — іти пішки, to catch *it* — "зловити" прочухана).

The Ukrainian impersonal pronoun **воно** is also endowed with some characterising meanings. It is often used to express sympathy, compassion on the one hand or contempt on the other, eg: ***Воно*** й училось, нівроку йому. (А. Тесленко) Що ***воно*** тямить / з себе корчить; чого ***воно*** так кирпу гне? (contempt). ***Воно*** ніби так і треба (impersonal meaning).

The pronouns *we, you, they* may form in English indefinite personal sentences, eg: *We must* not allow children do what *they* like (не треба дозволяти дітям робити, що їм заманеться). *You* don't say so. Не може бути! Невже? *They* say. Кажуть.

There is an absolute identity, however, in both languages in the use of the pronoun "we" by speakers or authors instead of the personal pronoun "I" (cf. *We* hold the view that... *Ми* вважаємо, що...).

2. English possessive pronouns, unlike their counterparts in Ukrai nian, may be of two types: a) possessive conjoint *(my, his, her,* etc.) and b) possessive absolute *(mine, hers, its, ours, yours, theirs.).* The latter are used as attributes *(the friend of mine)* or as predicatives *(that book is mine).* English possessive conjoint pronouns very often function as determiners, eg: He has ***his*** hands in ***his*** pockets. Allomorphism is ob served in Ukrainian possessive pronouns which have gender *(мій, моя,*

моє), case *(мого, моєму,моїм,* etc.) and number categories *(мої, твої, наш - наші)* lacking in English. Besides, they are often substantivised in colloquial speech (cf. *Твоя* прийшла). *Вона* (сестра, дружина) вдома? *Чий* (хлопець, чоловік) то приходив? *Наша* взяла.

3. Reflexive pronouns (self-pronouns) in English have singular and plural forms *(myself, himself, ourselves, themselves,* etc.). They cor respond to the Ukrainian себе pronoun which has no nominative case form but only genitive and other case-forms (себе, *собі, себе, собою* на *собі)* and no number distinctions (я питаю *себе,* ти вигороджуєш *себе,* вони знають *себе).* In some Western Ukrainian dialects the old short forms *си/ся* are used (ми *си/ся* зустріли). The short reflexive ся pronoun is also used in literary Ukrainian expressions as: Як *ся* маєш? Як *ся* маєте? whereas the dative case form *собі* may acquire in some context the meaning and function of a particle, eg: ...одно вона вчиться *собі.* (Тесленко) Деякі сиділи *собі* на диванчику... (Ibid).

Reflexive pronouns in English are used to form reflexive verbs *(to wash oneself, to restrain herself, to show themselves,* etc.).

4. English **demonstrative pronouns** have virtually the same equiv alents in Ukrainian with their common (attributive) function in speech. These pronouns are *this/that, these/those, this same/that same, such a, such; цей/той, ці/ті, такий/такі, цей самий/той самий, стільки.* These English demonstrative pronouns agree in number with the head noun: *this day — these days, such a book — such books, this same book — these same books/those same books.* They form in En glish the only synthetic by structure substantival word-groups.

Apart from the category of number Ukrainian demonstrative pronouns, which are more numerous than in English, have also case and gender distinctions, eg: *цей самий* студент — *ця сама* студентка *-це саме* число. Declinable are also other demonstrative pronouns: *цього/цієї, цьому/цій, цим/цією,* etc. They agree with their headwords in number, case and gender.

There exists a semantic and syntactic correlation between the English *such a — such* pronouns and their Ukrainian equivalents *такий (-а, -е), такі* (cf. *such a boy — such boys, такий сон — такі сни).* But

Ukrainian demonstrative pronouns are always declinable not only with count nouns, but also rarer with uncountable nouns, eg.: *скільки грошей, стільки снігу, скільки часу, стільки людей, стількох людей, стільком людям; цього хлопця, цьому хлопцеві, цим хлопцем, таким/цим снігом,* etc.

Note. The demonstrative pronouns цей, той, такий, той самий, такий самий are equally declinable with Ukrainian and foreign nouns, cf. *Цей чай, цього чаю, цим чаєм у цьому чаї.* Or: у *такому сарі/кімоно,* у *тім галіфе,* до *такого галіфе/сарі, скільком галіфе,* etc.

Besides, Ukrainian demonstrative pronouns may often have some parallel case forms as in the following examples: *на цьому - на цім, на тому - на тім, цієї-цеї, тієї-тої-на тій,на ньому-на нім,* etc.

5. Interrogative pronouns in the contrasted languages are used as noun-pronouns *(who, what, how many/how much; хто, що, скільки)* and as adjective pronouns *(which, whose; який, котрий, чий). They* may correlate with numerals *(how much/how many? — скільки?).* In contrast to Ukrainian, English interrogative pronouns have no number, case or gender distinctions (except "whom" and "whose") expressing respectively the objective and genitive case form as most of their Ukraini an equivalents do, eg: *чий, чия, чиє, чий/чийому, чиїй, чиїх,* etc. The pronoun *стільки,* as has been illustrated already, does not express gender or number category but only quantity (cf. *скільки снігу, скільки людей)* as its English equivalents *(how many books? how much sugar?).*

Interrogative pronouns are characterised in both languages by the identity of their functional meanings in the sentence (those of the noun and those of the adjective respectively). Very often, however, Ukrainian interrogative pronouns perform the function of the simple nominal predicate, eg: От вам *що.* Ось нас *стільки/скільки.*

6. Relative pronouns in English and Ukrainian coincide in their form (structure) with the interrogative pronouns. They perform the function of connectors (cf. I know *what* to do. He asked *who* did it. Я знаю, *що* робити. Він запитував, *хто* це зробив/ *скільки* це коштуватиме).

Ukrainian relative pronouns, however, are declinable (cf. Він знав, *кому* завдячувати це. Він запитував, *кого* запросити на збори. Вона

228

не цікавилася, *скількох* це стосувалося, бо знала, *чого* це все коштувало). The only exception makes, of course, the pronoun ***скільки*** (referring to uncountables). Eg. Вони не знали, *скільки* часу це ще триватиме. But: Ми знали, скільком (countable) мільйонам українців національна ідея коштувала життя.

7. Reciprocal pronouns (взаємні займенники) are two in English *(each other* and *one another)* and one in Ukrainian, where it exists in three gender forms used in singular and plural as noun pronouns: *один одного, одна одну, одне одного, одні одних..* Very often, however, the neuter gender form may be used in Ukrainian for any gender and number (singular or plural) nouns. Eg: The two younger people looked at *one another.* (Huxley) — Обоє молодят поглядали *одне на одного. They* looked into *each other's* eyes for a silent moment. (M. Wilson) - Вони якусь мить мовчки дивились у вічі **одне одному.** Or: Хлопці й дівчата були варті **одні одних.**

8. Indefinite pronouns (неозначені займенники) constitute, as was already pointed out, a rather controversial class. Some grammarians (R. Quirk, S. Greenbaum, G. Leech, J. Svartvik) speak of "universal pronouns" *(each, all, every, the very)* and of 'partitive pronouns' *(some thing, anything, nothing, either, neither, any, no, none,* etc.). Hence, as *indefinite* in both languages can be identified such pronouns as *some, any, somebody, anybody/ anybody's, someone/someone's, something, anything.* They have for their Ukrainian equivalents *дехто, дещо, хтось, щось, хто-небудь, що-небудь, який-небудь, будь-хто, будь-що, казна-хто, казна-що.* Equivalents of some English pronouns (cf. *much, little, few)* are allotted in Ukrainian to indefinite numerals *(небагато/кілька).* B. S. Khaimovich and B. I. Rohovska, as has been mentioned already, subdivided the English indefinite pronouns into three subclasses: 1) "genuine indefinite pronouns" *(some, any* and their com pounds); 2) "generalising pronouns" *(all, both, each,* and their com pounds); 3) "quantitative pronouns" *(many, much, few, little),* and 4) "con trasting pronouns" *(another, other, one).*

Note. Ukrainian grammarians single out one more subclass within the class of indefinite pronouns - this is the so-called "identifying (означальні) pronouns. They are: *весь, всякий, жодний, кожний,*

інший, сам (the last one is a reflexive pronoun in English). The functions of indefinite ("identifying") pronouns in the sentence coincide respectively with those of the noun or adjective, for example: *some* are wise and *some* are otherwise (Saying). That is *all*. I saw *nobody* there. We shall go *another* way. *Хто* розумний, а *хто* навпаки. Це. було *все*. Я нікого не бачив. Ми знаємо *інший* вихід.

Many grammarians treat **negative pronouns** (заперечні займенники) as a separate class of pronouns. The latter are generally common in English and Ukrainian, cf.: *no, nobody, none, nothing, neither — ніхто, ніщо, ніякий/нікотрий, нічий, ніскільки*. Ukrainian negative pronouns are naturally declinable and are used as noun pronouns. Isomorphic in the contrasted languages are the structural forms of negative pronouns, which may be simple (no), compound, or composite, eg: *none (no one), nobody, nothing, nothing else, nothing more - ніхто, ніщо, ніякий, нікотрий, ніхто інший, жоден інший, ні один (із них), більш нічого*.

Allomorphism is observed in the wide use of English negative pronouns to form negative word-groups and sentences, eg: *no pains, no gains (під лежачий камінь вода не тече); nobody home-клепки не вистачає*. Both smiled but *neither* spoke. (Heyer) *Nobody* ever knows anything. (Hemingway) Ukrainian equivalent sentences have the negative pronouns + the negative particle *не:* Обоє посміхались, але «*ніхто*/жоден з них *не* озвався. *Ніхто* взагалі нічого *не* знає. Some Ukrainian negative pronouns have diminutive forms which are completely unknown in English pronouns (cf. *нічогісінько, аніскілечки, ніякісінький)*.

As to their structure, both English and Ukrainian pronouns are characterised by isomorphism. They may be 1) simple (/, *he, she, you, some, which, what; я, ти, він, хто, що, ваш, той, цей, наш,* etc.); 2) compound *(myself, ourselves, someone, somebody, nobody, nothing; абихто, абищо, будь-що, хто-небудь, що-небудь);* 3) Composite (I *myself, this same, somebody else, neither he nor she; що таке, той самий, хто інший, я сам, кожен і всякий, ніхто й ніщо,* etc.).

Syntactic functions of pronouns in the sentence in both contrasted languages are practically isomorphic. An exception make only English

reflexive pronouns which are also used to form reflexive verbs, eg: *to* wash *oneself, to shave themselves/to shave himself, shave yourself/ yourselves,* etc. A similar function performs the Ukrainian **-ся(-си)** pronoun in a Western Ukrainian dialect. Cf. Вони *си зустріли* і *си поцілували.* Hence, one can speak of the existence of a typological isomorphism, going back to the Indo-European linguistic prehistory.

Typological Characteristics of the English and Ukrainian Verb

This part of speech in English and Ukrainian has the largest number of features in common. They include first of all the general implicit meaning (the lexico-grammatical nature) of the verb which serves to convey verbiality, i. e. different kinds *of activity (go, read, skate), various processes (boil, grow, obtain),* the *inner state* of a person *(feel, bother, worry), possession (have, possess),* etc. Due to these lexico-grammatical properties the verb generally functions in the sentence as predicate going into some combinations a) with the nominal parts of speech performing the functions of the subject (or the object) of the sentence, for example: The sun *shines.* The trees grow. The student *passed* his examinations. Сонце *світить. Дерева ростуть.* Студент склав іспити; b) The verb goes into combination with verbs *(to want to know, to want to read; хотіти вчитися/знати)* or with adverbs *(to read well гарно читати);* c) with prepositions *(to depend on smb/smth. залежати від когось)* and also with conjunctions *(neither read nor write, to work and rest ні читали, ні писати, працювати і відпочивати).*

Allomorphic is the combinability of English verbs with postpositional particles (cf. *sit down, stand up, put off, read through)* which need not be confused or in any way compared to their ability of being identified with the Ukrainian subjunctive mood particles б or **би** (as in *піти б, хотів би, знав би).*

As was already mentioned in the foregoing chapter, the verb in the contrasted languages has its characteristic stem building suffixes or postfixes. In English these suffixes are: -ate *(antiquate, liquidate),* -fy *(beautify, defy, exemplify);* -en *(blacken, darken, deepen);* **-ise** *(antagon-*

231

ise, colonise, emphasise): **-esce** *(acquiesce, coalesce, phosphoresce).*
In Ukrainian these distinguishing suffixes are: **-ти/-ть** *(брати,
брать);* **-тися** *(братися, знатися);* **-ться** *(вчиться, молиться),* **-
сь** *(вчитись, молитись, обмитись,* etc.,).

Ukrainian verbs, unlike the English ones, may also be formed with
the help of diminutive suffixes **-ки, -оньк-и, -ці** *(спатки, їстки, їс-
тоньки, спатоньки, питоньки, купці - люпці)* and some others..

Among the many prefixes that form the verb stem in English, the
following are the most often used: ex- *(exclaim, excavate);* **in-/il-,ir-**
(introduce, illustrate, irrigate, irritate); **contra-** *(contradict);* con-
(contribute); **counter-** *(counteract);* re- *(restore, reduce);* **over-** *(over-
flow, overlap);* **under-** *(undertake, understand);* **out-** *(outfit, outflow);*
super- *(superadd, supervise);* **sub-** *(subdue, submit);* **mis-***(mislead,
mistrust);* **un-** *(unbind, uncover).* The most productive verbs forming
prefixes in Ukrainian are: в-/у- *(вбігти/убігти, внести/ унести);* **ви-**
(вибігти/вибігати, вискочити); **від-/од-** *(відбити/ відбивати, од-
дати/оддавати);* до- *(довести/доводити);* за-*(завести/заводити,
зайти);* з-/с-, зі- *(злетіти, з'їхати, сплести, зіпхнути);* **на-** *(набра-
ти, нанести).*

A number of English verbs are formed with the help of suffixes
and prefixes at the same time: ex-, -ate: *excommunicate, exculpate;*
ex-, -ise: *exsursionise;* **hyper-, -ise:** *hypercriticise;* **in-, -ate:** *inca-
pacitate;* **mis-, -ate:** *misappropriate, miscalculate;* **over-, -ise:** *over-
emphasise, overspecialise;* **over-, -ate:** *overestimate;* **over-, -fy:** *over-
beautify;* **re-, -fy** *reputify;* **sub-, -fy:** *subclassify;* **in-, -ate:** *indetermi-
nate;* **under-, -ate:** *underestimate, underpopulate.*

In Ukrainian the suffixes are mostly **-ти/-ть, -ТИСЯ/-ТИСБ** and
prefixes are various: **над-/наді-:** *надбити/надбитися, надібрати;*
о-(об-)-ати/-ути: *оглядати/оглянути; оббити, обводити;* **пере-, -
ти:** *перебігти,* **пере-, під-/піді-, підо-, -ти:** *підбігти, підібрати,
підозрювати;* **по-/попо-, -ти:** *понабігати, попоходити;* **про-, -ти:**
пройти, пробити; **роз-/розі-: -ти, -тися, -ати, -тися:** *розвес-
ти/розвестися, розігнати/розігнатися.*

Many Ukrainian verbs are formed from other parts of speech
(nouns, adjectives, numerals) by adding suffixes to their stems. The
suffixes are:

232

-а-: обід-а-ти, сідл/о/-а-ти, дужч-а-ти, кращ-а-ти, коса - кос-и-ти, барабан-и-ти, білий - біл--и-ти; -і-: розум-і-ти, звір-і-ти; білий - біл-і-ти, двоє — дво-ї-ти, -ува-: зима - зим-у-вати, агітація - агіт-ува-ти, пильний - пиль-н-ува-ти, четвертий - четверт-ува-ти, etc. The suffix - ну-/-ні- is added to adjectival roots: блідий - блід-ну-ти; густий - гус-ну-ти, міцний - міц-ні-ти.

Some suffixes in Ukrainian form aspective (durative, perfective) meanings of verbs. The suffixes are added to prefixal verbs, eg: ува-/-юва-: прочитати - прочит-ува-ти; загоїти - заго-юва-ти; -в-/-ува-: перевиховати - перевихов-ува-ти, etc.

To express a sudden action the suffix -ну- is used in Ukrainian: колоти - коль-ну-ти, штовхати - штовх-ну-ти, копати - коп-ну-ти, нявкати - нявк-ну-ти, мек-ну-ти, etc.

The number of Ukrainian verbs formed by means of suffixes and prefixes is less numerous than their number in English. When formed from verbs, the following prefixes and suffixes are used: під-+-ува-: *підсвіч-ува-ти. підтак-ува-ти:* по-+-ува-/-юва: *посвист-ува-ти. почит-ува-ти.* за-+-ти-ся/-сь- *засидітись, забаритися',* з-/с-, зі+-ся *зійтись, змовитися;* роз-+-ся: *розлетітись, роз'їхатися:* над-+-и-: *надкусити, надломити, по-надломлюв-а-ти.*

Similarly formed are also verbs from noun stems/roots: *земля - заземлити:* from adverbial stems: *інакіие - переінакшити:* from adjectival stems: *швидкий - пришвидчити:* from pronominal stems (never used in English to form verbs): *свій - присвоювати:* from the stems of numerals: *троє - потроювати: двоє - подвоїти.*

Classes of Verbs in English vs. Ukrainian

The main classes of verbs as to their functional significance are common in the contrasted languages. These are a) notional verbs (go, *ask, write; іти, запитувати, писати)* and b) auxiliary verbs. The latter split into primary *(be, do, have; бути, мати),* modal *(can, may, must, could, should, need; могти, мусити, сміти, мати,* etc.) and linking verbs *(appear, look, become turn grow; ставати, здавати-ся).*

English lexical/nominal verbs split into two subclasses which are not

233

available in Ukrainian. These are 1) regular verbs forming their past stem and the past participle with the help of the ending, -ed, -d or -t *(dressed/worked, paid/said, learnt/sent);* 2) irregular verbs having their past stems and the past participle formed by way of alteration of their base vowel *(bind - bound - bound, take - took - taken, begin - began - begun).* Some irregular verbs also have vowel mutation + the past indefinite/past participle -d or -t ending *(tell - told - told, keep - kept - kept, think - thought - thought).* There are also some mixed-type verbs in English *(show — showed - shown, crow — crew — crowed).* *A* separate subclass of irregular verbs form the so-called invariables, which have the same form for the present and past stem/past participle, eg: *cast - cast - cast, cost - cost - cost, let - let - let, put - put - put,* etc. They are not available in Ukrainian, thought suppletive verbs are common, however, (cf. *be* - was - *were, go - went; бути - є, іти - пішов, пішла, брати - взяв, узяли).*

The subdivision of verbs into classes is based in Ukrainian on the correlation between the infinitival stem of the verb on the one hand and its present or simple future stem on the other. On this morphological basis thirteen classes of verbs are distinguished in Ukrainian (Table 18). In the first class of verbs the infinitival stem has the suffixes **-ува-/-юва,** and the present tense stem the suffix -уj-/-іоj, -j-: *куп-ува-ти - куп-уj-ють; танц-юва-ти - танц-уj-уть; лупц-юва-ти - лупц-уj-уть.*

The verbs of the second class have the suffix **-ва-** in the infinitival stem and the suffix **ва-** in the present tense/simple future stem: бува-ти -/по/бу-ваj-уть. The verbs of the third class have the suffix -а-/-я- in the infinitival stem and the suffix **-аj-** in the present/simple future stem: *баж-а-ти - баж-аj-уть, стріл-я-ти - стріл-я/-уть.* In the fourth class are verbs with the -і- suffix in the infinitival stem and the -і- suffix in the present/simple future stem: *чорн-і-ти - чор-ну-уть; шал-і-ти - шал-іj-уть.* In the fifth class the verbs have the -а-/-я- suffix in the infinitival stem, the zero suffix in the present/simple future tense stem and the **-уть/-ють** ending in the third person plural: *брати - бер-уть, сл-а-ти - шл-ють, смі-я-тися - сміj-уться.* In the sixth class are verbs with the -і- suffix in the infinitival stem and the zero suffix in the present stem: *рев-і-ти — рев-уть, хот-і-ти — хоч-уть* (Table 18).

234

Table 18

Morphological Classes of Ukrainian Verbs

Class	Suffixes		Verbs Representing the Class		Dec lens
	Infiniti-val Stem	Present Stem	Infinitive	Present Tense	
I	-ува- /-ЮВЗ-/ -ва-	-уj- -Юj- -j-	буд-ува-ти прац-юва-ти да-ва-ти	буд-уj-у /-еш, -уть/ прац-ку-у /-еш, -уть/ да-j-у /еш, -уть/	I
II	-ва-	-ваj-	бу-ва-ти	бу-ваj-у /-еш, -уть/	I
III	-з-/-я-/	-аj- /-аj-/	пуск-а-ти рівн-я-ти	пуск-аj-у /-еш, -уть/ рівн-яj-у /-еш, -уть/	I
IV	- і -	/-іj-/	сив-і-ти біл-і-ти	сив-іj-у /-еш, -уть/ біл-іj-у /-еш, -уть/	I
V	-а-/-я-/	0	каз-а-ти смі-я-тися	каж-у /-еш,-уть/ сму-уся /-ешся, -уться/	I
VI	-і-	0	рев-і-ти хот-1-ти	рев-у /-еш, -уть/ хоч-у /-еш, -уть/	I
VII	-ну- -ону-	-н- -он-	крик-ну-ти трус-ону-ти	крик-н-у /-еш, -уть/ трус-он-у /-еш, -уть/	I
VIII	0	0	нес-ти, вес-ти мести, плив-ти	нес-у /вед-у /-еш, -уть/ мет-у /плив-у /-еш, -уть/	I
IX	0	-j-	ри-ти, кри-ти ви-ти, пи-ти	ри-j-у /кри-j-у/ -еш, -уть/ ви-j-у /n-j-у/ -еш, -уть/	I
X	-и- /-і-/	0	вод-и-ти поj-и-ти	водж-у/вод-иш, вод-ять/ noj-у /-іш, -ать/	II
XI	-а-	0	крич-а-ти, мовч-а-ти	крич-у /-иш, -ать/ мовч-у /-иш, -ать/	II
XII	-і-	0	гор-і-ти, лет-і-ти	гор-ю/-иш, -ять леч-у лет-иш, лет-ять/	II
XIII	0	0	біг-ти	біж-у /біж-иш, біж-ать/	II

Verbs of the seventh class have the -ну- (-ону-) suffix in the infinitival stem and the -н- (-ну-) suffix in the simple future tense stem: *гукну-ти, гук-н-уть, крик-ну-ти, крик-н-уть.* Verbs of the eighth class have a zero suffix in each of the two stems and the ending -уть- in the

third person plural: *нес-ти - нес-утъ, вез-ти - вез-утъ*. Verbs of the ninth class have a zero suffix in the infinitival stem, a -j- suffix in the present tense stem and the ending **-утъ-** in the third person plural: *ри-ти - ри-j-утъ, кри-ти - кри-j-утb*. Verbs of the tenth class have the -и-(-І-) suffix in the infinitival stem, a zero suffix in the present tense stem and the **-атъ-** ending in the third person plural: *вод-ити - еодж-у, вод-j-а-тъ, по-j-іти — по-j-у, по-j-атъ*.

Verbs of the eleventh class have an -a- suffix in the infinitival stem, a zero suffix in the present tense stem and the **-атъ-** ending in the third person plural: *крич-у - крич-атъ, мовч-у - мовч-атъ*.

Verbs of the twelfth class have an -i- suffix in the infinitival stem and a zero suffix in the present stem: *гор-і-ти - гор-ю, лет-і-ти - леч-у*. Verbs of the thirteenth class have a 0 suffix in both the stems and the ending **-атъ-** in the third person plural: *біг-ти - біж-атъ*. According to their paradigmatic features, verbs of classes I — IX belong to the first declension group, and the rest (classes X — XIII) are of the second declension group. These structural classes of verbs differ from each other by their productivity. The most productive are the first, the third, the fourth, the fifth and the ninth classes. All remaining classes (the second, the sixth, the seventh, the eighth, the tenth, the eleventh, the twelfth, and the thirteenth) are either semantically closed or poorly represented as it is the case with the last two of them.

Note. The personal endings of verbs of the first and of the second declensions do not coincide in Ukrainian as can be seen from the examples below:

Declension I	Declension II
я буваю ми буваємо	я ходжу ми ходимо
ти буваєш ви буваєте	ти ходиш ви ходите
він буває вони бувають	він ходить вони ходять

As regards their role in expressing predicativity, verbs in the contrasted languages may be a) of *complete predication* or b) of *incomplete predication*. Verbs of complete predication split into some common groups singled out on the basis of their implicit dependent grammatical meanings. These groups are:

236

1. Subjective verbs (always intransitive) like *to act, to go, to sleep, to glisten (діяти, йти, спати, блищати* and others). 2. Objective verbs (only transitive): *to give, to take, to envy (брати, давати, заздрити* and others). 3. Terminative verbs, expressing action having final aims *(to close, to open, to come, to find; зачиняти, приходити, заходити).* 4. Durative verbs, expressing action with no final aim: *to like, to love, to hate, to hope, to work (подобатись, любити, ненавидіти).* 5. Mixed- type verbs, which can have both terminative and durative meaning: *to sit, to stand, to know, to remember (сидіти, стояти, знати, пам'ятати, etc).*

6. Reflexive verbs, which are formed in English with the help of reflexive pronouns: *oneself, myself, himself, ourselves: to wash oneself, to shave himself; to see herself in the mirror,* etc.

Reflexive verbs in Ukrainian have some peculiar allomorphic features. Regular equivalents to English verbs can be observed only in the group of the so-called *reflexive verbs proper (to wash oneself, to dress oneself, to shave oneself, to powder oneself,* etc.), which have also corresponding forms in Ukrainian *(вмиватися, голитися, одягатися, пудритися, купатися,* etc.).

Other groups of Ukrainian reflexive verbs have no equivalents in English" and form an allomorphic feature in the contrasted languages. These verbs are identified as follows:

1. Reciprocally reflexive/взаємно-зворотні: *зустрічатися, змагатися, вітатися, листуватись, цілуватись.* 2. Indirectly reflexive/непрямо-зворотні: *радитися, збиратися (в похід), лаштуватися (в дорогу).* 3. Generally reflexive/загально-зворотні: *милуватися, дивуватися, злитися, журитися, мучитися* and others. 4. Active-objectless/reflexive verbs (активно-безоб'єктні) *кусатися* (собака кусається), *хвицатися* (корова хвицається), *дряпатися* (кішка дряпається), *жалитися* (кропива жалиться), *колотися* (стерня колеться). 5. Passively-qualitative/reflexive пасивно-якісні: *гнутися, битися, ламатися, м'ятися, колотися* (дерево гарно колеться), *кривитися* (залізо гнеться, скло б'ється, дитина кривиться). 6. Impersonal-reflexive verbs/безособово-зворотні: *не спиться, не їсться, погано/гарно живеться, не лежиться* (Cf. the Ukrainian folk-song: I не спиться й не лежиться, I сон мене не бере...).

237

Note. Closely connected with impersonal and reflexive verbs in Ukrainian are a number of impersonal verbs used to form impersonal sentences. These verbs constituting semantically different groups are as follows: *вечоріє, дніє, сіріє, розвидняється, примерзає, нудить, хочеться, віриться; не було, не стало, таланить; бракує, виста-чає* and others.

Verbs of incomplete predication are of isomorphic nature. They are presented in English and Ukrainian in four common groups, which are as follows:

1. Auxiliary verbs *(to be, to do, to have, shall/will),* which are used in English in the corresponding person and tense form to express the following categorial meanings of the verb: a) the continuous aspect, i. e. the present, the past and future continuous/progressive tenses (*/ am/ **was,** shall be reading);* the interrogative and negative or future tense forms of the Indefinite group of tenses *(**Does** he speak English? He **did** not know me. **Will he** come soon?);* the imperative mood/imperative and incentive meanings: ***Do*** it now! ***Do*** come, please! The perfect aspect forms of the verb: I ***have*** done it. He ***had*** had his dinner by then already. We ***shall have*** translated the text by then. To express the so-called subjunctive form of the verb: He ordered that everybody ***be*** present. Whoever you *be* you have no right to offend him.

To express other subjunctive mood forms: His aunt ***would not give*** the photograph. (Hardy) I suggest we ***should meet*** here. (Snow) I wish / ***were*** fifteen. (Maugham) "If they could be answered, surely they'd ***have been*** answered by now." (Ibid). Auxiliary verbs in Ukrainian are restricted only to one verb ***бути,*** which is polyfunctional and is used to form some categorial meanings: a) the passive voice (текст *був* пе-рекладений); b) the analytical future tense form (текст ***буде*** пере-кладений); c) some subjunctive mood forms (якби я *був* знав, я *був* ***би*** прийшов); d) the pluperfect tense form, which fully corresponds to the English past perfect. (Cf. Ніби й ***задрімав був*** зразу, але щось приверзлося, то й проснувся. (Головко) Я ***заходив був*** до вас якось улітку, але вас не застав тоді вдома).

2. Close to the auxiliary by their function (and often by their lexi-cal meaning, too) are English and Ukrainian ***modal verbs.*** Their num-ber and nomenclature is larger in English (allomorphism) than in Ukrainian. Cf.:

English: can, may, must, should, **Ukrainian:** вміти, могти, мусити, would, ought (to), have/be, shall, слід/треба, мати (маєш знати, він will, dare, daresay, need. має бути), сміти, потребувати.

Linking verbs (дієслова-зв'язки) in both contrasted languages form a verbal, nominal or mixed-type compound predicate. They fall into three main groups:

1. Linking verbs of being, which do not always have direct equiv alents in English and Ukrainian. Cf. *to be, to feel, to look, to seem, to taste, to smell — бути, виявлятися, зватися, вважатися, доводитися* (He *looks* young/tired) or in Ukrainian: Це *зветься* роботою. Це *здається* правдою).

2. Linking verbs of becoming (not all of which have equiva lents in Ukrainian): *to become, to get, to grow, to turn — ставати, робитися (They grew* stronger/Вони *стали* міцнішими. Ліс *зробився* рудим.). He *became* a teacher — Він *став* учителем. But: He *turned* gray/ Він посивів. Вона постаріла. *She grew* older.

3. Linking verbs of remaining (to remain, to keep, to stay, to continue): He remained silent/satisfied. Він зостався задоволений. The winter *continued damp* and *wet. (Cronin)* The weather *kept* obsti nately *hot* and *dry. (*Wells) Погода вперто *стояла жаркою і сухою.*

Ways of Expressing Morphological Categories of the English and Ukrainian Verb

The finite verb in the contrasted languages has *six* common mor phological categories which are realised partly with the help of syn thetic means (inflexions) and partly through different analytical means. Thus, the categories of person and number are realised in both contrasted languages synthetically, whereas the category of tense is realised both synthetically and analytically; the category of aspect is realised in English synthetically or analytically (continuous) but only synthetically in Ukrainian; the category of voice is realised only ana lytically in English but it may be realised synthetically and analyti cally in Ukrainian. Similarly with the category of mood, which is real ised in both languages synthetically and analytically.

An illustrative presentation of these ways of realisation of all above-named morphological categories is given in Table 19 below.

Table 19

Morphological category	Means of Realisation in the Contrasted Languages	
	In English	In Ukrainian
Person	I know. He knows. She is. We are.	Я знаю. Він/вона знає. Воно знає. Ми знаємо. Ви знаєте. Вони зна-
Number	He reads. They read good books.	Він читає. Вони читають книжки.
Tenses (present, past, future) 1. Absolute use of tenses	I work. He works. I worked. He *will work.* He *said* she had been *seen* in London. They asked if 1 could translate that passage into Japanese.	Я працюю. Я працював. Він читає. Він читав. Він читатиме. Він *буде* читати весь свій вік. Він *прокинувся був, а* потім знову заснув.
2. Relative use of tenses [47, *144 — 146*	/ when he comes she will ask — when he came/had come \ when he will come	/ Де він мешкає тепер я запитаю — Де він мешкав \ Де він мешкатиме потім
Aspect (common, continuous, perfect)	He *works.* He *is working* (common/ continuous). He *will* work. He *will be* working (future). He *has worked* (perfect).	Він *читав.* Він *прочитав* це. Вона *зараз тренується.* Дощ *пройшов.* (недоконаний — доконаний вид)
Voice (active - passive)	He reads much. The house *is/was built.* The house is *being built.* It *will be/will have been built.*	Хату ставлять. Хата збудована/ *була, буде збудована.* Хід зроблено. Школу відкрито/ буде відкри-то
Mood	Indicative: We *love our* parents. Will he come? He has taken the exam. Imperative: Don't speak so loud! Let me sing you. Let us sing you smth. Subjunctive: Come what may! If she had come, he would have met her. Had 1 been there, I would have helped him.	Ми *любимо* своїх батьків. Чи прийдете ви взавтра? Він склав іспит. Не розмовляйте так голосно! Сядьте. Нум я вам заспіваю! Будь, що буде! Було б краще мабуть піти. Якби він був прийшов, він був би зустрівся з нею.

The tabulated examples above testify to the existence of both iso-morphic and allomorphic features in the nomenclature and means of expressing some morphological categories of the verb in the contrasted languages.

Generally common, with the exception of the continuous aspect, which is not available in Ukrainian, is the nomenclature and nature of the exist-

240

ing morphological categories of the verb. Absolute isomorphism is also observed in the means of realisation of the following morphological categories in the contrasted languages:

1. Person and number (with the help of synthetic means, i. e. forms of words and their inflexions. Cf. He *is* - they *are,* I was - they *were.* She works - the works. Я пишу - ви пишете. Я писав — ми писали.

2. The imperative mood forms with no reference to a definite person, as in the following sentences: Stop talking! Sit still! Let us sing. Не розмовляти! Сидіти тихо! Нумо заспіваємо. Нум я вам розповім.

3. The affirmative and some interrogative forms of the Indefinite group of tenses and of the pluperfect (давноминулий) tense: I **work. I worked. I shall work.** He **had left** before I arrived. Я працюю. Я працював. Я ***буду працювати.*** Він якось **заходив був,** але мене тоді не застав на роботі.

4. *Isomorphism* also exists a) in the correlation of the time of action in the matrix close with the time of the expressed action in the subordinate clause: He **says** she *lives* in Kyiv. He *said* she **lived** in Kyiv. He *will* **say** she **will** *live* in Kyiv. Or: she will say that she lived in Kyiv or she thought that she ***came/would come.*** Or: 1 thought she *had* ***come.*** Similarly in Ukrainian: Він *каже,* що вона **прийшла;** він *скаже,* що вона *прийде/що* вона вже приходила; він *казав,* що вона **приходила/ приходила була;** b) Isomorphism is also observed in the existence of tenses not correlating with the time of actions expressed in the matrix/ main clause, eg: He -*will say* that he *knows/ knew,* ***had known*** it. Він *скаже,* що вона ***пришила (приходила) приходила була;*** c) Iso morphism is likewise observed in the existence of some identical forms expressing those same subjunctive mood meanings referring to present or future or to some past action/event. For example:

In English	In Ukrainian Якби я
If I *knew* that before, I would come.	***знав*** це раніше, *я б прийшов.*
If **I *had known*** that before, I *would have come.*	Якби **я *був знав*** це раніше, я *був би* прийшов.
Were she at home then, she *would come.*	***Була б*** вона в той час удома, вона *прийшла б.*
Had **I *known*** that before, *I would have come.*	***Знав би я був*** це раніше, я *був би прийшов.*

241

d) *Isomorphism* is also observed in both languages in the existence of analytical passive voice forms in the past and Future Indefinite tense: He *was invited.* She *will/will not be invited.* Він *був запрошений.* Вона *буде/не буде запрошена.*

Besides, allomorphic features find their expression in the ways of realisation of some morphological categories in English and Ukrainian. These allomorphic ways are observed in the following:

1. In the use of analytical paradigms in English to express tense, aspect and voice forms, as well as in negative/interrogative forms like: He **is** *read ing* now. ***Is* he** *reading* now? *Does/did* he speak English? The passage **is** ***being translated*** The article ***will have been translated*** by then, etc.

2. In the absence in Ukrainian of the continuous aspect, whose durative meaning can be expressed by the transitive verb stems with the suffixes - сь, **-ся** and a corresponding adverb/adverbial phrase identifying the mo ment/period of action. Cf. Петренко ***зараз/ще, вже,*** давно/будується. Школа *ще* (тоді) ***будувалась/будуватиметься.***

3. Allomorphism exists in the expression of the category of person in Ukrainian imperative mood forms which is alien to English. For example: Пиши! (Ти пиши!) Пишіть! (Ви пишіть!) Іди! Будьмо/будьте здорові! Встань! Встаньте! Не вір! Не вірте!

Analytical imperative mood forms may have corresponding personal pronouns in English with the verb let (Let ***me*** say. Let ***him/us*** say. Let them **come/say** it). The corresponding Ukrainian forms have the particles ***нум*** *or* ***нумо*** (for singular or plural forms respectively) and also person and number inflexions of the notional verb. Cf. *Нум я* запитаю. ***Нумо*** заспівайте! ***Нумо*** до праці, брати! (Б. Грінченко)

4. Isomorphism and allomorphism is observed in the expression of the passive voice in English and Ukrainian. 1) Isomorphic is the analytical way of expression of this morphological category, i.e. with the help of the aux iliary verb to be + past participle: Лист ***був написаний.*** Лист ***буде написаний.*** Alongside of this participial predicative forms in **-но, -то** are used: Лист ***буде написано.*** Все, зрештою, ***було забуто.*** Питання про ліквідацію боргів заводом з порядку денного ***не було знято.*** 2) Allomorphic are forms of expressing the passive voice synthetically that are observed in Ukrainian. These forms are realised a) by means of inflex ions of the past participle: Стаття написана. Текст перекладений. Жито

242

скошене. Фрески відновлені. b) With the help of the postfixes **-сь, -ся** added to the non-perfective verbs in the indicative mood: Хата будується/ будувалась. Місток зводиться. Проект тільки готувавсь, c) With the help of the mentioned predicative participles in **-но, -то:** Музей зачинено. Питання розв'язано. Ворога розбито. Нічого не забуто. A peculiar feature of passive constructions in English is their much more frequent use than in Ukrainian. This is accounted for a) the use of some English irregular verbs as regular: The office *is run* by Mr. Brown. The dog was *walked by* Ann; b) the use of any of the two direct objects as subjects of the sentence in the passive voice: Mother *forgave* Dora her drawbacks; Dora *was forgiven* her drawbacks... Dora's drawbacks *were forgiven* by her mother; c) the use of prepositional objects as subjects in the passive voice: He *was taken* care *of,* d) the use of the past participle as a nominal part of the predicate: He *was seated,* pen in hand, at the table... (Cronin). "Is he generally *liked?"* (Bronte).

Typology of the Non-Finite Forms of the Verb (Verbals)

The nomenclature of verbals in the contrasted languages includes some common/isomorphic and some divergent/allomorphic forms. Common are the *infinitive* and the two participles; divergent are *the gerund* in English and *the diyepryslivnyk* in Ukrainian. Far from identical are the morphological categories pertaining to these non-finite forms of the verb. Thus, verbals from transitive verbs have the following categorial distinctions in these two contrasted languages (Table 20).

Table 20

English versus Ukrainian Verbals

Verbal	English	Ukrainian
Infinitive	*active:* to ask; to understand *passive:* to be asked; to be understood	*активний:* запитувати *пасивний:* бути запитаним
Non-progressive	*active:* to ask somebody *perfect:* to have asked somebody *passive:* to have been asked by smb.	*недоконаного виду:* лить, цвісти, їсти; *доконаного виду:* збити, зацвісти, відцвісти, поспати, попоїсти
Progressive infinitive	*active:* to be asking somebody *perfect:* to have been asking somebody	not available not available

Verbal	English	Ukrainian
Gerund	*active:* asking *passive:* being asked *active perfect:* having asked *passive perfect:* having been asked	Gerund - not available *Діє-прислівник* активний теперішнього часу: йдучи, маючи, знаючи, очі-куючи *активніш минулого часу:* йшовши, мавши, знавши, за/почекавши
Participle I	*Present active:* asking *passive:* being asked *Perfect active:* having asked *Perfect passive:* having been asked	*Дієприкметник активний* теперіш-нього часу: читаючий, читаюча, читаюче, мигаючий, мигаюча, мига-юче *активний минулого часу:* пере-мігший, здолавший, усміхнений
Participle II	*Passive (only past):* asked, made, decided, seen, purchased, etc.	*пасивний минулого часу:* запроше-ний, пройдений, здійснений

The tabulated forms of verbals in both languages above testify to the existence of allomorphisms both in their structural forms and in their categorical meanings. Thus, the English infinitive is always distinguished by its identifier "to" *(to come, to be asked, to be doing),* whereas the Ukrainian infinitive is characterised by the suffixes **-ти, -ть, -тись, -тися.** The suffix **-ти** is always added to the stem ending in a consonant (бігти, везти, сісти), and the suffix -ть, like the suffix **-тися/ -тись,** may be added to a stem ending either in a vowel or in a consonant (носити/ носить, носитися/носитись; їхати/їхать, сія-ти/сіять).

Specifically Ukrainian, as was pointed out, is the diminutive infinitive formed by combined suffixes: спатки, **спатоньки,** спатусі, спа-тусеньки, купці, **купоньки, сістоньки, їстоньки.**

Allomorphism is observed in the categorical meanings of the infinitive and the participle. The infinitive in Ukrainian has no **perfect** (perfective) **passive form, no continuous** aspect form, **no perfect active and perfect passive** forms of the Participle that are pertained to present-day English. Cf. to have slept, to be sleeping, to have been seen; having been asked/having asked, etc.

The gerund and the diyepryslivnyk present allomorphic verbals in English and Ukrainian respectively. As a result, they can not be contrasted in any way. The gerund has both verbal and noun characteristics, the former being those of tense and voice *(asking — being asked, having*

244

asked — having been asked) and the ability of taking an objective complement: I like *reading books,* as well as the ability of being modified by an adverb: *Going quickly* never tiers him. The noun characteristics of the gerund find their expression in its functions in the sentence as subject, object, the predicative part, the attribute, and as an adverbial modifier of manner. For example, as subject and predicative: *Deciding* is *acting.* (Saying). As object: He won't stand *beating.* As an attribute: She found an opportunity *of taking* him away. As adverbial modifiers: The Mouse shook its head impatiently *without opening its eyes.* (L. Carroll) The rain poured down *without ceasing.* (Maugham) *On arriving* at the garden entrance, he stopped to look at the view. (Galsworthy) The gerund can also be a complex subject, a complex object and other parts of the sentence (cf. *His being* ill is unknown to me. That was his *being ill* that spoiled everything. I know nothing of *his being ill),* etc.

The Ukrainian diyepryslivnyk, whether active or passive or non-perfective present and perfective past, remains an indeclinable verbal form. The diyepryslivnyk may be formed, respectively, from the present stem of the verb or from the infinitive of both the transitive and intransitive verbs. The imperfective (present) diyepryslivnyk is formed from the present stem of the verb belonging to the first verbal declension by adding the suffix **-учи/-ючи.** Cf. *нес/уть* + -учи: *несучи;* працю/ють + -ючи — *працюючи.* Cf. *Слухаючи* їх жартівливу розмову, уверне слівце й од себе. (Нечуй-Левицький)

Perfective (past) diyepryslivnyk is formed from the infinitival stems with the help of the suffix **-ши,** added to the stem that ends in a consonant, or the suffix **-вши** that is added to the stem of perfective and non-perfective verbs which end in a consonant: *донес/ти* + -ши — *донісши; привез/ти/* + -ши — *привізши* and *similarly~знавши, пивши, ївши,* etc. When the infinitival stem ends in a vowel, the suffix -вши is added: *здола/ти/* + -вши — *здолавши; побачи/ти/* + -вши — *побачивши.* Cf. *Устромивши* люльку в рот і *закривши* очі, він ще потроху пахкав. (Панас Мирний)

Perfective and imperfective diyepryslivnyks may also be formed from verbs having the postfix [Грищенко 2002:387] **-ся/-сь: Хвилюючись,** все ще не *опам'ятавшись,* солдат розповідав про себе. (Гончар) Similarly in турбуючись, **милуючись, дивуючись,** etc.

The semantic and functional equivalents to the imperfective (present) and perfective (past) diyepryslivnyks in English are indefinite or perfect participles (both active and passive) performing the functions of the adverbial modifiers of time: "...while *working* so hard he needed sea air" (Galsworthy); or attending circumstances: Clara sat in the cool parlour *reading.* (Lawrence); the adverbial modifiers of cause: *"Being tired* he thought of sleep." (J. K. Jerome); and that of result: ...*having seen* all that was to be seen he came out. (Galsworthy), etc.

The functions of the infinitive and the participles in the sentence generally coincide in both languages, though Ukrainian participles have gender, number and case distinctions, which are lost by their English corresponding equivalent verbals. Cf. gender and number categories: *працюючий, працююча, працююче* (колесо); number and case: *працюючого, працюючому, працюючим; працююча, працюючої; працюючі, працюючих, працюючим, працюючими,* etc.

Allomorphic for the Ukrainian language are some syntactic functions pertained to English participles and infinitives which may form with some classes of verbs (for example, those of the physical and mental perceptions) complex parts of the sentence. These parts of the sentence are completely alien to Ukrainian, cf: He was *seen to go/going* home. We heard *him sing/singing.* He wants me *to be reading. The lesson (being) over,* the students went to the reading-hall. Each of these secondary predication complexes, with the only exception of the for-to-infinitive construction, has a subordinate clause for its equivalent in Ukrainian: Бачили, *як він ішов/коли він ішов* додому. Ми чули, *як він співає/ співав. Після того/оскільки заняття закінчилося,* студенти пішли до читальної зали.

Other Peculiar Features of English and Ukrainian Verbs

Not only verbals with their nomenclature, forms, meanings and functions have in each contrasted language some peculiarities of their own. Allomorphisms are also observed in the formation of Ukrainian perfective verbs for which various prefixes are used. The main of them are as follows: з-, е-, за-, **на-, по-, пра-, про-:** казати - сказати, родити -

зародити, сидіти - засидіти, жити - нажити, їсти - поїсти, ходити - приходити, грати - програти/виграти, etc.

There also exist correlating pairs of perfective verbs formed on the basis of the counteropposition of non-perfective vs. (versus) perfective aspect. Cf. жити - зжити/зажити, пхатись - впхатись, гнати - пригнати/загнати. Ukrainian suffixes may also be used to form imperfective verbs from perfective ones. These suffixes are: -ува-, -юва-, -овува, -ва, -а: відшукати - відшукувати, скупити - скуповувати, зігріти - зігрівати, оббити - оббивати, оцінити - оцінювати, etc.

Similarly formed in Ukrainian are some imperfective verbs from perfective ones with the help of the correlating suffixes -и- vs. -а-, -і- vs. -а-, -е- vs. -й-. For example: кінчити - кінчати, лишити - лишати, пустити - пускати. These suffixes can also express some other aspective meanings in Ukrainian. Cf. летіти - літати, котити - качати, нести - носити.

Allomorphism in Ukrainian expression of aspective meanings can be observed also in conveying some tinges of meaning via perfective verbs. For example, to express momentous action which is conveyed by the suffixes -ну- and -ону-: гукати - гукнути, стукати - стукнути, смикати - смикнути, кусати - куснути, рубати - рубнути and рубонути, цмокати - цмокнути, махати - махнути and махонути.

Present-day Ukrainian has also a small group of preffixless verbs which express both perfective as well as non-perfective meanings that can be formed within the microtext. Cf: *веліти, вітати, атакувати, женити, наслідувати, телеграфувати, телефонувати.* For example: Викладач *велів* перекласти текст (perfective aspect). Живи, як *велить* тобі Біблія (non-perfective aspect).

Similar verbs are observed in English as well. Thus, durative and terminative (corresponding to Ukrainian perfective) verbs in English are the following: *to kneel, to know, to sit, to stand, to remember.* Cf: He always *sits* in the armchair. But: he went to the table and sat close to her. Or: He stood at the table (non-perfective) and: He went and stood (termin.) at the table.

Non-perfective (i.e. durative action) express the following English verbs: *to admire, to esteem, to detest, to hate, to hope, to love, to lie, to smoke, to sleep, to work, to watch, to possess, to want, to move, etc.*

Constantly non-perfective in Ukrainian are also some a) prefixless verbs as *гидувати, гордувати, гребувати, вимагати, мислити, чекати, ворогувати, ледарювати, працювати, говорити, стежити,* and others; b) prefixal verbs formed from verbs denoting unrestricted (non-terminative in English) meanings which denote thinking, perception of some action and are used with the prefix **no-:** *погукувати, поспівувати, почитувати, пописувати, потріскувати, посвистувати,* etc.

Note. Only perfective, i.e. corresponding to English terminative verbs are the following Ukrainian verbs formed with the help of the prefixes ***від-, за-, на-, по-, про-, раз-:*** *відправляти, відбути, відпрацювати, запрацювати, замирити/замиритися, надуматися, нажитися, натерпітися, навчитися, повчитися, по/пробідкуватися, поплавати, поплакати, провчитися, походити,* and some others.

Both English and Ukrainian have also transitive and intransitive verbs which are of the same semantic class, as the following transitive or objective verbs: *take - брати, think - думати, read - читати, build -будувати, construct - конструювати, find - знаходити,* etc. Intransitive or subjective verbs: *to sleep ~ спати, to walk - ходити,to go - йти, to come - приходити, to sit - сидіти, to lie - лежати, to rise — вставати,* etc. The English language, however, has more transitive verbs as several intransitive verbs may become in some contexts transitive. Cf. to run the office, to walk the dog, to fell (trees), etc.

Typological Characteristics of the Adverb

The adverb in English and Ukrainian is an indeclinable notional word expressing the quality or state of an action, the circumstances in which the action proceeds, or a degree of some other quality. Adverbs in English and Ukrainian have some common, as well as some divergent features in their morphological structure and partly in their syntactic functions. Thus, English adverbs are mostly formed with the help of the suffixes **-ly** *(greatly, slowly),* **-ward/-wards** *(seaward, eastwards),* **-ways** *(sideways),* **-fold** *(twofold)* and partly with the help of the prefixes -a- *(aback, aside; astride)* and **be-** *(before, besides).*

Adverbs in Ukrainian may be formed by means of suffixes, eg: -о *(гарно, надійно),* -е *(добре, зле),* -а *(дарма, лежма),* -и *(полюдськи, по-французьки),* **-ому** *(по-їхньому),* -ему *(по-моєму, по-своєму)* and by means of prefixes and suffixes (combined), eg: **по-** *(по-людськи, по-свинськи),* най- *(найкраще, найзручніше),* **щонай-** *(щонайбільше);* **якнай-** *(якнайшвидше).*

Several prefixes in Ukrainian and some in English (cf. *ahead, across, beside, outside,* etc.) form adverbs from other parts of speech. Thus, the prefix в-/у- in Ukrainian may form adverbs from nouns in direct and indirect cases or from numerals, eg: в + *гору — вгору,* в + *день — удень/вдень,* в + *друге — вдруге,* в-/у-+ *третє — втретє/утретє.* A characteristic feature of Ukrainian adverbs is their correlation with indirect case forms of prepositional nouns, for example: 1) adverbs correlating with the genitive case forms of nouns and the prepositions **без, від/од, до,** з/с, **за:** *безвісти, безперестанку, відразу/одразу, догори, додому, зранку, зрання, скраю, спочатку,* etc.; 2) adverbs correlating with the accusative case forms of nouns and the prepositions в/у, **на, за, над, під, по, через:** *вдень/удень, вмить/умить, надвечір, навіки, заміж, надвір, підряд, повік,* **через силу,** etc; 3) adverbs correlating in Ukrainian with nouns in the instrumental case and the lexicalisation of different phrases: *водночас, насамперед, напівдорозі, віч-на-віч, всього-на-всього, пліч-о-пліч, день у день, нога в ногу, рік у рік,* etc. Consequently, they correspond to the following English compound adverbs and adverbial phrases: *day-long, henceforward, upside-down, moreover, therefore, within, by chance, by heart, by turns, one by one, day in day out,* etc.

Equally common in both languages is the formation of adverbs by way of reduplication, eg: so-so, *willy-nilly, fifty-fifty;* ось-ось, *ледве-ледве, скоро-скоро, тихо-тихо,* etc.

A morphologically common group present pronominal adverbs (simple and compound) which are of the same roots as their corresponding pronouns. These adverbs indicate in a relative way time, place, direction or manner in which the action/state proceeds. Some of these English adverbs do not always have their Ukrainian equivalents that are tabulated below (Table 21).

249

Table 21

Lexico-Syntactic Classes of Adverbs

Language Meaning	Time	Place	Direction	Manner
English	now, then, when, today, soon	here, there, where, nowhere	hence, thence, whence, inside, inwards	hence, now, how, so
Ukrainian	доти, іноді, тоді, коли, скоро, сьогодні	всюди, куди, туди, де, ніде, там, тут	туди, сюди, звідти, вліво, вправо, назад	так, сяк, як відтак, отак, сяк-так

In accordance with their lexico-syntactic meaning, adverbs in the contrasted languages fall under the following three main divisions: 1) qualifying adverbs denoting the quality or state of an action; 2) adverbs expressing the manner in which the action is performed, and 3) adverbs giving a quantitative characteristics of an action/quality. These adverbs modify the verb, the adjective, or the adverb (cf. ***to pronounce*** sounds ***distinctly вимовляти*** звуки ***виразно).***

Qualifying adverbs in both languages may be qualitative *(badly, fast, slowly, well* — **погано, добре, швидко, повільно)** or those denoting manner of action *(unawares, upside-down, topsy-turvy, by chance — нехотячи, догори дном, випадково, несвідомо, спроквола).*

Qualitative adverbs also include adverbs of degree (denoting the degree of a quantity: *almost, entirely, too, rather, enough, almost — майже, цілком, дуже, досить, досить-таки).* These adverbs in English and Ukrainian express the intensity of an action, eg: "She ***scarcely knew*** her neighbours yet." (Lawrence) "1 was ***completely*** happy". (Galsworthy) or quantity: almost nine, almost two-thirds. Вона **майже** не знала ще своїх сусідів. Я був ***цілком щасливий.*** **Десь** було **біля** десяти. **Майже** дві третіх.

Qualitative adverbs in both contrasted languages may be used in the comparative and superlative degrees. They are formed with the help of synthetic or analytical means. Synthetic means are suffixes -er, **-est** in English and **-ше, -іше, -ній** in Ukrainian. Unlike English, however, in Ukrainian prefixes are also used to form the superlative degree of qualitative adverbs **(най-, щонай-, якнай-):** *найшвидше, найцікавіше,*

якнайшвидше, щонайменше, щонайбільше.

The analytical means include auxiliary words (adverbs, particles): *more, most, still more, less, least, still less* in English and their equivalent adverbs and particles in Ukrainian, eg: *often, oftener/more often, of-tenest/most often, less often, still more/less often, more slowly, less/ least slowly, ясно, ясніше, найясніше, більш/менш ясно, найбільш/ найменш ясно; ясно — ще ясніше/трохи ясніше, набагато ясніше.*

The suffix **-ій/-чій** is used to form the comparative degree of the adverbs *хутко — хутчій, мерщій.* Eg: *А йди хутчій.* (Л. Українка). *Біжи мерщій додому.*

A separate group in both languages constitute suppletive adverbs, whose grading is generally achieved by synthetic means, eg: *well, better, best; bad, worse, worst; little, less, least; far, further, furthest,* etc. There are fewer of such adverbs in Ukrainian: *добре, краще, найкраще; погано, гірше, найгірше; гарно, краще, найкраще.*

A particular (allomorphic for English) feature of many Ukrainian qualitative adverbs is their ability to take diminutive suffixes **(-еньк-, -есеньк-, -юсіньк-, -очк-, -ечк-)** and become diminutive: *гарно — гарненько — гарнесенько — гарнюсінько — гарнюньо; тоненько — тонюсінько; трохи — трішечки; рядочком, шнурочком,* etc.

Note. Ukrainian adverbs are often characterised by a shifting stress that differs from that in the word the adverb is derived from. Cf. *важний - валено, глибокий - глибоко, тонкий - тоненько, важкий - важко, смішний — смішно.* But: *завзятий — завзято, пихатий - пихато, день - вдень,* etc.

Qualitative adverbs in both languages include large groups of adverbs of manner, quantity or degree, which have corresponding equivalents in Ukrainian, eg: *aloud, how, aloof, upside down, by heart, in turn, one by one, almost, enough, entirely, rather, sufficiently, very — вголос, напам'ять, скоса, спросоння, догори дном, дуже, також, багато, більше, менше, ледве, надто, майже,* etc. These adverbs express the degree of a quality of an adjective or adverb, or the intensity of an action expressed by a verb. Cf. *less timid, very foggy, rather well; to read aloud, to read in turn менш боязкий, дуже туманна,*

251

читати вголос/по черзі, вчити напам'ять, добре знати.

The second large common group present adverbs denoting circumstances. They are :

1) adverbs of time: *now, always, then, today, tomorrow, just, so far, sooner or later - зараз, тоді, завжди, сьогодні, взавтра, щойно, рано чи пізно.* Here also belongs the negative adverb *never* that has other similar negative derivatives within adverbs of place (nowhere *ніде)* and adverbs of direction (nowhence *нізвідки,* nowhere/ nowhither *нікуди);* 2) adverbs of frequency/repetition of an action: *always, daily, frequently, twice, usually - завжди, щоденно, часто, двічі, звичайно;* 3) adverbs and adverbial phrases of place or direction of an action: *here, there, inside, inwards, outside, somewhere, nowhere, to and fro,* etc. *тут, там, надворі, десь, ніде, туди й сюди,* etc.; 4) a small group of adverbs in both contrasted languages is presented by those expressing cause and purpose. Eg.: *rashly згарячу* (Марків партнер палахнув *ізгарячу* в його з обріза. С. Васильченко); *headlong спрожогу/прожогом:* Петро *спрожогу* вибіг. (П. Мирний) Very few adverbs express also purpose, as for instance: *purposely/intentionally, deliberately навмисне.* Дерева, здавалось, *навмисно* заступають дорогу. (О. Донченко); *ostentationally напоказ:* Дами охали та пищали, кривлячи вуста та виставляючи *напоказ* які-то вони чулі та м'якого *серця.* (І. Франко).

An isomorphic feature is the existence in both languages of a large group of pronominal adverbs some of which are not available in English. Among these are: 1) interrogative and relative adverbs: *where, when, why, how - де, куди, коли, звідки, чому, як, поки, доки; 2)* demonstrative adverbs: *there, here, then, so — там, тут, сюди, туди, тоді, так;* 3) complementing adverbs: *always, everywhere, sometimes, otherwise — завжди, всюди, інколи, по-всякому, по-іншому;* 4) negative adverbs (more numerous in Ukrainian): *nowhere, never - ніде, нізвідки, нікуди, ніяк, нізащо;* 5) indefinite adverbs which are more numerous in Ukrainian as well: *ever, somehow, somewhere, erewhile - десь, де-небудь, колись, коли-небудь, кудись, чомусь, казна-звідки, казна-коли, хтозна-де, казна-куди,* etc.

Note. Completely allomorphic for English is the group of the so-called

252

"personal pronouns" adverbs available only in Ukrainian. They are as follows: *по-моєму, по-твоєму, по-нашому, по-вашому, по-наськи* and the reflexive adverb *по-своєму.* Their lexical equivalents in English are adverbial phrases like "in my opinion/ in my judgement, in your opinion, etc."

Also not available in English are some adverbs of comparison and likening (означально-уподіблювальні) as *соколом, стрілою, зозулею, по-батьківському, по-новому, по-осінньому,* etc. These and other adverbs of the kind have in English for their equivalents adverbial phrases like *in a fatherly way (по-батьковськи), like a falcon (соколом), in a new fashion (по-новому),* etc.

Syntactic Functions of Adverbs in English and Ukrainian

Adverbs in English and Ukrainian perform three main functions in the sentence serving as 1) Identifying complements (cf. *very* tall, *rather* better today, *дуже* високий, *значно* краще сьогодні); 2) As attributive adjuncts *(quite* a man, the voice *inside, майже* озеро, *внутрішній* голос, голос *ізнадвору);* 3) As different adverbial complements: of place (to live *here/there, everywhere* мешкати *тут/там, скрізь)',* of time (to arrive *today/soon* приїжджати *сьогодні/невдовзі);* of cause and purpose *(Why* do you think so? *Чому* ти так гадаєш?).

Note. Pertaining to Ukrainian (allomorphic for English) is the use of adverbials in the function of a simple nominal predicate. Eg: Сонце *вгорі.* Стежка *справа.* Городи *скрізь.* І ні душі *ніде.*

According to their lexical meaning, adverbs in both contrasted languages can perform the following common functions in the sentence:

1. The adverbial modifier of manner or quality:

"He began to work *very deliberately* and carefully". (London)	Він став працювати дуже *обдумливо й уважно.*
2. The adverbial modifier of time:	
"Your advice has helped *me today".* (Meredith)	Твоя порада допомогла мені *вже сьогодні.* Увечері посумую, а вранці заплачу. (Т. Шевченко)

3. The adverbial modifier of place and direction:

"Tell them I'll be right there". A frantic policeman rode alongside. (F.C. Fitzgerald)	"Скажи їм, що я буду там". - Якийсь несамовитий полісмен їхав поруч.

4. The adverbial modifier of degree and quality:

"Almost instantly we were shut up in a fog". (Mark Twain)	Нас *майже вмить* окутало туманом. Ледве чутно повіяв вітер.

5. The attribute:

"The light outside had chilled...". (Galsworthy), "...he could see them talking together in the little *court below"*. (Ibid.)	*Світло надворі* охололо... він бачив, що вони розмовляли у куценькому подвір'ячку *внизу*.

6. As the above-mentioned already function of the predicative (in English) and simple nominal predicate in Ukrainian:

"The sun was *up"*. (Stevenson)	*Я* ж іще при здоров'ї. (Гуцало)

7. The adverbial modifier of cause and purpose:

'Why do you say that?". (Maugham) *'Why* don't you like those cousins, Father". (Galsworthy)	*Чому* ти це кажеш? Пилипко боявся, щоб *згарячу* не наткнутися на що-небудь... (Панас Мирний)

Isomorphic is also the expression of different adverbial meanings in both languages through adverbial (often prepositional) phrases. For example, **time:** I haven't made use *of it all summer.* (P.C. Fitzgerald). "You'll hear about it *this morning."* (Ibid.) Я не користувався (машиною) *всеньке це літо.* "Ти почуєш про це ще *сьогодні вранці";* **place:** "That's the *one from Montenegro."* (Ibid.) "Ось ще один (орден) *із Чорногорії."* **Attending circumstances:** He saw me looking *with admiration* at his car. (Ibid.) Він помітив, що я дивлюся із *захопленням* на його автомашину.

Statives and their Typological Characteristics

Statives in English and Ukrainian are invariable notional words whose logico-grammatical function is to denote the physical state of persons,

things or phenomena, the psychological state of persons, state in motion, etc. English statives have a characteristic prefix a- formerly added to the roots of nouns, adjectives or verbs (cf. *afire, aflame, alike, afloat, atremble, astride, ashudder,* etc.). "The lamps were still *alight...".* (Galsworthy) "Her little resolute face... was suspiciously eager and *aglow* ". (Ibid.) "1 woke at six the next morning and found George *awake".* (J. K. Jerome) "He had been ***ashamed*** and ***afraid".*** (P. Abrahams)

Ukrainian statives, on the contrary, are formed with the help of some suffixes, which are the following: -o: Романові стало і ***прикро*** і якось ***соромно*** (Минко); **-а:** ***Треба*** хазяїну на хутір... ***Шкода*** журитись, молодичко! (М. Вовчок); *-е:* ***Добре*** Чіпці у діда підпасичем. (Мирний) Так мені зробилось **жалко і досадно.** (А. Тесленко)

The category of state may be expressed in the contrasted languages by means of nouns (in English by prepositional nouns only). Cf. "She seemed ***on fire".*** (Galsworthy) "You keep me ***in the know".*** (Ibid.) ***Сором*** слів, що ллються від безсилля. (Л. Українка) Не раз він був у **відчаї.** (Стельмах) **Страх** бере, їх охоплював **жах.**

Statives in the contrasted languages rarely correlate lexically. Thus, English statives have mostly predicative verbs, adverbs or adjectives for their equivalents in Ukrainian. Cf.

"I lay *awake* a long time". (Galsworthy).	Мені довго **не спалось.** (Я довго *не міг заснути.)*
"Ruth was *aghast".* (London)	Рут ***була приголомшена.***

An exception constitute the following lexical correlations: They were ***ashamed*** — їм було ***соромно. Треба*** хазяїнові на хутір... (М. Вовчок) The farmer ***has a need*** in going on some business to the hamlet.

Among other isomorphic features one more should be pointed out: some statives may have grading. Cf. He is *more dead* than *alive.* She was *more ashamed* than anybody else. Йому стало *краще.* Нам тут *гірше,* їй там було *найкраще.* Йому *ще холодніше,* ніж було досі.

The combinability of English and Ukrainian statives is characterised by both isomorphism and allomorphism. Isomorphic are the following patterns of stative word-groups in English and Ukrainian:

255

Stative + Vinf.: *afraid to answer; треба працювати; (йому) со-ромно це згадувати;* St. + prep. + N: *ashamed of the deed/step; со-ромно за хлопця (йому соромно за свій вчинок);*

St. + prep. + I: *afraid of this/of everything; соромно за неї/за всіх.* St. + prep. + Q: *afraid of the two/three; треба* для /на двох; *краще* для *обох.*

Pertaining only to English is the combinability of statives with the gerund (cf. *afraid of answering, ashamed of having said that).* Allo-morphism is also pertained to Ukrainian in which some statives may take instead a direct prepositionless nominal complement also other indirect case forms which is impossible in English. Cf. *шкода праці, треба часу, сором сліз and легше* вже *йому* (dative case, object) вже краще *малому /старшому, обом,* etc. Hence, the prepositionless objective case in Ukrainian (краще *йому старшому/обом,* etc.) is impossible in English where nouns have only the genitive case (cf. Ann's, Peter's). Similarly with other nominals, except some personal pronouns and the interrogative pronoun who (cf. *whom)* which have the objective case forms (cf. me, him, her, them). A common syntactic function of statives in the contrasted languages is that of the predicate or predicative. Cf. a) as predicative: "Ruth was ***aghast".*** (London) Йому все-таки ***було тоскна...*** на серці. (Гончар); b) As simple nominal predicate: He, ***afraid?*** Мені їх не ***шкода,*** мені їх не ***жаль.*** (Шевченко)

Allomorphic for Ukrainian, however, is the function of the attrib-ute, typical of the English language only. Cf. the child *asleep,* the house *ablaze,* the shore *afar,* etc.

Note. Some morphological and functional indefiniteness of sta-tives gave ground to several Western and domestic grammarians not to recognise these words (singed out as a separate part of speech by Academician Shcherba a "legitimate" part of speech. This opinion was openly expressed by L. Barkhudarov and supported by I. Ivanova and her coauthors [15: 37-38] as well as by some Ukrainian grammarians [30] even in their latest publications [A. Hryschenko: 30].

TYPOLOGICAL CHARACTERISTICS OF FUNCTIONAL WORDS

The number of functionals in the contrasted languages is practically the same, the only exception being the article in English. Their nomenclature is as follows: 1) modal words (and modal phrases); 2) the preposition; 3) the conjunction; 4) the particle; 5) the interjection.

Modal Words and Phrases/Modals

The lexical units belonging to this part of speech are characterised in both languages by their meaning of "modality". They are used to express the speaker's judgement concerning the action/event or object in the utterance/ sentence. These words/phrases in English and Ukrainian are as follows: *certainly, indeed, maybe, perhaps, possibly, probably, of course, no doubt* - *певне, напевне, звичайно, може, можливо, безумовно, безсумнівно* and others.

Modals are traditionally classified as follows:

1. Modal words/phrases expressing various shades of certainty: *certainly, of course, surely, no doubt, assuredly, indeed, undoubtedly, really (певне, напевне, звичайно, безсумнівно, безперечно, безумовно, зрозуміло, правда):*

"Yes, *certainly* they (pigeons) will fly". (Hemingway)
Так, *звичайно,* вони (голуби) повилітають.

"Sure, he's a bum". (Caldwell)
Безперечно, він волоцюга.

2. Modal words expressing various degrees of probability: maybe, perhaps, possibly, probably (може, можливо, мабуть, ймовірно, видно, здається):

"They'll *probably* come through it all right". (Hemingway)
"Ну, *можливо* вони якось пере - живуть артобстріл".

"Maybe it was all a lie...".
"Може, все це була брехня..." (Steinbeck)

257

3. Modal words expressing various shades of desirability *(fortunate ly, unfortunately),* which have a restricted number of semantic equiva lents in Ukrainian *(на щастя, на жаль, шкода):*

"You are wrong, ***unfortunately"***. ***"На жаль,*** *ти* неправий". ***"Fortunately,*** it didn't come true". ***"На щастя,*** це не здійсни- (Jacobs) лось".

4. Modal words expressing doubt, uncertainty and **coinciding** in form with the modal words denoting probability *(maybe, perhaps, proba bly — може, можливо, мабуть):*

"Maybe it's not yet time...?" (Caldwell)	***Може,*** ще не настав час?
"...perhaps you'd better take a little longer to consider". (Jacobs)	***...може б*** ти довше/ще якийсь час над цим поміркував.

The subjective and objective attitude of the speaker towards an event/ action may often be expressed by several other parenthetic words and phrases which may point a) to the authorship of the idea/assertion expressed in the sentence, eg.: *they say, as reported, in my view, to* my *mind, 1 think* - *кажуть, як повідомляють, на мою думку, як говориться,* etc.; b) to words and phrases expressing an estimation of the expressed idea in the sentence *(shortly speaking, generally speaking, in a word — коротко кажучи, відверто кажу- чи, одне слово,* etc.); c) to words pointing to the order or succession of ideas expressed in the sentence *(firstly, secondly, on the contrary - по- перше, по-друге, навпаки,* etc.).

Modals, like statives, originate from different parts of speech or phrases which acquire some modal meaning in the sentence. These parts of speech are: 1) adverbs *(really, probably, fortunately справді, очевидно, дійсно);* 2) nouns with or without prepositions (only in Ukrainian): *in one's view, in one's opinion, to one's judgment — со- ром, страх, на мою думку, на мій погляд;* 3) verbal phrases and sen- tences *(it seems, you see* - *здається, бачите, як бачите, кажуть);* 4) statives (in Ukrainian): *чутно, видно,* etc.

258

One more common feature of modals in the contrasted languages is their position in the sentence. Most of them may occupy any position according to the emphasis they are given by the author/speaker. Cf. *Perhaps* he will come. He *will, perhaps,* come. He will *come, perhaps.(Можливо,* він прийде; він, *можливо,* прийде; він прийде, *можливо).* Modals may also be used in both contrasted languages as elliptical answers to some utterances. Eg:

"Maybe we better go out... and send them home?"	*"Може,* краще вийдемо і роз- женемо їх по домівках?"
"Maybe we better," Tad said. (Saroyan)	*"Може* й так,"- сказав Тед.

Typological Characteristics of Prepositions

Prepositions in English and Ukrainian are characterised by both isomorphic and allomorphic features. Isomorphism is clearly observed in the morphological structure of prepositions which can be in the contrasted languages as follows:

In English	In Ukrainian
Simple: at, in, on, of, with, to, by	Прості: в, з, о, під, на, за, при, без
Compound: inside, into, within, without, throughout, upon, etc.	Складні: із-за, з-під, з-понад, попід, поперед, посеред, поміж, щодо, зад-
Derivative: along, below, beside, inside, outside, etc.	Похідні: внаслідок, завдяки, коло, круг, поверх, поперек, довкіл, etc.
Composite (Phrase prepositions): by means of, because of, in accordance with, owing to, in front of, in spite of, with regard to, on account of, etc.	Складені: в справі, на відміну від, у зв'язку з, поруч з, згідно з, незалеж- но від, у відповідь на, збоку від, близько від, в межах, у плані, etc.

The only structural difference, therefore, is in the group of simple prepositions, among which there are some Ukrainian prepositions consisting of a single consonant or vowel (в, у, о, з). Cf. в очі, у возі, о п'ятій годині, з гір.

Mainly common are the parts of speech from which many preposi-

tions are formed (except the diyepryslivnyk). They are: a) *nouns: beside, in front* of, *in accordance* with *внаслідок, у зв'язку з, слідом за, коло, кругом;* b) *verbals* (participles, diyepryslivnyks): *owing* to, **concerning, including включаючи, завдяки, зважаючи;** c) *adverbs* (the largest number): **along, before, down, among близько, довкола, ззаду, обабіч, серед,** etc.

The lexico-grammatical meaning of prepositions as semi-notional words is isomorphic in both languages as well. Prepositions may be *temporal* (**before** noon до обіду, **after that після того,** *during* the war під час війни, *since* Monday від понеділка, *until* he came **доки він не прийде,** etc.); *local (along* the road **вздовж** дороги, *across* the street **через** шлях, *among* the books **серед** книжок, *in front of me* **переді** мною), *behind/over* the house **за/над** хатою; *causal (because of* that **через те що,** *in view of* all this **з погляду** на це, or *pervasive* (he poured water *all over* me з голови до ніг); **concessive (despite** his expectations **всупереч** його очікуванням).

Prepositions are characterised by an almost exclusive bilateral combinability with any left-hand notional and a right-hand nominal part of speech/its equivalent. Cf.
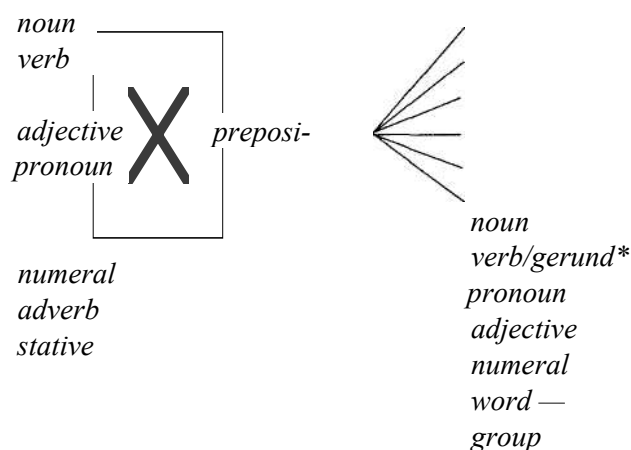
A preposition expressing a relation between two entities forms a prepositional complement with the right-hand component. The latter is almost always morphologically amorphous, except when it is a personal or interrogative/relative w/h-pronoun having in English an objective case form, eg: *ask about me, done by him/them, promised by whom,* etc. Ukrainian

---

Only in English.

prepositional complements are almost entirely marked by case inflexions, i. e. governed analytico-synthetically (cf. книжка для *неї/Марії,* лист від товариша, троє з товаришів, засмаглий на сонці, легко на душі).

In titles, however, prepositions may have only a right-hand combinability, eg:

"To a skylark" (Shelley). ***"Of Human*** Bondage" (Maugham), ***"Under the*** Greenwood Tree" (T. Hardy), "До Основ'яненка" (Шевченко), ***До мого*** фортеп'яно" (Л. Українка), ***"Під*** мінаретами" (Коцюбинський), **"На** майдані" (Тичина), etc.

A peculiar feature of English is the postposed use of prepositions in some interrogative sentences (What paper have you subscribed ***to?);*** in exclamations (What an accident he's got in!), or in the subjective with the infinitive constructions (She's impossible to work *with).*

According to their meaning prepositions in the contrasted languages may express various syntactic relations, the main of which are as follows:

1. Agentive relations: *the play written by Shakespeare бути /під чиєюсь високою рукою/під орудою. 2.* **Objective relations:** *to be angry/ satisfied with somebody сердитись на когось, помиритися з кимсь.* 3. **Attributive relations:** *birds of a feather, the man in question товариші по школі, друзі з Канади.* 4. **Various adverbial relations:** a) temporal: *to depart on Monday, to arrive in spring від'їжджати в понеділок, приїхати в березні/через півроку;* b) local: *in the cottage, behind the fence, in front of the house у хаті, за тином, під лісом;* c) of direction: *into the room, go out of the room, he went to the door у кімнату/з кімнати, зайдіть до хати;* d) of manner or comparison: *to look in astonishment, the air came in a warm wave глянути з подивом; радощів у серці через край* (Тичина); e) of attendant circumstances: Winter set in early and unexpectedly *with a heavy fall of snow.* (Cronin) зима прийшла зі *снігопадами; f)* of cause: My dog pants, *with the heat* собака задихається *від спеки.* Троє діток *на віспу* вмерли. (Федькович); g) of concession: they continued their way *despite the rain,* he *would do it in spite* of the obstacles. Чорнявому зрадливому *на лютеє горе...* (Шевченко). Він приїде *незважаючи на* хворобу; h) of possession: books of his brother, the

261

windows of the cottage. Стояв генерал... *при всіх орденах* (Яновський). Отже, будемо й ми *при розумі.* (Головко). 5. **Various other relations as:** a) Relations of resemblance: she is ***like** her mother* (він схожий на *батька),* b) Relations of subordination: to be secretary *to* the firm manager бути секретарем *у* посла, c) Relations of dissociation: to be devoid *of* suspicion бути вільним *від* підозри/бути *поза* підозрою, etc.

These are the main but far from all the relations expressed by prerepositions in English and Ukrainian word-groups and utterances. Allomorphism is observed only in the nature of the syntactic functions of prepositions. These are mainly *linking* in English, where prepositions generally do not require any case form from the right-hand nominal component (cf. a book *of my* brother, toys/or the child, four of the boys). An exception present the so-called *grammaticalised preposition of, to, for, by* and *with* which explicitly express the corresponding case relations, namely: of the genitive case relation (books *of hers, theirs),* to the dative case relation (sent *to* them, books *for* him/us), *by* and *with* the instrumental (орудний) case relation (written *by* him/them, us, went with her, us, them), etc.

In Ukrainian, on the other hand, prepositions govern nouns, pronouns, numerals, substantivised adjectives and nominal word-groups, eg: праця в *садку/на полі,* лежати під *грушею* (під *дубом),* лист від нього/від *першого,* захист від *польових гризунів,* книжка для *двох,* переляк від *червоного,* etc.

Ukrainian prepositions may be used with nominals in a certain case form only, as for instance, in the genitive case *(без, біля, від, для, до,* and others) or with two cases, for example, with the accusative and instrumental case *(над, під, перед),* and sometimes with three cases *(з, за, між, у): у житті, у відповідь, з горя/горем.* Therefore, Ukrainian prepositions, unlike the English ones, help to express different syntactic relations through case forms of the subordinated nominal parts of speech in word-groups and utterances/sentences. Each of the more than 130 Ukrainian prepositions is used to express one or more case relations as can party be observed from the following table:

Table 22

Case Allocation of Ukrainian Preposition.

Case form	Structural Types of Prepositions			
Genitive	Simple	Compound	Derivative	Composite
	без, біля, у, в, від, ради, окрім, з, коло, між, etc.	задля, заради, з-за, з-межи (з-між), з-над, з-поза, з-перед, etc.	близько, вглиб, вздовж, відносно, довкола/довкіл, замість, зверху, мимо, etc.	в ім'я, в інтересах, за винятком, за допомогою, за рахунок, з боку, на основі, в силу, etc.
Dative	к, ік		слід, всупереч, навздогін, навперейми, назустріч, наперекір, напереріз, etc.	на (у) противагу
Accu-sative	У (в), за, крізь, між, на, над, о (об), перед, під, по, повз, про, проз, через, etc.	Поза, поміж (помежи), по-над попри, проміж, etc.		Зважаючи на, незважаючи на, у відповідь на, з огляду на, etc.
Instru-mental	з (із, зі), за, між (межи), над (наді), перед (переді), під (піді), etc.	Поза, понад, поміж (поме-жи), проміж, etc.		вслід (слідом) за, згідно з (навздогін) за, нарівні з, на чолі з, одночасно з, паралельно з, побіч з, порівняно з, поруч з, разом з, у зв'язку з, в унісон з, etc.
Locative	у (в), на, о (об), по, при			

Even a passing look at the table proves the existence of a quantita-tive disproportionality concerning the allocation of Ukrainian preposi-tions among separate case forms. Thus, no derivative prepositions are used with the accusative, instrumental and locative case forms. Be-sides, the dative

case lacks derivative and composite prepositions, whereas the locative case has only some 5 simple prepositions to govern nominal parts of speech. The overwhelming number of prepositions, however, are used in Ukrainian with the genitive case. Their number more than two times exceeds the number of prepositions used with all other case forms.

One more is also an isomorphic feature pertained to the contrasted languages which finds its expression in the occasional use of some Ukrainian (like English) prepositions to perform a purely linking function. This happens in cases when prepositions are used to connect (not govern!) unchangeable foreign nouns. Cf. *їхати в таксі, вийти з фойє, ходити без кольє, бути в кімоно/сарі, народитися в Туапсе, мешкати в Бордо/Ліворно*. Despite this the syntactic functions of prepositional phrases are common in both languages. They may be in the sentence as subject (cf. For me to read it was easy), predicative (this is *for me to decide), as* an attribute (a book for you to read) or as an adverbial modifier. [I left something under your door for you to read it. (Carter)] In other words, prepositional phrases may be complements to verbs, adjectives (Cf. *The need of doing something, sorry for something)*. They can perform the functions of attributive or adverbial adjuncts *(books for reading, singing in the room),* or serve as disjuncts *(to my surprise, the* student answered well), or conjuncts *(on the other hand, she was free)*.

Typology of the Conjunctions

Conjunctions in the contrasted languages are functional words realising the connection of homogeneous parts in co-ordinate word-groups and sentences or linking subordinate clauses in composite sentences. As to their structure, conjunctions in English and Ukrainian are generally characterised by isomorphism. The various types are as follows: 1) Simple *(and, but, or, if, that, till і /й, а, бо, ні, та/. 2)* Derivative/compound: all + though --» *although, un* + less -» *unless,* be + cause — » *because,* un + till -» *until,* where + as -» *whereas,* а + бо -» *або,* за + те -» *зате,* про + те — *проте,* як + що -» *якщо,* як + би -» *якби,* etc. 3) Composite (складені): *as if, as soon as, in order that; так що; через те, що; для того, щоб; з того час, як; відтоді, як,* etc.

The use of conjunctions may be non-repeated *(and, but, since a,*

але, що) and repeated (in Ukrainian) or correlative (in English), eg: *both... and, either..or, neither... nor, no sooner... than (i — i, ні — ні, то — то, чи — чи, не то — не то, не стільки — скільки).*

As to their syntactic functions, conjunctions in the contrasted languages fall into two common-isomorphic groups: a) co-ordinating conjunctions and b) subordinating conjunctions. A graphic presentation of all classes of co-ordinating and subordinating conjunctions in English and Ukrainian is as follows:

Copulative and, both... and, neither. . .nor, as well as, etc. і, й, та, ні... ні	Disjunctive or, either. ..or, neither... nor, або, ато, чи, чи... чи, ато... ато	Adversative but, still, yet, however, але, проте, зате, однак, все ж, etc.	Resultative so, hence, тож, отож, тобто, а саме, etc.	Causal for

Adjoining and, also, and still, та й, та ще й

Co-ordinating conjunctions

Gradational not only... but also, not so much...than що не тільки, а навіть; не тільки, а й /але й

CLASSES OF CONJUNCTIONS

of comparison as...as, not so...as, than, as if, as through, мов, немов, неначе, наче

Subordinating Conjunctions

of Cause because, as, since, seeing, бо, тому що, оскільки

of place where, wherever. де, звідки, куди, туди	of time after, till, since, before, while, доки, поки, як, аж поки	of condition if, unless. provided, supposing, якщо, якби, коли б, якщо б	of concession though, although, despite, whoever, whatever, хоча (б), дарма що, хай, нехай	of purpose lest, that, in order that, so that, аби, щоб, того, щоб	of results that, so that, що, так що/ й

265

As can be seen in the table, co-ordinating conjunctions in the contrasted languages fall into the following subclasses:

1) Copulative (єднальні): *and, nor, neither... nor, as well as, both... and, not only... but also; і/й, та, також, і... і, ні... ні, як... так і, не тільки... але й/і.* Copulative conjunctions in the contrasted languages have a bilateral combinability. They connect separate components, com ponental parts of word-groups or clauses in compound sentences which are of equal rank, eg: In the afternoon **he and Jolly** took **picks and spades** *and went* to the field. (Galsworthy), "It was a cold fall **and** the wind came from the mountains". (Hemingway). По обіді **він і Джоллі** взяли **кайла і лопати** й пішли на поле. Була холодна осінь, і вітер віяв з гір. *І* пить будем, *і* гулять будем. (Ukr. Folk-song)

2) Disjunctive (розділові) conjunctions denote in both languages sepa ration. They are: *or, either... or або, ато, чи, або... або, чи... чи, то... то, чи то...чи то, eg: "I must* weep, **or else** this heavy heart will burst". (Byron) "I have nothing of the artist in me, **either** in faculty or character". (B. Shaw). Я мушу плакати, **ато** від горя серце розірветься. "Все пішло **то** на податі, **то** на борги, **то** на оренди". (Гончар) 3) Adversative (протиставні): *but, still, yet але, проте, зате, однак, все ж* and others. Eg: Andrew turned towards her distressed, *yet still* determined to carry out his intention. (Cronin) Ендрю повернувся до неї занепокоєний, *але* готовий здійснити свій намір. 4) Resultative (пояснювальні): so, *hence так, що, тож/отож, тобто, а саме, як от,* eg: The grass was drenching wet, **so** he descended to the road. (Galsworthy) У траві стояла вода, **тож** він вийшов на шлях. І він катапультується, **тобто** вистрілює себе з літака разом з сидінням. (Гончар). 5) The causal conjunction (for) is pertaining only to English, eg: The windows were open, for it was hot. (Galsworthy). The corre sponding semantic equivalent of this conjunction in Ukrainian are, **бо, тому що, оскільки** - all of subordinating nature which testifies its allomorphism in the system of co-ordinate conjunctions in the contrasted languages. Consequently, it is sometimes far from easy for Ukrainian students to differentiate Ukrainian causal clauses in a complex sentence. It is not so with the **subordinating conjunctions** introducing subordi nate clauses. These conjunctions also include in both languages the group

266

of the so-called connectives standing separate from regular subordinating conjunctions. Regular conjunctions of this group are: *that, whether, if, що, чи, якщо/якби* which are used to introduce in both languages subject, object, predicative and attributive clauses. Eg. *Whether/if he* is going to come or not is still unknown. The question is *whether* he is going to come or not. He asked *if* was going to come. I know *that* he is going to come. This is the flower *that* was bought there, etc. Similarly in Ukrainian: *Чи він прийде ще - не відомо. Питання полягає в тому, що/ чи він ще прийде. Я вірю/знаю, що він прийде.* Common functions in both contrasted languages are also performed by connective or conjunctive/relative (as they are often referred to) pronouns: *who, what, which, how many, хто, що, який, котрий, чий, скільки;* and by connective/ conjunctive adverbs: *where, when, how, why, де, коли, куди, як, чому.*

Subordinate conjunctions introducing adverbial clauses are of isomorphic nature, i. e. common in both contrasted languages, too. They express different sense relations and fall into the following groups:

1. Conjunctions of time: *since, until, till, as long as, after, before, while, as soon as, коли, відколи, поки, аж поки, доки, аж доки, як, після того як, в міру того як, як тільки, тільки що, щойно, ледве.*

2. Conjunctions/connectives of place and direction: *where, wherev er, whence, де, де б, куди, звідки.*

3. Conjunctions of cause or reason: as, *because, since, seeing, бо, через те що, тому що, затим що, оскільки.*

4. Conjunctions of condition: *if, unless, provided, supposing якби, якщо, якщо б, коли б, аби, скоро.*

5. Conjunctions of purpose: *lest, that, in order that, so that, щоб, для того щоб, з тим щоб.*

6. Conjunctions of result: *so that, that, так що, отож:, тож.*

7. Conjunctions of concession: *though, although, as, even if, even though, however, wherever, whatever, whichever, хоч, хай, нехай, дарма що, незважаючи (на).*

8. Conjunctions of comparison: as, as...as, *not so... as, than, as if, as though, як, що, мов, мовби, немов, немовби, наче, неначе, начебто, ніби, нібито.*

Typological Characteristics of Particles

Particles in English and Ukrainian are unchangeable words specifying some component in a phrase or the whole phrase (a sentence/clause). Unlike conjunctions or prepositions, particles do not express any syntactic relations. Their function is in both languages to emphasise, restrict or make negative the meaning of the units they specify by giving some additional shade (emotional, evaluative, etc.) to their meaning/sense. Therefore some particles may perform a form-building function (cf. To be or *not* to be. Shakespeare) бути чи *не* бути. Besides, particles in both contrasted languages express an attitudinal relation to action, state or the whole message/or to reality, as well as to expressing the attitude of the speaker to the content of some message. Hence, the categorial meaning of a particle in both contrasted languages comes to influencing the content/sense expressed in the utterance.

As to their morphological structure, particles in the contrasted languages may be:

1) **Simple:** *all, else, even, just, too, yet, not, а, і/й, так, ну, не, ж, еге* and others;

2) **Derivative:** *alone, merely, scarcely, simply, нум, нумо, було, просто, все, воно, собі, та, те, це, оце, а, чи;*

3) **Compound:** *almost,* ***also (невже, якраз).***

Isomorphic is the homonymy of many particles in English and Ukrainian with the following parts of speech:

a) with adverbs: *exactly, precisely, never, simply, still, просто, лиш, там, ще, вже;* b) with adjectives (in English): *even, right, just;* c) with pronouns: *all, either, все, воно, собі, те, то;* d) with conjunctions (very few in English): but they are in Ukrainian *(а, і, та, чи);* e) with articles (in English only): ***the*** more, *the* better; *the* longer, *the* better.

Quite common, although not always equally represented, are the semantic groups of particles in both contrasted languages. Namely:

1. Particles of emphatic precision (емфатичного уточнення): *absolutely, exactly, precisely, right, точно, справді, просто, прямо* and others. Eg:

2. Demonstrative particles/вказівні: *here, there, ось, от, це, оце, он-де, ген, воно:*

"Here is the man". (Mansfield) *"There's no* little thing you want..." (Jacobs)	*Ось* цей чоловік. / Ось де цей чоловік. «Ото ж бо й є». (Старицький)

3. Affirmative particles/стверджувальні: *well, now, yes, так, гаразд, еге, еге ж, атож:*

"*Well, now,* tell me if I'm wrong". (H. E. Bates) *"Yes,* said her host. *Yes,* indeed". (Parker)	"Отож. *Так,* ви може й маєте рацію." "Ви добре знаєте Карпа?" ..."Атож." (Коцюбинський) "Так, — сказав господар. -*Авжеж, так. "* (Таки так.)

4. Intensifying particles / підсилювальні/ are rather numerous in English and Ukrainian: all, but, just, even, simply, yet, still, etc. і, й, та, таки, аж, навіть, вже, ж, бо, же, (а) and others:

"He *simply* could not bear joking (Galsworthy) "He was late too ".(Ibid.)	Він просто не сприймав жартів. Він запізнився *також.*

5. Negative or form-building (заперечні й формотворні) particles: *not, never, no, не, ні, ані.* These particles are used for the following purposes: a) to make a predicate verb in both languages negative, eg:

"Six weeks *isn't* really *long.."* (Galsworthy). *"Don't* you forget!" (Parker)	Ой *не ходи,* Грицю... (Нар. пісня) *Не називаю* її раєм. ..(Шевченко) *Ні,* я буду співати пісні! (Л. Українка)

269

b) to make a part of the sentence/a component of a word-group negative, eg:

Not everyman's money. (Idiom)	*Не кожному* по кишені.
"He is neither fish nor fowl." (Salinger)	"Він *триба, ні м'ясо. (Ні* Богу свічка, ні чорту шпичка).

c) to negate the preceding suggestion, eg:

"What'd he cop, malaria?" *"No". (F.* Hardy). "I am careful".	"У нього що - малярія?" - *Ні.* "Я ж уважний."
"No, you are *not."* (Fitzgerald)	*"Ні,* ти *не уважний. "*

6. Interrogative particles/запитальні частки: *well, really, no, why, why not, га, ну, невже, хіба, та ну, що за,* eg:

"...This isn't the man". "No?"	— Це *не* той чоловік — Ні?
"However, I don't believe it".	— Однак я *не* вірю цьому.
"Why not?" "This is Slogle speaking..."	— Чому б ні? Це справді говорить Слогл.
"Yes?". (Fitzgerald) "It's not so very terrible." "Well?" (Maugham)	- Так? Це не так уже й страшно. — Справді?/ Так?

7. Connecting or linking particles/приєднувальні частки: also, *too (тож, також/теж, до того ж, ще* й), eg:

"He *also* takes off his hat and overcoat." (B. Shaw) Soames, *too,* was silent. (Galsworthy)	Він *також* скидає капелюха й пальто. Сомз *теж* мовчав./Сомз також промовчав.

The large number of particles in both languages and the diversity of their specifying capacity make it possible to single out some more discrete groups of these words. Among these the following are most represented in English and Ukrainian:

a) quantitative (кількісні) particles: *almost (almost everything), approximately (approximately the size) майже, приблизно, близько, мало не, трохи не, чи не, ледве не;*

b) emphasising or singling out particles (видільні частки): **even** that,

270

only look/say, *more* intense, *more* than necessary. And in Ukrainian: *навіть, тільки, лише, лиш, хоч, хоча б, аж, же/ж, все, собі, таки,* eg: *...тільки* в цьому котловані буяють рясні сади. *Хоча б* цієї столиці не минути... (Гончар) Сині, *аж* сизі. А серце... *таки* рветься до кращого життя... (Коцюбинський).

A distinguishing feature of present-day Ukrainian is a more extensive use of particles in speech (especially of emphasising and modal particles). The latter constitute a large group including such particles as *б, би, мов, мовби, бодай, хай, нехай, може, нум, нумо,* etc. Cf.: А *бодай* вам весело було. (Кв.-Основ'яненко) Пройти *б* на старе бойовище. (В. Швець) *Хай* тільки-но зачеплять... (Трублаїні) ...зморшки на чолі *все* глибшають у мене... (Сосюра) *Це* далеко? А *це* як міряти.

Ukrainian has also a wide use of interrogative particles. Cf. Невже не можна ради дати серцю?.. (Павличко). Те дерево, що я садив, чи діждеться весни? (Рильський) Хіба є хто на світі крилатіший за людину? (О. Гончар) Це ти Шовкун? (Ibid.)

As was already mentioned particles in both contrasted languages can perform not only form-building but also word-forming functions. Word-forming are the following English particles: else-, not-, no more-, -most *(elsewhere,* notwithstanding, forget-me-not, nothingness, *moreover, almost, altogether,* although, nothing, nowhere).

Ukrainian has a considerably larger number of word-forming particles, eg: -будь, -небудь, казна-, хтозна-, -сь, аби-, де-, не-, ні-, би-, б-, -же-, -ж and others: *хто-небудь, декуди, де-небудь,* якийсь, мовби, *ніби,* начеб, *щоб, ніколи,* недбальство, *ніде, ніщо, кознащо, немов,* адже, отже, також, теж, ніж, etc. Form-building particles are used in English in the following functions:

a) as an infinitival identifier: *to* ask, *to* be reading; b) as a representation specifier (he'll come if asked to); c) as a specifier of degree *(the* larger part, he's *the* quickest, *more* quickly); d) as a negator of a word (eg: cannot) or a phrase *(not* he, certainly *not, no* reading practice).

Ukrainian form-building particles have a wider range of use. They may be part of a morphological paradigm (as in case of the particles *хай, нехай, най-, що-, як-, -сь, би/б): Хай* він *жде* біля криниці...

271

(Малишко) **...нехай** їдуть під шум. (Рильський) Якби були бать-
ко, мати, Та *були б* багаті, *Було б* кому взяти. (Шевченко)

Typological Characteristics of Interjections/Emotives

Unlike notionals, interjections in English and Ukrainian do not
correlate with notions, they do not express any relations or point to
any connection with words in an utterance. Interjections are un-
changeable words or phrases expressing emotional and volitional re-
action of the speaker on some event. Hence, there are to be distin-
guished communicative, emotive, and signalising interjections, which
express respectively joy or pleasure, sadness, warning or repugnance,
etc. Cf.:

"***O-o, grand****!"* (Priestley)	*"О-о,* пречудово!"
"Fine!" (F. Fowles)	- Прекрасно!
"Oh, keeno!" (Murdoch)	- Прекрасно! О, просто чудо!
*"**My, how you've changed!"*** (Brautigan)	— *Боже мій,* як ти змінився!
"Oh, it hurts me. **Oh!"** (Maltz)	- Ой, як болить. ***Ой!***

As can be noticed, interjections in English and Ukrainian utter-
ances mostly occupy a front position, rarely a midposition or a closing
position. Cf.: А ми! ***хе!*** *хе!* а ми жонаті. (Шевченко) І одного часу,
як гукне, так, ***ой-ой-ой!*** (Вишня)

Interjections may be primary (первинні) and derivative (похідні).
According to their structure, interjections may be simple, compound
and composite, or phrasal.

I. Simple interjections fall into some subgroups, namely: a) inter-
jections consisting of one or two sounds: *ah, a-ah, oh, oo, ooh, oof,
coo, gee.* Or in Ukrainian: *а! е! о! е-е! ай! ах! ох! ха! хе!ух! ам! ем!*
etc. b) Interjections may consist of consonant sounds only: *brr, mm,
sh (sh-sh) гм! хм! цсс! шш! брр!;* c) interjections often consist of
more than two different sounds which form one syllable: *gosh, tut,
umph, whoop гай! гей! гов! гоп! пхе! пхи!* etc; d) interjections can
consist of two syllables: *alas, ahem, boffo, hello/hullo, okey ага!
агей! ату! агусь! ану! люлі! нумо! овва! ого! мугу!);* e) reduplicat-
ing (повторні) interjections are pertained to both languages as well:
*ah-ah, ay-ay, ee-ee, goe-goe, how-how, ho-ho, hubba-hubba, chock-
chock, ta-ta, tut-tut.* Sim-

ilarly in Ukrainian: *а-а, ану-ану, гай-гай, еге-ге, о-го-го, ну-ну, ха-ха.*

Compound interjections are more characteristic of English than of Ukrainian, eg: *heigh-ho, holla-ho, fiddlesticks, whoo-whoop, wo-ho, yo-ho,* etc. Cf.: *Господи-Боже! Добридень! Спасибі! Боже мій!*

Derivative interjections constitute a common group in the contrasted languages too. They are mostly of common origin and sometimes even of identical lexical meaning. There are distinguished six types of emotional interjections in the contrasted languages: a) **of substantival** origin: *beans! bully! fiddle! hell! Lord! nuts! raspberry! rabbit! rats! taps! Господи! матінко! пене! Боже! леле! жах! страх! ґвалт! слава! хвала! біда! горе!; b)* **of verbal** origin: *come! look! see! cut! bother! shoot! диви! гляди! бач! рятуйте! пробачте! даруйте! прощайте! побачимо! цур!* (from цуратися); c) of **adjectival** origin (mostly in English): *fine! grand! right! dear! swell! divine! gracious!; d)* of **adverbial** origin: *here! there! now! well! why? so! добре! зараз! тут! там! так! геть! прекрасно!; e)* of **pronominal** origin: "ay me! oh me!" (Shakespeare) *отаке! стільки ж! отакої!* "Куди ж писати?" **"Отакої!** Не знає куди!.." (О. Гончар); f) **of phrasal** origin (contracted), which are rather numerous in English: *howdy* (from how do you do), *alright* (from all right), *my!* (from my God/my Lord), *dammit* (from damn it), *attaboy* (from that's a boy), *добридень* (from добрий день), *спасибі* (from спаси біг), *тсь! цсс!* (from тихіше), etc.

Derived are also numerous idiomatic interjections of various componental nature and expressing different emotions, eg: my eye! Holy Moses! the cat's pyjamas! gee whiskers! well I never! їй же бо! хай йому цур! кат їх бери! Боже ж мій! біда та й годі! де там! ой лелечко! де ж так! etc.

Emotive interjections express various feelings, one interjection being often used in English and Ukrainian to express different meanings. These classes of meanings are as follows:

1. Positive feelings (joy, satisfaction, sympathy), eg:

"Great!" Michael said". (I. Shaw) *"Ooh! ooh!"* the crowd was moaning in a kind of amorous agony", (Huxley)	*Чудово!»* — вигукнув Майкл. *«Гу-у! Г-уу»* — стогнав, переповнений ніби якимось замилуванням, збуджений натовп.

273

2. Incentive orders (спонукальні накази), eg:

"Hey, now! Wait a minute". (Dahl) *"Here,* Buck", the Boss called. (Warren) "Quiet!" I yelled to them. (Hemmett)	«*Гей* там! Зачекайте». *«Сюди,* Баку!»* — гукнув Бос. *«Вгамуйтесь/Замовкніть!»* — гримнув я на них.

Here also belong interjectional orders given to domestic animals. For example: *gee-up!* or *giddap! hait! hi-up!* (to horses) но! *гайда! вйо! whoa, hoa, whoa!* **тпру!** *sookl sook!* **цоб-цабе!** *puss, puss, puss!* **киці, киці-киці; киць-киць-киць;** *dilly, dilly!* **тась, тась!** *chook-chook! chuck-chuck!* **ціп-ціп-ціп!** etc.

3. Negative feelings (grief, sorrow, horror, alarm, disgust, etc.):

"Oops! It's after midnight" . (Sheldon) *"Pshav!* said the other twin". (Capote) "Nuts!" the Boss said. (Warren)	*"Ух-ти!* Вже за північ". "Ух гарно! Ух гарно!" - тільки ухає Христя. (П. Мирний) *"Тьху!"* - сказав другий близнюк. "Дурниці!" — сказав Бос..

4. Orders to stop an action: *hist! hush! shh! shush!* In Ukrainian: *тихо! тихо! тсс! тс! шш! cave! — обережно! nuf! nuff! — годі! scat! shoo! — геть!* eg:

"Hush ", my mother said, "hush, son". (Warren)	*"Ша,* синку", — сказала мама. — Ша». *"Ша! Мовчок,* хлопці." (І. Микитюк)

5. Greetings and partings which may sometimes be rather emotional as well. Cf.:

"Oh, hello!" she called..." (Brash) *"Howdy,"* said Isabel..." (Capote) *"Bye!"* said Romona. (Salinger)	«*О, привіт!»* — вигукнула вона... *«Здоров!»* — сказала Ізабел... *«Бувай!»* — відповіла Р...

Note. Imitations of sounds produced by birds and animals like *dab-dab, mew, cock-a-dooble-doo, moo, how-wow,* etc. and their Ukrainian equivalents *кря-кря, няв, кукуріку, му-у, гав-гав,* can not be treated as interjections or as emotives unless used on some occasions for the sake of stylisation. Cf. *"Bow-wow!"* Repeated the boy jokingly. "Гав-гав!" повторив, граючись, хлопчина.

274

Topics for Self-Testing and Individual Preparation

1. The dominant morphological and syntactic features distinguishing the structural type of present-day English from the structural type of present-day Ukrainian.
2. The morpheme as a typological constant in the contrasted languages. Quantitative and qualitative correlation of affixal morphemes in English vs. Ukrainian.
3. Types of inflexional morphemes in the contrasted languages.
4. The problem of "Word classes" vs. the parts of speech in English and Ukrainian.
5. Isomorphism and allomorphism in the quantitative representation of the morphological categories and means of their expression in the nominals of the contrasted languages.
6. Typological characteristics of the noun (classes, morphological categories, functions of the noun in the contrasted languages).
7. Singularia and pluralia tantum nouns and expression of quantity (or number) in the contrasted languages.
8. Isomorphism and allomorphism in the means of expressing definiteness and indefiniteness in the contrasted languages.
9. Morphological/structural, categorial, functional and other isomorphic and allomorphic features of different classes of adjectives in the contrasted languages.
10. The pronoun. Classes of pronouns. Isomorphic and allomorphic features of English vs. Ukrainian pronouns.
11. The numeral. Classes of numerals and their isomorphic/allomorphic features in the contrasted languages.
12. The verb. Isomorphism and allomorphism in the classes of verbs. Morphological categories of person, number, tense, voice, aspect, mood and their realisation in the contrasted languages.
13. Isomorphism and allomorphism in the system of verbals of the contrasted languages. 14. Typological characteristics of different classes of adverbs and their structural peculiarities. The origin of some adverbs in English and Ukrainian.

15. Typological characteristics of English vs. Ukrainian statives and their combinability.
16. Typological characteristics of the functional parts of speech in the contrasted languages:
   a) semantic groups of modal words and modal expressions in En glish and Ukrainian;
   b) isomorphism and allomorphism in the meaning, structure and functioning of prepositions in the contrasted languages;
   c) the conjunction. Paradigmatic classes of conjunctions and their morphological structure in English and Ukrainian;
   d) isomorphic and allomorphic features of different classes of par ticles in the contrasted languages;
   e) typological characteristics of interjections/emotives in the con trasted languages.

Exercises for Class and Homework

Exercise I. Contrast the morphological structure of the English and Ukrainian words below. Identify a) the national and b) the international af fixal morphemes in them:

ablaze, bedew, degrading, illegally, interstate, non-smoking, linguistically, dictatorship, computerisation, employee, examinee, duckling, princeling, sissy, cloudlet, studenship, drunkard, sluggard, commander-in-chief, merry-go-round, fifty-fifty, sportsman, transportation, willy-nilly, supersonic, rewritten, redistribute, non-aggression, underwrite.

краще, вводити, зім'яти, антитіло, посіятися, нереально, диктаторство, недокінченість, комп'ютеризація, по-новому; дитяточко, дрібнесенько, козарлюга, басище, здоровило, щонайкращий, якнайновіша, якнайбільше; переписати, попоходити, попобігати, перекотиполе, Гнидуб, сяк-так, хоч-нехоч, роботизація.

Exercise II. Point to the factors facilitating (or otherwise) the identification of the parts of speech in the following English and Ukrainian words/word-forms:

clean, cleaner, cleaning; back, bad, badly; worse, force, good, goody, better; deciding, home, man, finance, manned; psychology, finish, set; before, but, butter, must, near, round, save, start, waste, zip, pollution, clear, clearness.

добре, краще, мати, матір, молода/молодий, варене/печене; перед, передове, відживаюче, вчений; батьків, сестрин; коло, край, перше, берегти, береги, кілька, собі; моя/твоя, коло, перед, багато, багатий, багатій, кілька, декілька, нявкати, посміхатися

Exercise III. State the difference (if any) in the expression of the category of number and quantity in the following English and Ukrainian nouns:

the North-West, the South-East; advice, business, courage; finance; archives, arms, customs, foliage, scum; brushwood, oil, silver, carp, pike, salmon, swine; bacilli, errata, radii, termini, outskirts, riches, shorts, tongs, savings, victuals, the Pole, sweepings; the Netherlands, the Bahamas, scales, money.

північний захід/схід, золото, срібло, борошно, м'ясо; білизна, збіжжя, збрид, віниччя, паліччя, сміття; гамір, сметана, гнів; освіта; проводи, вершки, поминки, вечорниці; висівки, вишкрібки, цінності; ворожіння, посиденьки, дріжджі, помиї, міліція, Бровари, Суми, Чернівці, Урал (гори).

Exercise IV. Find the isomorphic and allomorphic features in the expression of the morphological categories of number, case and gender in the italicised English nominals and their Ukrainian equivalents in the counteropposed sentences below:

1. *The two* were quite unable to *do anything* (Wells)

   Ці двоє були зовсім не в змозі *щось удіяти/зробити.*

2. *The first* was *an old woman.* (R. Chandler)

   Перша була *вже старою жінкою.*

3. I sympathise *with you in your husband's death.* (Maugham)

   Я співчуваю *тобі у зв'язку зі смертю твого чоловіка.*

4. *Young man, you're* very ready *with your tongue.* (Cusack)

   Ви, *юначе,* ніколи не лізете *за словом у кишеню.*

5. I've got to see *her home.* (Maugham)

   Я маю провести *її додому.*

6. *That* was a *great shock to me.* (Christie)

   То було *великим ударом для мене.*

7. *Every family* has its own *cultural rules...* (Schimmels) 8. *Off went* the proud Kangaroo on his four little legs... (Kipling) 9. Freestone frowned, at the... detestable abbreviation of his Christian *name.* (Barstow) 10. He asked *his* tall aunt the *Ostrich,* why her tail-feathers grew just so... and he asked... the Hippopotamus why *her* eyes were *red.* (Ibid.)

Кожна родина має *свої правила культурної поведінки. . . \ стрибонув* Кенгуру на своїх чотирьох ніжках... Фрістоун нахнюпився,... зачувши огидне скорочення *свого християнського імені.* Він запитався у *своєї* високої тітки *Страусихи,* чому в *пейтяк* росте *пір* я.... а в своєї гладкої тітки Гіпопотамихи, чому в *неї червоні очі.*

Exercise V. Using the model below prove the existence of the objective gender (sex) and the non-existence of the morphological gender in the English animate nouns in contrast to the existence of both the genders in their Ukrainian equivalents. Model: the actor played — the actress played (well). Артист грав — артистка грала (гарно). The team worked / the wheel worked. Бригада працювала / колесо працювало.

director — directrix, emperor — empress, king — queen, hero — heroine; bull — cow, bull-elephant — cow-elephant; dog — bitch, lion — lioness, billy-goat — nanny-goat, stallion — mare; cock-sparrow — hen- sparrow; drake — duck, gander — goose; sun — moon; death, hatred, love, hotel, ship (when personified).

директор — директорка, Імператор — імператриця, король — королева, герой — героїня; бугай — корова, слон — слониха, пес — сучка, лев — левиця, цап — коза, жеребець — кобила; горобець — горобка, качур — качка, гусак — гуска; сонце — місяць; (смерть, кохання, готель, корабель).

Exercise VI. Pick up the corresponding English equivalents to the Ukrainian adjectives below. Identify their nature (qualitative, relative, etc.) and their grading patterns (if any). **Model:** *короткий short* (base, adjective shorter, shortest); *дерев'яний wooden* (relative adjective, no grading); *байронівський Byronian* (possessive and relative adjective, no grading); *дядьків* (possessive adjective, not available in English).

Бібліотечний, адекватний, оригінальний, керамічний, щасливий, добовий, дробовий, корисний, вузький, скорочений (concise), розумний,

відважний, упевнений, мамин, татів, братів, сестрин, тітчин; сліпий, глухий, кривий, голий, керамічний, морський, піщаний, залізний, золотий, рідний, гарнесенький, малесенький, молодесенький, старшенький (старшенька), коротесеньке, сліпесеньке (звірятко), теплесенький, англійський, австралійський, індонезійський, наський, цікавий, важливий, адаптований, відповідальний, відповідний, чотириповерховий, новостворений, всенародний, запорізький, повсякденний, закарпатський.

Exercise VII. Suggest English equivalents and identify the class of numerals (or other parts of speech) to which the following Ukrainian numerals should be allotted:

восьмий, вісімнадцята, тридцять дев'ятий, дев'яносто дев'ятий, двохсотий, тисяча перший, нуль цілий і три сотих, тринадцять цілих і дві десятих, шість цілих і три восьмих, тридцять два цілих і п'ять вісімнадцятих, три четвертих, дві третіх, кількадесят, кількасот, кільканадцять, півтораста, стонадцять, четверо, п'ятеро, двійко, кілька, декілька, чимало, немало, стільки, скільки, кільканадцятеро, ніскільки.

Exercise VIII. Analyse the Ukrainian pronouns below, translate them into English and distribute them between the following typologically deictic groups: 1) noun-pronouns (eg. he, they me); 2) adjective-pronouns (functioning as attributes): this, my, every, and 3) numeral-pronouns (how many, how much):

Себе, тебе, ви, хто, що, аби-хто, дехто, будь-хто, казна-хто, казна-що, дещо; удвох, утрьох; наш, ваш, твій, мій, ніякий, нікотрий, ніякісінький, отакенний, отакенький, отакезний, який-небудь, кожен, усякий, чий-небудь, сякий-такий, ніскільки, ніскілечки, стільки, стільки-то, скільки-то.

Exercise IX. Point out the difference in the expression of the morphological categories of tense, aspect and mood in the English and Ukrainian verbs in the following sentences:

1. ...how diligent I *have been,* and '*am being.* (Keats)	1. ...яким ретельним я *завжди був і все ще (зараз) є.*

279

English	Ukrainian
Haven't you ever *seen* it before? (Fitzgerald)	2. «Невже ви її (автомашини) досі ніколи *не бачили?*
1 *shall be painting* all day. (Galsworthy)	3. *Я малюватиму* цілий день.
I *thought* we'd *ride up* together". (Fitzgerald)	4. *Я гадав,* ми *під'їдемо* верхи (на конях) разом.
What *have you been doing* to yourself since I've been away? (Cusack).	5. Що ви тут *пороббляли* самі, відколи мене не було?
We *hadn't reached* West Egg Village before Gatsby *began leaving* his elegant sentences unfinished... (Fitzgerald)	6. Був *позабував* товаришів — тепер пригадав... (Васильченко) Я й туди *хотів був вступити* та перешкодили якісь події. (Довженко)
Water was given her. Some things *had been lost sight of.* (Galsworthy)	7. їй *дали* води. Від деяких речей *загубився* й слід (зникли з очей).
8. Success attend you! (Sheridan)	8. Щасти вам!/ Хай вам щастить!
9. *Do it down.* (Galsworthy).	9. Та *сядьте* ж. / Та *присядьте* ж.
. Let me *go in* and *see him* alone. (Maugham)	10. Нум я *зайду й сам* побалакаю з ним. (Ану я зайду і побалакаю з ним).

Exercise X. Suggest English typological isomorphism or allomorphism for the Ukrainian italicised words in the following sentences. Model: Йому значно *полегшало* (stative). He feels much *better* (adv. modifier of attendant circumstances). Ця новина *приголомшила* всіх (predicat. verb). She was *aghast* (stative). Він схуднув і йому *легше* бігається (adverb, modifier of attendant circumstances). Йому стало набагато *легше* (stative).

1. Цього всього нікому тепер *не треба,* їм як ніколи *треба* доброго здоров'я.
2. Всім стало на серці *веселіше.* Співайте, друзі, ще *веселіше.*
3. Він говорив *суворо* й гнівно. Не *суворо* на серці, не гнівно. (Малишко)
4. Батьків і рідних своїх *треба* любити. Нам *треба* більше часу.
5. Дітям *соромно* розповідати про це. Його раптом охопив *сором.*
6. Одні не могли *заснути.* Інші вже давно *позасинали* (спали).
7. Багато лісів навколо столиці Австралії були *охоплені полум'ям.*
8. Майже всі вулиці міста були залиті світлом (were ablaze with...)
9. Йому було *прикро* за сказане. Скрізь на берегах було *прикро.*
10. Над цим *треба добре* поміркувати. Йому вже й справді *добре.*
11. Студенти *легко* впоралися з перекладом. Нікому тепер не *легко.*

TYPOLOGY OF THE SYNTACTIC SYSTEMS

A successful typological contrasting of syntactic systems of the English and Ukrainian languages becomes possible due to the existence in them of several isomorphic and allomorphic features and phenomena. The principal of these are predetermined, as will be shown in this section, by several factors, the main of which are the following: 1) by common in both languages classes of syntactic units which are word-groups, sentences and various types of supersyntactic units; 2) by generally common paradigmatic classes and types of these syntactic units; 3) by isomorphic and allomorphic types and means of syntactic connection in them; 4) by mostly isomorphic syntactic processes taking place in their word-groups and sentences; 5) by identical syntactic relations in word-groups and sentences of both contrasted languages; 6) by common functions performed by different parts of speech in word-groups and sentences.

The allomorphic features and phenomena at the syntactic level find their expression in the following: 1) in the existence of various qualitative and quantitative differences in some paradigmatic classes of word-groups and sentences; 2) in some types of word-groups; 3) in the unequal representation of different means of syntactic connection; 4) in the existence of different ways of expressing predication; 5) in the difference in the structural forms of some English parts of the sentence; 6) in the means of joining some subordinate clauses to the main/principal clause, etc.

All these features characterise respectively the syntactic constants of the syntactic level, i. e. the syntactic processes, the syntactic relations, the syntactic connections in word-groups and sentences being sem-selves constants of this language level.

Syntactic Processes, their Types and Ways of Realisation

Syntactic processes are various in the contrasted languages and they find their realisation only in word-groups and sentences. The realisation of these processes in English and Ukrainian syntaxemes may be achieved both by isomorphic and allomorphic ways and means, the main of which are as follows:

1. Extension which is achieved in both contrasted languages through adding subordinate components to an element that is the head/nucleus, i.e. subordinating in the syntaxeme. Extension in English and Ukrainian syntaxemes may be achieved both by syndetic, i.e. explicit, synthetic or analytical means or (which is more often in English) asyndetically, i.e. only by way of placement of components. These processes are naturally realised in smaller and larger syntactic units which are word-groups and sentences. The former consist of two or more notional words connected by isomorphic or allomorphic grammatical means and expressing some sense. Eg: *this book - these books, to see somebody - to see him; books for reading, library books, worth reading, red from excitement, to read much/well, very well,* etc. Such and the like word-groups are known to be *syntactically free* contrary to stable (усталені) or phraseological word-groups as, for example: *to throw light, to set free, to make steps,* etc. All word-groups in sentences usually perform the syntactic function of a part of the sentence.

As to their structure, word-groups can be unextended, i.e. consisting of two notional words *(read well, nice flowers, good enough)* and extended which consist of more than two notional words, e.g. *to go to work every day, not to know what to do, strike the iron while it is hot,* etc. Such and the like word-groups function as extended parts of the sentence as, for example, the extended subject in the following sentence:

- *her dark short hair* was neat   *... її чорні коротенькі коси* були
and glossy. (Maugham)   гладенькі й лиснючі.

Similarly extended in both contrasted languages may also be the simple and compound predicates, objects with attributive adjuncts and also adverbial modifies. For example, a simple phrasal predicate performed by an extended word-group:

She *gave* him a *slightly rueful smile.* Вона *ледь помітно окинула* його
(Ibid.)   *невеселим поглядом.*

Extended in both contrasted languages may equally be the compound nominal predicate as in the following English sentences and their Ukrainian structural equivalents:

282

| Their mother is *one of the village girls.* (Ibid.) | їхньою матір'ю є *одна з цих сільських дівчат.* |

Practically isomorphic by their structure are also extended objects with the adjunct attributes in both contrasted languages. Thus, the simple (unextended) word-group *her face* may be extended and function as an extended object in the following sentence:

| There was almost a frown *on her frank open pretty English face.* (Ibid.) | По *щирому, відкритому, гарному обличчі* англійки сковзнула тінь несхвалення. |

Extension may be achieved in English with the help of asyndetic *clustering of nouns* or other parts of speech forming syntactic (and semantic) strings of words or a regular tandem. For example: *school* library --» *school library* books --» *new school library* books --» *school library* books readers. Or such syndetic word-groups as *production* and *sale prices, production* and *also sale prices changes,* etc. Such and the like clusters of nouns or nominal sense groups, as was shown above, perform in English and Ukrainian utterances the functions of different extended parts of the sentence. Cf. the subject: *The latest New York and Washington terrorist air attacks* were aimed at intimidating America. (USA Today) The object: Cuba pays great attention to *this year's cane sugar production,* etc.

Extension of adverbial components is realised likewise, i.e. asyndetically. And not only in English, but in Ukrainian as well. Eg:

| "It (house) *is just round the bend,* to the left, *a few hundred yards".* (S.Hill) | "Будинок *там зразу за поворотам, по ліву руку, кілька сот ярдів звідси".* |

Ukrainian has no asyndetic substantival word - groups of this kind, though analytical joining of components may be observed in some cases of extension as well. Cf.: *можна спати* --» *можна довше спати* --» *можна взавтра довше поспати* --» *можна взавтра вранці довше поспати.* Consequently, the Ukrainian language is not completely devoid of extension via asyndetic clustering, though Ukrainian asyndetic clusters do not go into any comparison with the possible analytical ways

and means of extension in the syntactic units of present-day English. Even though many of them, as will be shown further, are of isomorphic nature in both these languages.

Apart from the above-named ways of realisation of syntactic processes achieved through **extension,** there are some others having isomorphic nature in the contrasted languages as well. They are: a) **Apposition,** which is equally often employed in English and Ukrainian. Eg: a woman doctor, the city of Kyiv/London, Shevchenko the poet, Shevchenko the painter, we all, they all, etc. Similarly in Ukrainian: жінка-лікар, місто Київ, Шевченко-поет, Шевченко-маляр, ми всі, вони всі.

An external syntactic transformation may equally be achieved via *parenthetic and inserted* words, word-groups or sentences that are incorporated into the structure of a syntactic unit by *addition* or *insertion.* For example:

He would, *of course,* say nothing. (B.Glanwill) That evening after supper - *her father had a taste for Middle East food* - Mary slipped out into the garden in great agitation. (D. Garnett)	Він, *звичайно/зазвичай,* нічого не відповів. Того вечора по вечері *(а її батько добре розумівся на смакових якостях близькосхідних страв)* вона вибігла страшенно збуджена в сад.

As can be seen, extension of the sentence was achieved by the author by way of an insertion of the whole sentence. In some texts (and rather often) parenthetic words and inserted words or phrases may be used side by side:

The percentage of college education, *John W. Gardner says,* has led many people to *assume falsely* that there is no other type of learning after school. (G. Schiffhorst, D. Pharr)	Звуження освіти багатьох людей до рівня коледжу, *на думку Дж. В. Гарднера,* привело багатьох до *невиправданої* думки, що після середньої школи взагалі не існує іншого типу освіти.

Here the parenthetic sentence *John W. Gardner says* and the inserted adverb *falsely* were introduced by the author additionally in order to extend the sense of the sentence.

B. *Detachment* is one more common way of external syntactic exten sion that is presumably of isomorphic nature in most languages. De tached (відокремленими) in English and Ukrainian may by any sec ond ary part of the sentence and detachment is achieved through ex tension by means of subordination. These may also include subordi nating con junctions or regular expansion, which is realised by way of co-ordination that may be achieved usually with the help of co ordinate conjunctions.

For example, detached attributes:

They're (Negroes) just like *children* *ж -*	*Таж вони просто як діти - такі*
just as easy-going, and always singing and laughing ... (D. Parker)	*добродушні* і завжди то співають, то сміються собі...

A detached apposition (also functioning as an extended part of the sentence):

And you know, he had *this old coloured nurse, this regular old nigger mammy* and he just simply loves her. (Ibid.)*	І знаєте, у нього навіть нянькою була стара негритянка, *справжнісінька негритоска мемі,* і він просто любить її.

Extension can also be achieved by other syntactic means, among which quite productive and often employed in the contrasted lan guages may be, for example, the one referred to as
C. *Specification.* This kind of syntactic process presents a way of syn tactic extension in English and Ukrainian which is achieved via a syn tac tic element/part of the sentence usually modified by one or more other complementing elements of the same nature and syntactic func tion. Though not necessarily of another lexico-grammatical class of words. As for example:

"I'm not *very tall, just average."* (A. Wilson)	Я не дуже *висока, якраз середня.*

' See more about the realisation of extension in English in: И.П. Иванова, В.В. Бурлакова, Г.Г. Почепцов. Теоретическая Грамматика современного английского языка. - М.: Высшая школа, 1981, р. 213-226.

285

"She's got *heaps of drink* there - "У неї там багато різних напоїв: *віскі,*
whisky, cherry brandy, crume de   *черрі-бренді, молочний лікер",*
menthe" (Ibid)

Hence, in the first sentence the meaning of the predicative **not
very tall** is specified, made more precise by the second part of the
predicative half *just average.* Practically an identical process is ob-
served in the second sentence where the objective complement *heaps
of drink* is specified by the names of these drinks: *whisky, cherry
brandy, crume de menthe.* Similarly specified are the equivalent com-
ponental parts in their Ukrainian translated sentences. Cf. *не дуже
висока, якраз середня; різні напої: віскі, черрі-бренді, молочний
лікер.*

Specification is more often employed for the identification of ad-
verbial parts of the sentence as in the following example:

In the *evening, about eight o'clock, Увечері, десь біля восьмої години,* він
he went dejectedly to call on Denny, пішов у невеселому настрої до Денні.
(Cronin)

Alongside of extension, though formed on cardinally different
principles of enlargement (on the basis of co-ordinate connection of
componental parts) and yet performing the same syntactic functions of
different parts of the sentence in the contrasted languages is *also ex-
pansion.*

2. Expansion as a syntactic process is equally aimed at enlarging
the content of word-groups and sentences in either of the contrasted
languages. It is no less often resorted to than extension though by its
nature it is a completely different syntactic process representing a co-
ordinate joining of components which are syntactically equal in rank.
Connected in this way and maintaining the syntactic status of compo-
nental parts of the syntactic units unchanged may be in English and
Ukrainian various parts of speech functioning as expanded parts of the
sentence. Expansion is usually achieved by way of *addition* (termed so
by Почепцов 1971: 121). The formed in this way (through addition)
strings of components usually function as homogeneous parts of the
sentence. For example, homogeneous subjects:

*The police, the fishmonger, boys   Полісмени, торгівець рибою, учні,
що*
going to school, dozens of people йшли до школи, десятки людей маха-

286

waved to him. (V.S. Pritchett)
There were *rumours, rumours, rumours...* (Dreiser)

ли йому руками. Щодалі більше ширились *чутки, чутки й чутки ...*

Expanded can also be in both contrasted languages the simple verbal predicate. For example:

Hercule Poirot *rose, crossed* to the writing-table, *wrote* out a cheque - and *handed* it to the other man. (Ibid.)

Геркул Пуаро *встав, підійшов* до писемного стола, *виписав* чека і *вручив* його другому чоловікові.

Such and the like simple verbal predicates in the contrasted languages are usually referred to, as was said above, to homogeneous. Expanded in this way may also be objects/objective complements. They may often be with prepositive or postpositive attributive adjuncts. For example:

- we passed *troops* marching under the rain, *guns, horses,* pulling wagons, *mules, motor trucks,* all moving from the front. (Hemingway)

... відступаючи, ми бачили *солдатів,* що йшли під дощем, *гармати, коні,* що тягнули вози, *мули, вантажні машини,* які відходили з передової.

Expanded (homogeneous) adverbial modifiers or adverbial complements, as they are usually termed, are equally common in both contrasted languages. Cf.:

Long, long, afterwards I found the arrow still unbroken. (Longfellow)

Геть-геть десь по тому, я знайшов ще цілою стрілу...

Apart from external syntactic processes there also exist some external ones in word-groups and sentences of the contrasted languages. The latter take place only in sentences and include omission and reduction that may be by their nature as follows: *1. Elliptical* which are often occurring in oral and written speech in two-member sentences and not only in the contrasted languages. Omitted may be in a two-member sentence only one or both principal parts of the sentence. For example, the subject and the predicate in the second sentence are omitted:

"When did you get in?"   - Ти коли прибув сюди?
"Yesterday morning". (H.E. Bates) - Вчора ввечері.

Here the subject ("you") and the predicate of the sentence ("did you get in") are omitted both in the English sentence and in its Ukrainian variant. Similar omissions may commonly be observed in spoken utterances in English and Ukrainian:

"I suppose you'*ve left school?"*   - Ти, здається, *покинув школу?*
"Last term". (Ibid.)   - Минулого семестру.

The adverbial modifier *Last term* in the last sentence accumulates the meaning of the whole previous utterance, or more precisely the whole its primary predication word-group "you've left school" that has a corresponding Ukrainian equivalent "Ти покинув школу?" Consequently, ellipsis as a syntactic process performs in both languages absolutely identical functions. Its transformational potential is mostly used in both languages for economising the speech effort as well as for achieving the necessary expressiveness in oral and written speech.

Maintained as a result of omission may sometimes be only the object in the elliptical sentence:

"What do you *want* from me?"   - Що ти *хочеш* від мене?
"Everything". (Ibid.)   - Все.

The subject *(you)* and the predicate *(want)* in this sentence are omitted in English and consequently they may be omitted in Ukrainian. Moreover, the subject in Ukrainian elliptical sentences may often be omitted as well, though not the predicate, which is impossible in English in such sentences as the following one: *Рахунки* за імпорт газу надійшли? -Давно *надійшли* (or simply: *надійшли).*

The omitted subject in this Ukrainian definite personal sentence is clearly reflected in the categorial (plural) ending of the predicate *надійшли (рахунки).* Since the English language has no definite personal sentences, no omission of its subject and maintaining of the predi-

288

cate (as in Ukrainian) is ever possible. Nevertheless, English predicates may often be partly reproduced in elliptical sentences which is, on the other hand, only in some cases possible in Ukrainian:

"Do you *think* I'm a selfish brute?"	- Ти що, *вважаєш* мене грубою егоїсткою?
"Of course not, Frank, you know що *I don't*.	- Звичайно ні, Франку, ти ж знаєш, *не вважаю.*
"Can you *believe* me?"	- Ти *можеш* мені *повірити?*
"Sure I *can."* (I. Carry)	- Безперечно, *можу/Звичайно, мо-жу.,*

Therefore, the auxiliary and modal verbs in the last two-sentences ("*I don't", "I can")* represent the meaning of the predicates "Do+think" and "Can+believe". Modal verbs in Ukrainian mostly maintain this substituting functions as well (cf. Ви *можете* взавтра мені зателефонувати? — *Можу/* or *Не можу).* Sometimes it is stylistically quite relevant and there is common use of such English elliptical sentences as in answers to the following interrogative sentence: "Had you forgotten I *was* a policeman?" - '*Was?'* "You *are* a policeman". (L.P. Hartley)

Among other internal syntactic process pertaining to the English or to Ukrainian oral and written speech the following are most often employed:

2. *Representation* (репрезентація) which is a particular process of syntactic substitution alien to the Ukrainian language. It represents a kind of reduction in which the component of a syntaxeme is used to present the content of the whole syntactic unit, which remains in the preceding syntaxeme but its meaning is implicitly represented by some element. For example: "I don't know if he's hungry, but I *am."* (I. Baldwin) Here the linking verb *am* in the closing co-ordinate clause *(but I am)* represents the whole subordinate clause "if he's hungry".

No less often used alongside of the linking verb in present-day English is the syntactic *substituting particle* **to.** Eg. "He thought of making another *phone call,* but he realised that he was afraid *to".* (Ibid.) The representing particle *to* in the final clause here is used as a kind of replacement for the prepositional object performed in the sentence by the word-group *making another phone call.* Similarly in the replying sentence to the following one: "I'm a fool to *tell you anything".* And the

289

answer to this sentence is: "You'd be a bigger fool *not to"*. (J. Carre)
Here the representing part *not to* in the replying sentence is used instead of the adverbial part of the first sentence *to tell you anything.*
Representation may also be realised with the help of such words as *not, one, do/did* and even with the help of the syntactic formant '*-s/-s'*, as in the following sentence: The other voice was raised now, it was a *woman's.* (Maugham) The -'*s* in the sentence represents/ substitutes the noun *voice,* i.e. *a woman's voice.*

3. Contamination (суміщення) is another internal process in which two syntaxemes merge into one predicative unit as in the following sentence: The moon *rose red.* This means: The moon *rose +* she was *red.* Or in Ukrainian: Наталка *прибігла сердита, задихана.* (О. Гончар), i.e. Наталка прибігла + (Наталка) була сердита + (Наталка) була задихана. Or: Шлях *лежить великий.* (О. Довженко), i.e. шлях *лежить +* шлях *великий.*

Partly close to contamination is also the secondary predication construction with the English past participle that has practically an identical equivalent construction in Ukrainian. Cf. They found the door *unlocked* (that is: they found the door, it/which was unlocked). Вони застали двері, відімкненими: вони застали двері, вони/ які були *відімкненими.*

4. Compression represents a syntactic process which is closely con nected with reduction and with the secondary predication complex as illustrated above, but it exists only in English. This syntactic process is most often observed in English with the nominative absolute participial constructions, which are usually transformed in speech. Cf. He stood beside me in silence, *his candle in his hand.* (C. Doyle) The nominative absolute participial construction in this sentence is a reduced transform from the construction his *candle being* or *having been* in his hand. The Ukrainian transformed variants of this secondary predicate/complex will be either a participial/diyepryslivnyk construction *тримаючи свічку в руці,* or a co-ordinate clause *а свічка була в руці,* or simply *зі свічкою в руці.*

The mentioned above external and internal syntactic processes do not completely exhaust all possible ways of transformation taking place

290

within English and Ukrainian sentences. And yet they graphically testify to the existence of isomorphic and allomorphic features that characterise respectively the syntactic systems of each contrasted language.

Syntactic Relations and Ways of their Realisation

Unlike some syntactic processes as, for example, representation that is observed in English and is completely alien to present-day Ukrainian and other languages, the syntactic relations in contradiction to them present a phenomenon characteristic of all the 5651 languages of the world. Syntactic relations, therefore, constitute a universal feature and are realised depending on their grammatical nature either at sentence level or at word-group (словосполучення) level.

There exist four types of syntactic relations that are also realised in different languages partly via different means. These are: **1) predicative relations; 2) objective relations; 3) attributive relations and 4) various adverbial relations.**

Not all these relations are equally represented in the contrasted languages. Thus, predicative relations may be in English and in most other West European Germanic and Romance languages of two subtypes: **a) primary predicative relations and b) secondary predicative** relations. The latter, it must be emphasised, are erroneously considered to be completely missing in present-day Ukrainian.

I. Primary predication is universal. It finds its realisation between the subject and predicate in any two-member sentence of any paradigmatic form or structural type. Consequently, primary predication presents a grammatical/syntactic and logico-semantic relation on the *Subject-Predicate axis*. Eg:

"I never <u>said</u> I <u>was</u> a beauty".　　　 - Я ніколи <u>не казав,</u> що <u>я є красе-</u>
<u>нем.</u> -
<u>he laughed.</u> (Maugham)　　　　 <u>сказав, *усміхнувшись,* він.</u>

In this quotation three predicates of two types are realised: two simple verbal predicates (/ *said, he <u>laughed]</u>* and one compound nominal predicate (I <u>was a beauty).</u> These types of predicate are presented in

Ukrainian as well. Cf. <u>Я не казав, усміхнувся він</u>, and <u>Я є красенем.</u>

Consequently, predication of these sentences in both contrasted languages has an identical expression.

This expression can also be different, as can be observed in the following interrogative sentences below:

1. "What *did* she *want?"* (Ibid.)   "Чого вона *хотіла'?"* (Cf. Чого їй
                                            треба було?)
2. "What *have* I *done?"* (V.S. Pritchett) "Що *я вчинив?/* Що *я зробив?"*
3. "She *was trying to help you".* (Ibid.) "Вона *намагалася допомогти*
                                            тобі."

Hence, the primary predicative relation may have different forms of expression in the contrasted languages. English predicates may have analytical forms of the verb (did + <u>want,</u> have + <u>done,</u> was trying+ to help) with no analytical equivalents for the same simple predicates in Ukrainian. This may be seen from many other sentences as well, which testify to the difference between the means of expression of the primary predication in the contrasted languages. Cf.:

"I'm off, Dick, it*'s good-bye* till   "Я *від'їжджаю,* Діку, а це *означає*
до
Christmas". (D. Lessing)   побачення аж до Різдва".

In this sentence both predicates in the English variant are compound nominal, whereas in Ukrainian their equivalents are two simple verbal predicates instead: <u>Я від'їжджаю</u> and <u>Це означає.</u>

On the other hand, there also exist some differences in expressing predicative relations in Ukrainian that are unknown in English. These include first of all the placement of the predicate in Ukrainian, since the inflexional morphemes always identify person, number and tense form of the verb/predicate irrespective of its position in the sentence. Cf. Він *мусив* це *знати. — Знати мусив* він це. *— Мусив* він це *знати. — Знати* він це *мусив.* - Це *знати* він *мусив.* - Він *знати* це *мусив.* Despite the change of placement in the sentence, the Ukrainian predicate preservers its syntactic function unchanged. As a result, the **grammaticality** of the sentence is not ruined. It goes without saying that the corresponding English sentence *(He must have known* it) can not be

transformed this way, except for its interrogative form *(Must he have known it?)* where part of the predicate *(must)* may change its place in the sentence.

Besides, placement may often be used in Ukrainian as a reliable means of expressing and often also as a means distinguishing between the predicative and attributive relations in a word-group or sentence. Cf.:

Attributive Relations	*Predicative Relations*
гарна погода, *червоне небо;*	Погода *гарна,* небо *червоне,*
працююче колесо/ устаткування;	Колесо/ устаткування *працююче,*
розбита клумба, *засіяне* поле, etc.	Клумба *розбита,* поле *засіяне.*

As can be ascertained, prepositive adjectives as well as present and past participles form the attributive relation, whereas those same adjectives and participles in postposition to those same nouns form in Ukrainian a predicative relation. Eg. *Тепле* літо - Літо *тепле. Посаджені* дерева - Дерева *посаджені.* In other words, preposed adjectives and past participles express quality and postposed adjectives/participles express state of things and form simple nominal (and not compound nominal) predicates. This assertion is based on the absence of the linking verb which can be substantiated in Ukrainian via an extension of the sentence, eg.: Грядка засіяна *гарної добірним зерном/ торік пізньої осені,* etc.

//. Secondary predicative relation is formed in English by verbals in connection with other nominal parts of speech. The secondary predication constructions are formed in English by the so-called infinitival, participial and gerundial *complexes,* which function as various parts of the sentence. The nomenclature of them is as follows 1) the objective and the subjective with the infinitive constructions which perform respectively the function of the complex object and that of the complex subject. For example:

He stood by the creek and heard *it ripple* over the stones. (Cusack)	Він стояв біля струмка і чув *як він (струмок) хлюпоче по* камінцях.
He stood watching the *red dawn єть-*	Він стояв і спостерігав, *як народжу-*
break in the east. (Caldwell)	*ся (червоний) світанок* на сході.

It goes without saying that the complex object expressed in this Ukrainian translation through the object subordinate clauses can also be conveyed with the help of nouns. Cf. Він чув хлюпіт/жебоніння води по камінцях or in the second sentence: Він спостерігав за народженням світанку на сході. Neither of these Ukrainian variants conveys the nature of the secondary predication expressed by the English objective with the infinitive constructions.

Similarly with *the subjective with the* infinitive complexes, which may be formed by turning the objective with the infinitive constructions passive. Cf. it (creek) was heard to ripple over the stones i.e. чулося/ було чути, як *вода хлюпоче по камінцях.* Or in such sentences:

You seem not *to have caught* my idea. (Harley) *The operation* is expected *to start* in 48 hours. (К. Post)	- *Ти,* здається, *не зовсім зрозумів,* що я хочу сказати/ мою думку. Очікується, що (антитерористична) *операція почнеться* за 48 годин.

The subjective with the infinitive construction in English sentences has the function of the complex subject that is allomorphic for Ukrainian. Lexically and structurally isomorphic, however, is the English multifunctional secondary predication construction/complex of *the for + to + infinitive.* This English construction can perform the function of the complex subject, complex predicative, complex object, complex attribute and complex adverbial parts of the sentence. For example, the complex subject: *"For you to decide* it won't be easy." (Hartley); the complex predicative: "That *is for you to decide* is it not?" (C. Doyle); the complex object: She wanted to *wait for the moon to rise.* (Galsworthy); the complex attribute: "There is *nothing for us to change* at present, you see." (A. Wilson), etc.

One more secondary predication group constitute participial constructions/complexes which are functionally similar to the infinitival constructions and are: a) the objective with the present or past participles performing the function of the complex object: She heard *the door closing.* (Galsworthy). I will have some *photographs taken.* (Caldwell). These secondary predication constructions perform the same functions in the English sentences as the objective with the infinitive complexes.

294

Note. It should be repeatedly emphasised that there is one more secondary predication construction which is practically identical in English and Ukrainian. It also performs the same function in the sentence. This is the already mentioned objective with the past participle (or adjective) construction, which has not only an identical meaning in both contrasted languages, but also the same structural form. It is treated in present-day Ukrainian grammars as double predicate (подвійний присудок). For example:

1 found the *windows closed.*	Я застав *вікна зачиненими.*
We remember *him quite young.*	Ми пам'ятаємо *його зовсім молодші.*
They found *the soldier wounded.*	Вони знайшли *воїна пораненим.*

Consequently, the predicative nature of the objective with the past participle is isomorphic in the contrasted languages, which is not the case with the objective present participle construction, that is completely allomorphic for Ukrainian. Cf. I hear *you reading* (pronoun *you*+present participle). Я знаю, як *ти читаєш* (connective adverb *як* + objective subordinate clause, i.e. a complex sentence), which is but a simple (extended) sentence in English.

One more English secondary predication construction constitutes the subjective/ nominative absolute participial complex that is practically allomorphic for Ukrainian. The functions of this secondary predication construction is mostly adverbial. For example: She walked steadily, *the showel in front,* held like a spear in both hands. (D. Lessing) or: Charlie stood with the rain on his shoulders, *his hands in his pockets.* (Ibid.) Both italicised adverbial constructions have the functions of the complex attendent circumstances *(How/ in what way did he hold her showel? How/ in what way did Charlie stand?).* The nominative absolute participial construction may also perform the functions of the adverbial modifiers of time or cause. For example: *This being done,* they set off with light hearts. (Irving). In this sentence two functions may be implicit simultaneously - that of the adverbial modifier of time *(When did they set off!)* and that of the adverbial modifier of cause: *Why did they set off!* The answers may also be respectively two: either 1) *after that being done* or 2) *because that was being done.*

///. ***Objective relations.*** These, like the predicative, attributive and adverbial relations are undoubtedly pertained to all languages without exception. They are directed by the action of the transitive verb on some object, which may be either a life or lifeless component. Hence, the notions of seeing/hearing somebody or something of being given smth. by somebody, etc. are pertained to each single language and to all lan guages of the world irrespective of their structural/typological differenc es. Hence, depending on the concrete language, these relations may have different/unlike forms of expression i.e. realisation. Thus, the notion to <u>*giving something*</u> to <u>*somebody*</u> <u>can be expressed as follows:</u>

Language	Realisation of case relation
In Ukrainian	дати книжку (accusative case) Петрові (dative case)
In English	Give a book *to* Peter/give Peter a book (no case forms)
In German	Ein Buch (accusative case) *dem Peter* (dative case) ge-ben Dein Peter (dative case) ein Buch (accusative case) geben
In Italian	Dare il libro *a* Pietro/ dare *a Pietro* il libro (no case
In French	donner la livre a Pierre/ donner a Pierre la livre
In Spanish	dar a Pedro el libro/ dar el libro a Pedro

Therefore only in Ukrainian and German the objective case relation of nouns and in the former the accusative case of them (cf. Взяти/дати книжку, листа, дитину) have a synthetic way of expression. English, German, French, Italian and Spanish (like some other languages) have no synthetic expression of case (objective, accussative and some others) of nouns and consequently of case relations either, which are expressed analytically (by means of prepositions). Cf.

"Come on", said Mr. Sloan *to Tom,* "we're late". (Fitzgerald)

"Ходім", - сказав *Томові* пан Слоан, -ми запізнюємось.

Isomorphism is observed, however, in the syntactic connection of the English or Italian objects expressed by some personal pronouns which take the objective case form (cf. for me, her, him, us, them; a me, a te, a noi/a voi, etc.). The expression of the objective relation coincides then not only in English and Ukrainian (cf. in German: gib *ihm/ ihnen* or in Italian *date mi,* etc.). This can be seen in following examples:

"Tell *him* we could wait, will you?" But the rest offended *her.* (Ibid.)

"Скажіть *йому,* ми почекаємо. Добре?" Все інше ображало *її.*

Objective relations can also be expressed via a preposition and the synthetic form of the governed nominal part of speech (usually personal pronoun in English). Eg:

"You hadn't any pity *for me,* had you?" Walter could only stare *at him.* (L.P. Hartly)

"Ти не мав *до мене* ніякого жалю, правда ж?" Волтер тільки вирячився *на нього.*

Objective relations, therefore, can be expressed in English and in several other languages with the help of analytical means including the syntactic placement of objective complements. For example, in English:

Mary sat *next to Diana.* "Just listen *to your husband",* Diana *exclaimed.* (Ibid.)

Мері підсіла *до Діани.* - Ти тільки прислухайся до *свого чоловіка! - вигукнула* Діана.

As can be ascertained, objective relations in each English sentence are perceived due to the logico-grammatical nature of the parts of the sentence and due to their functional significance. In the sentence above the objective relations are realised partly through the position of the objects which (their position) is usually stable in English, i.e. always following the predicate, as well as with the help of prepositions: *next to* Diana, *to your* husband. In Ukrainian these objective relations are conveyed with the help of the prepositional government (preposition plus the *dative* case ending: *до* Діани) and via inflexions (свого чоловіка, the accusative case of the direct object *чоловіка).*

The fixed placement of these objects in Ukrainian is not obligatory and can easily be changed without ruining the objective relation in the sentences. Cf. *До* Діани підсіла Мері, or: свого чоловіка тільки послухай. Such kind of transformation is usually impossible in English. Though not without exceptions either, as in some emphatic sentences like Talent Mr. Micowber has, *capital* Mr. Micowber has not. (Dickens) In Ukrainian too placement on rare occasions can be employed to distinguish the

subject from the object or vice versa as in the following sentences:

Радість сповнює серце (object) but: Серце (subj.) сповнює радість (object). Дні змінюють ночі (object)　　　　but: Ночі (subj.) змінюють дні (object). Вітри супроводжують дощі (object) but: Дощі (subj.) супроводжують вітри (object).

Such cases can naturally be considered coincidental, since objects in Ukrainian have mostly inflexional identification except for cases when nouns are indeclinable, as in sentences like Вони оформили <u>фойє</u>, ми взяли <u>таксі,</u> їй подобається <u>кімоно/сарі,</u> etc. Foreign indeclinable nouns of the kind do not loose their objective functions as a result of transposition. Cf. *Фойє* (object) оформили вони; *Сарі* (object) їй подобається/ не подобається; *Таксі* (object) ми взяли, etc.

IV. Attributive relations. These are formed in all languages between adjuncts and head words (subordinating parts) of nominal word-groups. This can be seen, for example, in the following English sentence and its Ukrainian counterpart:

The *young man* was still fresh, with *jaunty fair hair* and *alert eyes*. (D. Lessing)

Молодий шахтар ще був свіжим новачком з *неслухняною світлою чуприною* і *жвавими очима*.

The attributive components in the English sentence *(young man, jaunty fair hair, alert eyes)* do not agree syntactically with their head nouns as their Ukrainian equivalents do (cf. молодий шахтар, неслухняною чуприною, свіжим новачком, жвавими очима). Each Ukrainian adjunct reflects the grammatical number, case and gender of its head noun through the corresponding endings. The English adjuncts, on the contrary, rarely combine with their head components by means of their inflexions, the main means being semantic and syntactic placement (often with prepositions). This becomes especially evident in cases with the indeclinable adjuncts which are, for example, infinitives, gerunds, adverbs and other parts of speech (or their paradigmatic forms). For example: books for reading, books *to read/to be read and to be translated,* September *five/fifth,* the *then governments,* etc. Such kind of adjuncts are

298

rare through not completely excluded in Ukrainian. For example: ба-
жання *виграти, бажання відпочити,* номер *два* (alongside of но-
мер *другий/ другий* номер), etc. The overwhelming majority of
Ukrainian adjuncts, however, agree with the head word in number,
case and gender. Cf. *гарний* день, *гарна* погода, *гарне* вбрання, *гар-
ні* квіти; *перший* день, *першого* дня, *першої* зміни, *першій* зміні,
перше змагання, *першого* змагання, *перші* сходи, *перших* сходів,
першим сходам, etc.

Therefore, attributive relations in Ukrainian are mostly expressed
with the help of synthetic means, i.e. via inflections, which is observed
only in some four cases in English (when the adjuncts are the demon-
strative pronouns *this, that, such_a* and *many_a* in singular and *these,
those, such* and *many* in plural). Eg: *this* dumb *beast, that hand, these
bandages, those bitter lips, such a* day - *such days,* many a boy - *many
boys* (S. Chaplin). In Ukrainian, naturally, all adjectives, ordinal nu-
merals, participles and adjectives-pronouns agree in number, case and
gender with the head word. Cf.: *червоний місяць, червона квітка,
червоне небо, червоні очі; працюючий мотор, працююча зміна,
працююче колесо, працюючі люди; твій брат, твого брата, твоя
сестра, твоєї сестри, твоє пальто, твого пальта, (в) твоєму
пальті, твої проблеми, твоїх проблем, твоїм проблемам,* etc.

Nevertheless Ukrainian adjuncts may sometimes not agree in num-
ber, case and gender (as it is mostly in English). It happens when the
adjunct is an indeclinable part of speech or a word-group. Eg.: бажан-
ня *поспати,* фільм *"Вони боролися за волю батьківщини",* акція
"Допоможемо дітям-інвалідам", etc. Such and the like attributive
word-groups are common in English. Cf. *They fought for their moth-
erland* picture, *America fights back* action, *boy and girl* affair, *night
shift* workers, etc.

Generally, however, attributive relations in English and Ukrainian
are realised with the help of quantitatively the same but qualitatively
rather different means and ways of connection (and expression).

V. Adverbial relations in the contrasted languages are created
both in co-ordinate and in subordinate word-groups to express differ-
ent adverbial meanings. The latter may find their realisation in iso-
morphic by syntactic connection and componental structure co-
ordinate or subordi-

nate word-groups. Subordinate word-groups can be in all European languages substantival, verbal, adverbial and others. Co-ordinate word-groups expressing adverbial relations may be a) substantival: in winter and/or in summer (time) *зимою та/чи літом;* by hook or by crook *усіма правдами і неправдами* (manner), b) adverbial, i.e. consisting of adverbial components: quickly and well *швидко й добре* (manner or attendant circumstances); neither seldom nor often *ні часто ні рідко* (time or frequency), etc.

Subordinate word-groups expressing adverbial relations and meanings may be 1) **substantival:** rains in March; university winter examinations in Ukraine, the harvest of 2002, дощі *в березні, зимові іспити в університетах України, урожай 2002 року', винаходи 20 ст.,* etc.

2) **Verbal word-groups** expressing local or temporal meanings and those of attendant circumstances: to *work/to be working there* (local adv. relation), *come/coming soon,* raising *early,* arrive *next week/on Sunday* (temporal relations), *to work hard, to speak slowly,* (adverbial relation of manner), etc. Similarly in Ukrainian: мешкати *в Україні,* працювати *тут/там,* приходити *невдовзі/скоро,* приїжджати *наступного тижня/в неділю,* вставати *рано,* працювати *добре,* говорити *повільно.*

3) **Adverbial word-groups** are formed on the basis of adverbs or adverbial phrases (as heads): very *well, seriously* enough, rather *well,* very *early, soon* enough, *late* on Sunday, *early* in 2001, somewhere *there,* almost *here,* etc. And in Ukrainian: досить *добре,* зовсім *серйозно,* дуже *рано,* ще *рано, пізно* в неділю, *наприкінці* 2002 року, десь *там,* майже *тут/ на окраїні.*

4) **Co-ordinate adverbial word-groups:** soon and well, slowly but certainly, early or late, neither here nor there, here and everywhere, etc. *скоро й повільно зате напевне, рано чи пізно, ні тут ні там, тут і скрізь,* etc.

The adverbial relations in all languages usually coincide with various adverbial meanings, the main of which are as follows:

1. Temporal relations which express adverbial meanings of time or frequency: *the meeting in 1991 or: the 1991 meeting, the detention of last August or: the last August detention, зустріч 1991 року,* затримання *минулого серпня, зустріч у понеділок,* etc.

2. Local relations: the house *in Manhattan,* life *near the seaport,* meetings *at the hotel,* помешкання *в Мангеттені,* життя *біля/ поблизу морського порту,* зустрічі *в готелі.*

Syntactic Relations in English and Ukrainian

As could be already noticed, various syntactic relations in the contrasted languages can be realised both by isomorphic and by allomorphic means. The latter pertain to both languages, though analytical means are naturally predominant in English, whereas synthetic or combined analytical and synthetic means are predominant in Ukrainian. An exception constitutes, however, only one relation (that of the primary predication) whose expression finds its realisation between the main parts of the sentence, i.e. between the subject and the predicate. This type of connection is often qualified as *interdependence,* that is dependence of the subject on the predicate on the one hand, and dependence of the predicate upon the subject on the other. This means that primary predication is realised, at least in English, only on the S-P axis, though in some other languages it may be realised even without one (S or P) of these components. As for instance, in Latin: *veni, vidi, vici* or in present-day Italian, Ukrainian or Russian: *Amo patria mia/* Люблю свою Батьківщину. Люблю свою родину. The predicate verbs *amo* and *люблю* correlate with the implicit subject (io, я) expressing its number, person and case.

The other three relations, which also pertain to all languages, i.e. the objective, the attributive and the adverbial ones can be realised with the help of different means that are grammatically relevant. Namely by a) syntactic placement and prepositions (analytical means); b) by morphological, i.e. synthetic means (inflexions), as well as with the help of combined means, i.e. synthetic plus analytical means simultaneously. Thus, the predicate in English statements always follows, as a rale, the subject, whereas in Ukrainian the simple verbal predicate even in unemphatic speech may precede the subject without ruining the grammaticality of the sentence. Eg:

Mary was listening; but she still проте	Слухала Мері (or Мері слухала),
said nothing. (F. King)	вона нічого не відповідала/ мовчала.

In English interrogative or (emphatic) sentences a part of the predicate may be placed in front of the subject/subject group, which is not necessarily followed in their Ukrainian counterpart sentence. For example:

"Were you ever *compelled* to mutilate the animals?" (S. Chaplin)	- Тебе *примушували* будь-коли калічити тварин?
"Would you *like us to send* somebody now?" (Hartley)	-*Хотіли б* ви, щоб ми когось зараз послали?

Therefore, English predicates, wether simple or compound, rarely occupy, unlike predicates in Ukrainian, the initial position in the interrogative sentence. Though not without exceptions either. Cf. "He *was* there too". *"Was* he really?" or in the imperative sentences like *Come* here, my dear. *Іди* сюди, дорогенький. Or: *Do get* your boy to bring *it* here. (F. King) *Скажи* своєму хлопцеві, щоб він хутенько його приніс сюди (японський екран).

English simple verbal and compound nominal predicates, however, are in syntactic agreement (expressed through morphological means) with the subject. Cf. *"I'm* off, Dad, *it's* good bye till Christmas". (Less-ing) "Who *is* that in your flat?" "Who *are* they?" (W. Trevor)

All four predicates in these sentences *(am, is, are)* agree with their subjects in singular (first person) and correspondingly with *It* and *who* which are in the third person singular or plural. The same is observed in the preceding sentence where the predicate *(Was* she really) agrees in number and person with its subject *he.*

It is only partly so with the expression of the objective relation which may be realised in English and Ukrainian both synthetically and analytically as well:

We passed *him through* the *narrow way;* others relieved us. (S. Chaplin)	- Ми передали *його* по *вузькому проходу;* інші допомагали *нам.*

The first object *(him)* is direct and it is expressed through its morphological (synthetic) form *him* (objective case); the second object is prepositional *(through the narrow way)* and the third *(us)* has also a morphological (synthetic) form that expresses its objective function. In the

Ukrainian counterpart of this sentence the objective relation has a synthetic expression in the first direct object *його* (as in English) and in the indirect object *нам* (synthetic expression, like in English). As to the prepositional object, its connection in Ukrainian differs from that in English in that it is prepositional and morphologically marked (по проходу). In other words it is combined (analytical, i.e. prepositional) and synthetic (objective case form *по проходу)*. Hence, Ukrainian nouns express their dependence by means of their case forms (cf. дав книжку Петренкові товаришці, товаришам/товаришкам). Exceptions are made for the already mentioned indeclinable nouns as in Вона зайшла в *фойє/*сіла в *таксі,* Вона у новому *кімоно,* сперечатися про *галіфе,* цікавитися працями *Монтеск'є.* The synthetic expression of objective relation in Ukrainian, unlike English, have also substantivised adjectives, present and past participles, and also numerals. Cf. задоволений новим (побаченим і почутим), зеленим та жовтим; зустрітися зі знайомим, з трьома/з першим. Synthetically dependent objective complements/ objects in Ukrainian may equally be indefinite and other pronouns. For example: зостатись/ вернутись з нічим, цікавитись усім, звести одного з одним, цікавитись кимсь, ніким і нічим. Many English pronominal objects of this type are naturally unmarked, i.e. they have no case distinction. Cf. He heard *nothing.* (S. Chaplin) Він *нічого* не чув. In Ukrainian *нічого* is the objective case form of the indefinite pronoun *ніщо,* whose equivalent *nothing* is indeclinable in English. Similarly with the English wholly substantivised adjectives which, unlike their Ukrainian equivalents, do not express their objective (or nominative) case form synthetically. For example:

<u>Pink</u> became royal <u>red. Blue</u> rose Синє	Рожеве ставало густо-червоним.
into <u>purple.</u> (Norris)	ставало пурпуровим.

Therefore, objective relations in English are expressed predominantly in the analytical way, i.e. by means of syntactic placement or with the help of syntactic placement and/plus the prepositional connection of objective complements (cf. satisfied with *them/us).*

The *attributive relation* and its realisation in English does not differ

303

much from the realisation of the objective relations, there being both synthetic and analytical means employed. The former, as has been pointed out above, are reduced in present-day English to a few standard cases involving only the four pairs of demonstrative pronouns *this - these, that - those, such a - such, many a - many.* These pronouns express their attributive function with the help of their form in singular and plural, i.e. they agree in number with their head nouns (cf. *This day - these days, that book — those books, such an event — such events, many a boy - many boys).* Other ways and means of expressing the attributive relation in English are analytical. Namely, the preposed or postpositional placement of attributive components (adjectives, participles, numerals, pronouns) which do not agree either in number, case or gender with their head components (nuclei). *Cf. jaunty fair hair, alert eyes, shining face, the only child, sweated bloody sweats,* the *drizzling darkness, the atmosphere of trade union meetings* (after D. Lessing). Neither of the above-given attributive adjectives, present or past participles and adverbs agrees with the head noun. Nor does the postpositive prepositional word-group functioning as an attribute agree synthetically with the head noun in the last example above (e.g. the *atmosphere of trade union meetings).* Neither do gerundial and infinitival adjuncts agree with their head nouns or subordinating word-groups performing their function. Cf. books *to read,* articles *to be translated* or: books *for reading* (what books?).

One more way of expressing attributive relation is that by means of the so-called synthetic formant ('s) (Vorontsova: 10, 1950) as in the word-group *her widowed mother's child.* This synthetic element ('s) does nor express any categorical (morphological) meaning, it performs only a connective function. Consequently, the realisation of the attributive relation in English as compared with Ukrainian, so far as the means of expression are concerned, can be qualified as mainly allomorphic.

Adverbial relations in each of the contrasted languages are mostly realised with the help of the same means as the objective and partly the attributive relations. These means of connection are analytical (placement or placement plus prepositions in English) and synthetic or combined (analytical plus synthetic) in Ukrainian. Cf. in English: (to) work hard (how? the adverbial relations of attendant circumstances); hard

work (what work? the attributive relation). Therefore, syntactic placement is the only means in English (here). In Ukrainian word-groups like працювати *важко* and *важко* працювати the change of place of the adverb *важко* does not change in any way the syntactic relation in the word-group, which remains in both variants adverbial (as in the English word-groups *to work hard).*

Other paradigmatic classes of word-groups in English and Ukrainian may have both isomorphic and allomorphic realisation of adverbial relations. Isomorphism is observed in adverbial word-groups as: *very* well *дуже* добре, early *enough досить* рано, *quite* seriously *зовсім* серйозно, rather *slowly досить* повільно, etc.

Syntactic placement or juxtaposition may be often enforced by way of prepositions preceding the adverbial word-group as in the following English sentence:

She looked at him with mild surprise, Вона *глянула* на нього *трохи* blushed. (Jessing)   *здивовано,* червоніючи.

The attendant circumstance in the English sentence (How did she look at him? <u>With mild surprise)</u> has a combined expression: preposition *with* + adjective *(mild)* + noun *(surprise),* whereas in Ukrainian this same meaning can be expressed by means of an adverb *здивовано* or with the help of a prepositional noun *(із здивуванням),* i.e. with the help of prepositional government. Since in English there is no genuine government of nouns, as the noun is practically indeclinable, it can not express any attendant circumstance through its morphological (case) form as it is the case in Ukrainian. Neither can the causal meaning be expressed in this way in English (cf. to *live from hand to mouth* жити в злиднях, to be *absent because of illness* бути відсутнім *через хворобу).* Therefore, the accusative case form of the noun хвороба is used in Ukrainian), i.e. prep. + Naccusative, the analytical and synthetic way of expression. Syntactic placement (juxtaposition or adjoinment) is also the main means of realisation of temporal and local relations in English, which was already partly illustrated above. It is often observed in Ukrainian as well. Eg. to come/coming *today* приїжджати *сьогодні,* come/coming

in time прийти/приїхати *вчасно,* early *today* сьогодні *вранці.* In Ukrainian, however, adverbial components may change their place because of the logical/emphatic stress: учора *звечора - звечора* вчора, прийти *раніше - раніше* прийти. The means of connection, however, remains the same, i.e. analytical (placement, i.e. juxtaposition). This way of grammatical connection in both languages can often go along with prepositional connection which is usually an explicit form of prepositional government in Ukrainian. For example:

- by the way, your mother **is in town.** "... між іншим, ваша матір (є) у **місті".**
(J.Cary)
There was no one else **on the beach** Уже більш нікого не було **на пляжі в**

so late in the afternoon. (S. Hill)   **таку пізню годину пополудні.**

The local meaning in the first English sentence is expressed only through the postpositive placement of the noun *town (in town),* whereas in Ukrainian this same adverbial relation (local meaning) is conveyed (and expressed) with the help of the preposition (у) and/plus the case form (locative) of the noun **town (у місті),** i.e. prepositional government.

Similarly realised are also local and temporal relations in the second sentence. In English: was **on the beach** (prepositional connection), in Ukrainian **не було на пляжі** (preposition plus the locative case ending, i. e. syntactic government of the noun **пляж/на пляжі).** The temporal meanings (and relations) in the English and Ukrainian sentences have some isomorphic and allomorphic expression as well. The main means in English here is placement (so plus **late**) and prepositional connection (late **in the afternoon),** whereas in Ukrainian there is observed the combined, i.e. the analytical and synthetic ways of connection in the temporal word-group (у **таку годину),** but there is a purely asyndetic (analytical connection, i.e. juxtaposition прилягання) in the second temporal word-group (у пізню **годину пополудні).** This is because the adverb **пополудні** is indeclinable and is adjoined to the synthetic head/ nucleus у **пізню годину** (пополудні).

Consequently, the same syntactic relations in English and Ukrainian word-groups are mostly realised with the help of different means. The

latter also display, as will be shown further, their cardinally different quantitative correlation in English and Ukrainian subordinate word - groups.

Typology of the Word-Group/Phrase

The word-group in both contrasted languages consists of two or more grammatically connected notional parts of speech expressing some content. Word-groups in English and Ukrainian may be: 1) **syntactically free combinations of words** like *to learn much, to learn hard, to learn quickly, to learn well, to learn there/here,* etc. or 2) **idiomatically bound** (constant) collocations, i. e. unchanged for the given sense word-combinations as *to have dinner/supper, to take measures, to throw light, Hobson's choice,* etc.

Free word-groups or word-combinations exist alongside of prepositional phrases which are often considered even to be of the same nature as the idiomatic word-groups [7]. Genuine syntactically free word-groups, unlike prepositional phrases, are used to name actions *(quick reading),* objects *(a new hat),* state of objects *(the house ablaze),* number or quantity *(two thirds, the first three);* also they may give characteristics of an action *(singing well, going quickly, arriving first — новий капелюх, йому/Миколі страшно, дві третіх, перші три, швидко йти, гарно читати).*

Common features are also observed in the structural forms of word-groups in the contrasted languages. They are:

1. Simple or elemental word-groups which consist of two immediate components /ICs/ connected with the help of one grammatical means (synthetic or analytical): *this book — these books, to see her; to read well; nice flowers; cotton yarn, people of rank; ця книжка — ці книжки, бачити її; гарно читати, дуже добре, зайти у фойє, вийти з метро.*

2. Equally common in English and Ukrainian are word-groups of com plicated structure and grammatical form, i. e. with two ways of gram matical connection of their ICs or expressing different grammatical rela tions, eg: *writing and reading letters* (co-ordinate and analytical forms of connection), *these books and magazines* (synthetic and co-ordinate

connection), *to see Mike driving a car* (analytical and predicative) — *ці книжки та журнали, застати двері зачиненими, бачити когось у метро, носити кімоно останньої моди.*

There are also structurally more complicated free word-groups in both languages, eg: *those long sentences for you to analyze and translate — ті довгі речення тобі для аналізу й перекладу.* In this English word-group and its Ukrainian semantic equivalent one can identify different grammatical relations: a) attributive *(those long sentences)* and predicative *(sentences for you to analyze).* Besides, the ways of syntactic connection are different: subordination with synthetic agreement in the initial part *(those long sentences)* and co-ordination *(to read and analyze)* in the second part of the word-group. In the Ukrainian equivalent word-group there is no secondary predication available in the English variant. Hence, there is no mostly qualitative and quantitative correlation between the means of grammatical connection of different constituents in English vs. Ukrainian free word-groups. Since present-day English is mainly analytical by its structure, the predominant means of its grammatical connection in word-groups are naturally analytical. They are syndetic (prepositional) and asyndetic (syntactic placement). These two forms of analytical connection are very often of equal semantic relevance, as a result of which they are often interchangeable, as in the following substantival word-groups:

Syndetic connection	**Asyndetic connection**
books/or home reading	home-reading books
production *of* sugar cane	sugar cane production
books *at* the institute library	the institute library books

Syndetic and asyndetic connection, as will be shown further, is observed in verbal, adjectival, numerical, pronominal, adverbial and stative word-groups, eg: *to read books, to see well, red from anger, he himself, we all, four of the workers, well enough, afraid to read, afraid of that, ashamed to speak,* etc.

Hence, the word-groups, traditionally objective by their syntactic relation like *to ask Pete/somebody, reading books, to receive four/five, to invite all, good for all,* etc. have in English an analytical form of

connection, whereas these same word-groups in Ukrainian have a synthetic or analytico-synthetic connection: *запитувати Петра/когось, читання книжок, одержати четвірку, добре для Петра/для мене, зайти першим, думати про старих і малих, просити до столу.*

Synthetic government in English can be observed only in verbal word-groups having the following structural patterns: 1) the Vmf + Iobj or 2) Ving+ Iobj with the pronoun in the objective case form, eg: *to see him (her, them, whom),* seeing *him (her, them,* etc.). The analytical and synthetic connection is observed in all other kinds of English word-groups with these same objective case pronouns, eg: *reference to him them, four of them, none of whom, much for me, depend on her, afraid of them/us.*

As to synthetic agreement/concord, its use is restricted in present-day English, as was mentioned, to six patterns of substantival word-groups, in which adjuncts are the demonstrative pronouns *this/that - these/those, such a/such* + Nsing. — Nplur.: *this/that book — these/those books, such a case/such cases; many a girl — many girls (of this age).*

Note. Cardinal numerals functioning as adjuncts in English substantival word-groups are only in lexical agreement (unlike Ukrainian) with their head nouns, eg: *one book, twenty one books; one boy - one girl, one deer/ sheep — two deer/sheep.* It is not so in Ukrainian where cardinal numerals may have number, gender and case distinctions (synthetic agreement). Cf. *один* хлопець - *одна* дівчина, *десятьох хлопців -десятьом* хлопям/дівчат*ам*, etc. The same syntactic connection have also ofher Ukrainian notional parts of speech (nouns, adjectives, numerals, pronouns and participles), which, when used as adjuncts, mostly agree with the head-word in number, case and gender (though not without exceptions), eg: *рання весна — ранньої весни — ранній весні — ранньою весною; ранні весни — ранніх весен; один день — одного дня; два дні — дві ночі; працюючий апарат — працююча зміна, працююче колесо.*

No less striking is also the presentation of synthetic or analytic and synthetic *government* in the contrasted languages, these ways of connection are predominant in Ukrainian. This is because in English only some personal pronouns have the objective case form (cf. to see *me, her, them, him, us),* whereas in Ukrainian almost all nominal parts of

speech are declinable, i.e. can be governed. Eg: *бачити Пет-ра/Марію, знати першого/другу, перев'язувати пораненого, задоволений чорним/обома, двома,* etc.

It goes without saying that amorphous components in any language can be connected with the help of analytical means only (both syndetically and asyndetically). Since in English the analytical way of connection prevails in all kinds of word-groups and in Ukrainian — the synthetic means of connection is predominant, their role and correlation can not be the same, as can be seen from the following table of comparison:

Type of syntactic connection 1. Synthetic (agreement and government)	In English much less common	In Ukrainian absolutely dominant
2. Analytical connection (syndetic and asyndetic)	absolutely dominant	much less common

The Ukrainian language is far from devoid of analytical (syndetic and asyndetic) connection either. Cf. *брати таксі, носити кімоно, бути в галіфе/у фойє для глядачів.* Common in both languages are also the V + D pattern word-groups with syntactic juxtaposition (analytical connection) of components, eg:

In English	In Ukrainian
to come soon, to learn well, going quickly, going home, take slowly/ go there, make sure, etc.	скоро прийти, добре вчитися, йдучи швидко/йдучи додому, заходити туди/ зайшовши туди, вийти звідти.

Verbal and substantival word-groups with extended or expanded complements and adjuncts often have an analytical asyndetic connection in both languages as well, eg:

In English	In Ukrainian
/not/ to distinguish A from Z, to feel lonely and desperate, to love Shevchenko the painter, the film "They chose freedom".	не знати ні бе, ні ме; почуватися одиноко і розгублено, любити кіно, фільм "Живі й мертві", телепередача "Екран для малят".

Pertaining to English only are substantival word-groups of the NN,

310

NNN, etc. patterns having asyndetic connection of components. For example: *cotton yarn, cotton yarn production, cotton yarn production figures;* Kyiv *street traffic,* Kyiv *street traffic violations, the university library books readers,* etc. No such asyndetically connected noun word-groups are available in Ukrainian, of course.

Types of Word-Groups in English and Ukrainian

According to the existing interrelations between their immediate components all word-groups in the contrasted languages split into the following three types: 1) co-ordinate word-group 2) subordinate word-groups and 3) predicative word-groups.

I. Co-ordinate word-groups in English and Ukrainian are formed from components equal in rank which are connected either syndetically (with the help of conjunctions) or asyndetically (by placement). For example: *books and magazines; to read, translate and retell; neither this nor that, книжки й журнали; читати, пере-кладати й переказувати, ні те й ні се.* Co-ordinate word-groups are non-binary by their nature; this means that they may include several IC's of equal rank, though not necessarily of the same lexico-grammatical nature. Cf. (They were) *alone and free and happy* in love. (Abrahams).

Such and the like word-groups in both contrasted languages perform the function of homogeneous parts of the sentence, eg: *There they were: stars, sun, sea, light, darkness, space, great waters. (Conrad) — Тут ними були: зірки, сонце, море, світло, темінь, простір, великі води. He was clean, handsome, well-dressed, and sympathetic. (Dreiser). Він був чистий, гарний, прекрасно одягнений і симпатичний. It was done thoroughly, well and quickly. — Це було зроблено досконало, гарно й швидко.*

According to the structure of the ICs and their number, co-ordinate word-groups may be elemental and enlarged. Elemental word-groups consist of two components only, eg: *Pete or Mike, he and she, read and translate, all but me; Піт чи Майк, він і вона, читати й перекладати, всі крім мене.*

Enlarged co-ordinate word-groups consist of structurally complicat-

ed components: to read the text, to analyze it stylistically and translate it — читати текст, аналізувати його стилістично і перекладати його.

As to the expression of sense, co-ordinate word-groups in the contrasted languages may be closed or unclosed, i. e. infinite. Closed word-groups denote some actions, objects and phenomena. They consist of two components only, eg: *rivers and lakes, neither he nor she, all but me — річки й озера; ні він, ні вона; всі крім мене.* Common in both languages are also the unclosed or infinite word-groups consisting of several constituent components the number of which may still be continued (as by enumerating). These constituents may be connected by means of conjunctions or asyndetically, eg: *books, notebooks, bags, pens* and *pencils; ні гори, ні гірські потоки, ні звірі чи птахи, ні рослини* (не цікавили їх).

A common means of expressing homogeneousness as well as forming co-ordinate word-groups in both languages is also intonation. Cf He speaks /English, /German, /French, /Spanish and \Russian. /Явором, /канупером, /чебрецем, /м'ятою, /любистком запахло \літо (К. Гордієнко).

II. Subordinate word-groups in all languages are binary by their nature. It means that they consist of a head component, which is the nucleus of the word-group, and of one or more adjuncts/complements. They may be either a single notional word or a group of words/word-group functionally equal to it and having the function of a notional word, eg: *my pen, his "oh", your "r", her father and mother, take part in the games, bad for you, the film "They fought for their Motherland", Peter's brother,* etc.

Among the existing classifications of word-groups the morphological (paradigmatic) classification remains one of the most embracing. It is based on the lexico-grammatical nature of the head component or on its functional substitute. As a result, the following seven (according to the number of national parts of speech) common paradigmatic classes of substantival word-groups are to be singled out in English and Ukrainian:

1. Substantival Word-Groups, in which the mainly attributive adjuncts may be in pre-position or in postposition to the noun head. Their way of connection is analytical in English and synthetic in Ukrainian, though not without exceptions, as can be seen in the following table:

Table 24

Surface / Models / ./Ways of /Connection	English Analytical (syndetic and asyndetic) connection	Ukrainian Synthetic connection (agreement or government)
N>N	cotton yarn, wage strike	N<N гра оркестру, виставка товарів
NN>N	street traffic rules, sugar crop disaster	N<NN/NP>N гра оркестру теле-студії, будова станції метро
NP>NP*	last week football matches	N<NNN період розпаду ядер урану
N>NP/NN	Glasgow autumn holiday	N<NP/NN поведінка ринків збуту
N cj N>N(P)	boy and girl secrets	M_c/M>Kхлопця й дівчини секрети
A>N	small children, lovely flowers	A>N малі діти, гарний день, холодна весна
I>N**	his work, my day, this look	I>N моя праця, його брат, наше таксі
Q(P)>N(P)	the first meeting, five days	Q>N перша зустріч, другий день
V_{ing}>N(P)	the reading people, the coming spring	Vpartc > N працюючий при-лад, крокуючий екскаватор
N(P)<A	the pasture green, the news avail-able	N<A дні чудові, літа молодії
N(P)<1	Pete himself, lady mine	N<1 Україно наша, дочка моя
N(P)<Q	page ten, group two, world War II	N<Q номер п'ять/рік перший
N(P)<D	the book there, the people ahead	N<D крок назад*, голоси "проти", голоси "за"
N(P)<V_{inf}	the wish to win, to want to go	N<V_{inf} бажання виграти", намір піти погуляти
N(P)<V_{ing}	the student answering, the girls skating	N<N(P) знак, попереджуючий водіїв
N(P)<V_{en}	the people invited, the words said	N<V_{en} квіти политі (дощем), земля обітована
N(P)<Stative I<Stative	the child asleep, the house ablaze not available	N<Stative> дитині страшно KSta-tive*** йому/їй краще (легше)
N(P)prep<N/NP	rays of hope, a game for our boys	Nprep<N(P) Вісті з полів, папери на підпис/для розгляду
N(P)prep <V_{ger}	the idea of being asked, books for reading	

There are noun word-groups with synthetic or analytical-synthetic connection in English as well (when the complement/adjunct is a pronoun in the objective case, eg: *books for them/ for her,* or when the adjunct is the demonstrative pronoun *this/that, these/those, such a/such (this day — these days, such a book — such books).*

Analytical (asyndetic) connection.'" N<Stative word-groups are of predicative nature in Ukrainian (cf. мені краще).

Consequently, the combinability of the noun as head of the substantival word-group is practically isomorphic in the contrasted languages. The only exceptions form a) the NprepVger pattern *(books for reading),* b) the N<Stative pattern word-group which is of attributive nature *(the child ashamed the house ablaze,* etc.). c) the N<Iposs.abs. pattern word-group are not available in Ukrainian since in *край наш/Україно моя!* both pronouns *(наше* and *моя)* are possessive conjoint but not possessive absolute which are not available in our language. Besides, the N<Stative pattern word-groups in Ukrainian are of predicative type (дитині *страшно,* жах *бере)* and not attributive as in English (the boy *asleep),* d) The English language has no I < Stative pattern word-groups like *йому страшно, нам сором(но),* etc. which present an allomorphic feature for the English language.

No full synthetic expression of agreement or government can be observed in Ukrainian appositive word-groups like *число три/числа три, поет Данте/поета Данте, поетові Данте,* фільм "Вони воювали за Батьківщину", (у) фільмі "Вони воювали за Батьківщину", etc.

Note. Pertaining to English only are also substantival word-groups with adjuncts expressed by the definite or indefinite articles, which acquire a lexical meaning in a syntaxeme, i.e. in the context. For example, in such sentences as the following:

What his sister has seen in the man beyond him. (London)	Що його сестра знайшла в **цьому** was **чоловікові,** він не міг збагнути.
He hadn't a penny. (Maugham)	Він не мав **жодного** пенні/ламаного шеляга.

2. Verbal Word-Groups are also characterised in English and Ukrainian by some isomorphic and allomorphic features. Generally common in both languages are the structural types of verbal word-groups that may be: 1) with simple objective or adverbial complements; 2) with extended or expanded complements; 3) with simple or extended/expanded objective and adverbial complements. Of common pattern in both languages are verbal word-groups with pre-posed and postposed complements.

Simple unextended word-groups with the transitive verbal head include nominal and adverbial complements/adjuncts. Their pattern is com-

mon in English and Ukrainian. Cf. V<N or I, Q, A, Stative: *to like books, to receive four, to love her, to prefer blue (to red), to love it to be asleep; любити книжки, отримати четвірку, кохати її, любити синє, щиро любити, почуватися краще,* etc. The head verb may also be extended or expanded: to ardently love somebody *(дуже любити* когось), etc.

Common are also prepositional complements in verbal word-groups of this pattern: *to speak of somebody, to divide by two; говорити про когось, ділити на два (на двоє).* Ukrainian has no equivalents, however, for the V<V_{ing} and V<V_{ger} English word-groups patterns as *to sit reading, to like reading/being read* (or *having read it/the book). It* has, however, the V<$V_{diveprs}$ pattern word-groups instead which are unknown in English. These are as follows: *читати стоячи, іти співаючи* or V_{diyepr}V/VP *співаючи іти/іти далі* (IVQD) patterns which are alien to English *читаючи/прочитавши (поему/її), гарно прочитавши, прочитаєш двічі, співаючи іти додому/здому,* etc. The English equivalents of these and other verbal word-groups are participial VingD (going home, going quickly) or V<V_{ger}(go on reading, stop talking), etc.

It should be pointed out, however, that unlike English, most of Ukrainian complements and adverbial adjuncts have no fixed position in the word-group. Cf. *слухати музику — музику слухати, гарно співати*

— *співати гарно, вийти з лісу — з лісу вийти, сидячи читати — читати сидячи, почуватися краще — краще почуватися* and consequently D<D or D>D as in *гарно дуже — дуже гарно.*

Neither is the position of pre-posed complements/adjuncts fixed in Ukrainian. Cf. VprepN or prep N>V: *думати про майбутнє — про майбутнє думати.*

Some English complements, when emphasised, may also change their position, eg:

to speak of whom? — Of whom to speak? to be invited by Peter
—   *by Peter to be invited?*

Extended and expanded complements/adjuncts have mainly common structural patterns in the contrasted languages. Cf. V_{inf} < VP: *to like to play the piano; любити пограти на піаніно;* V_{inf}<V_{inf} co-cj V_{inf}<N: *to like to read and translate a passage; любити читати й перекла-*

дати текст. In other words, the verbal head may have a VP structure.

Allomorphism is observed in the nature of some complements (gerundial, infinitival, participial) which often form predicative complexes in English verbal word-groups, eg: V_{inf} prepN<V: to wait for Ann to read; V_{inf}prep N'sVger: *to rely on Bob's reading the article;* Vinf<DV<N<Vin$_g$< D: *to go down to see the boy waiting outside. Similarly in Ukrainian: зайти додому взяти книжку заховану десь.*

3. Adjectival Word-Groups. Due to the restricted combinability of different notionals with the adjectival head, this paradigmatic class of word-groups has a much smaller number (and varieties) of structural models. The most productive and usual in English and Ukrainian are the following simple and extended models with different dependent components.

Allomorphic, i. e. pertaining to English only are adjectival word-groups with gerundial complements (A<V$_{ger}$), eg: *worth reading (being read):* A<VgerN(P): *worth reading the book;* AprepN(I)V$_{ger}$: *proud of Pete/ him being decorated, proud of his having been invited.*

Apart from the non-existence of gerundial complements, Ukrainian adjectival word-groups are characterised by some other features of their own. Among these, for example, is the free location of most of adjectival and complements adjuncts which is absolutely impossible in English. Cf. *дуже добра — добра дуже; радий чути — чути радий; значно*

*молодший за мене — за мене значно молодший, добрий до всіх -
до всіх добрий.*

Nevertheless, it is impossible to change the order or position of any immediate constituent as in the word-groups like *багато молодший, ніж вона* but not* *ніж вона, багато молодший,* though the pattern can not be considered completely ungrammatical for a predominantly synthetic language, like Ukrainian either.

Ukrainian head adjectives, however, express the morphological categories of number, case and gender which is impossible in English. Cf. *гарний зовні, гарна зовні, гарні зовні; гарної/гарній зовні, гарною зовні; добрий/добрим до всіх; рідна/рідної для нас,* etc.

4. Pronominal Word-Groups in the contrasted languages have some general features in common. Thus, most often the heads are indefinite, negative and mostly demonstrative pronouns, and much rarer personal and reflexive pronouns. The usually common adjuncts in both languages are pronouns, prepositional nouns, adjectives or adjectival word-groups, infinitives, verbal word-groups and subordinate clauses. The most common place of these adjuncts is postposition, though in Ukrainian they may be used in preposition as well. Besides, Ukrainian pronouns are all declinable. Cf. *ми всі — нас усіх — нам усім — нами всіма; хто з учнів — 'кого з учнів — кому з учнів/з них.*

Pronominal word-groups, however, are formed in both languages according to some common structural models/patterns. For example:

A characteristic/allomorphic feature of Ukrainian pronominal word-groups is their considerably free position within the pattern which is never possible in English. Cf. *щось нове — нове щось, нічого казати — казати нічого, дехто з учнів — з учнів дехто.*

5. **Numerical word-groups** form a separate group in the English and Ukrainian languages as well. They can not and should not be neglected or avoided, since they have in English and Ukrainian some isomorphic and allomorphic features of their own. Despite all this some grammarians often avoid even mentioning the **numerical word-groups** [39; 15; 3], whose existence in English and Ukrainian can not be overlooked. This morphological class of word-groups has the following combinability with other parts of speech:

Model	English	Ukrainian
Q<N(I)	--------------	багато часу, мало/кілька їх
$Q_{card}prepN(P)$	two of such birds	трос з групи/з того класу
$Q_{card}prepl$	three of them,	двоє з них, три з яких/ наших
$V_{ordprepl}$	second to none	перший з них/нас
$Q_{cardprep}A(P)$	one of the best/smallest	один із кращих, троє з останніх
QordVinf	the first to come/to answer	перший співати/танцювати
$QcardNV_{ing}$	two of the girls singing	двоє з дівчат бажаючих (знати)
$QcardNV_{en}(D)$	one of the students mentioned	одного із хлопців згаданих (вище)
$Q_{ord}V_{inf}N$	the first to fight malaria	перші/двоє вчити грамоти
$Q_{ord}NV_{inf}$	the first film to be seen	перше бажання виграти
$Q_{prep}ID$	ten of those behind/ opposite	двоє з тих попереду/зверху троє із наших там
QprepIprepAN	three of those in the (old) hut	три з тих у (старій) хатині троє із малих коло хатини
$OprepN(V_{ing})N/I$	two of the workers, awaiting us	один із човнів (корегуючих рух)
$O_{prep}N(subcl.)$	ten of the girls who were absent	двоє з робітників, що не були присутні

As can be observed from the given above paradigmatic models of numerical word-groups, only one of them is missing in English - that one which is presented in Ukrainian by the Q<N(I) model *(багато часу, мало нас),* etc., since *much* or *many* are not numerals in English.

One more characteristic feature of most Ukrainian numerical word-

groups (except those with the sub-clauses) is their considerably free permutation (change of place) of the immediate constituents, which is impossible in English word-groups of the same structural models. Cf. *двох з того класу — з того класу двох; перший співати — співати перший; п'ятий із тих попереду — із тих попереду п'ятий; чимало грошей — грошей чимало,* etc.

Isomorphic, however, is the ability of numerical word-groups to become extended. For example, the Qord NVinf *the second man to come* may be extend to QordNVD *(the first man to come here)* or even to QordNVinf D+D: *the first man to come here tomorrow,* etc. Similarly in Ukrainian: перше бажання виграти - перше бажання виграти *там* ~ перше бажання виграти *талі узавтра.*

6. Adverbial Word-Groups in both contrasted languages can be headed by adverbs or by adverbial phrases. The adjuncts/complements may be expressed by adverbs or by adverbial (usually prepositional) phrases used in preposition as well as in postposition to the head adverb. This position, i.e. placement is predetermined by the meaning of the adjunct and by its structural form, the structurally complicated adjuncts having usually a fixed position even in Ukrainian word-groups. This is not so with simple adjuncts which may change their place in Ukrainian under the influence of some type of stress. Cf.

Model	English	Ukrainian
D>D	terribly well, simply awfully	де там, страшно добре, надто швидко, дуже прудко
D<D	well enough, far away	далеко звідси — звідси далеко
N>D	hours later, heaps better	годиною пізніше, багато краще
NP>D	two hours later, six weeks ago	двома годинами пізніше — пізніше двома годинами
.D<INP	late that autumn evening	пізніше того осіннього вечора
DprepN(P)	high in the air	високо в повітрі/в повітря
Dp rep 1	far from that, close to me	близько до цього/далеко від нас
Dprep IP	far from all that/this	далеко від усього цього
Dconjsub.cl.	earlier than he could see, earlier than I could think of	задалеко, щоб він міг побачити раніше, ніж він міг подумати
Dco-conj D	so and so, here or there	скрізь і всюди, там і сям/ так чи
Dneg.pait D	just not so, quite not so	далеко не так, зовсім не так
Neg. part. DD	not quite (so) well	не зовсім погано/не зовсім добре

There is, therefore, a complete coincidence in the form of structural models of adverbial word-groups in the contrasted languages. Allomorphism can be observed only in the placement of some Ukrainian components which can be free in Ukrainian as in *далеко звідси - звідси далеко* or the use of the English *once a year* corresponding to the Ukrainian prepositional word-groups of the same meaning — DprepN(P) *раз на рік/ раз на весь рік.*

7. **Statival Word-Groups** rarely correlate in the contrasted languages semantically and structurally. This is because English statives have few direct lexical equivalents in Ukrainian and vice versa. Moreover, Ukrainian statives are often identified only at the syntactic level, since the same word may be in one word-group or sentence an adverb and in another — a stative. Or: *Він живе добре* (adverb); *Кому там добре* (stative); Надворі вже *краще* (adverb). Йому вже *краще* (stative). The English equivalent of *"добре",* however, is either an adverb (well) or an adjective *(good).* Eg. *He speaks good French.* Despite all this, the structural patterns of statival word-groups in English and Ukrainian are mostly common, though their components almost never coincide lexically. For example:

English statival patterns	Ukrainian statival patterns
Stative < Vinf: afraid to answer Stative prepVger: afraid of asking/of being asked Stative prepN(P): ashamed of the deed Stative prepI(N): ashamed of that/ of all that/ of the behavior Stative D(P): ablaze all around Stative prepD(P): ablaze from behind Stative co-cjStative: afraid and ashamed D<Stative: soon asleep, horribly afraid D<Stative prepN(P): never afraid of the rain D<Stative prep I(P): always ashamed of it/ of its effect	(йому) страшно самому спати легко/важко на душі (їй) краще від них (пілюль) легше на душі (їм) добре скрізь/ їй важко тут легше (їй) від четверга/ від учора (їм) краще й краще (йому коле й болить) значно тепліше (йому), страшно всім завжди прикро за примхи скрізь болить від уколів тепер (нам) соромно від того/ за те зараз (їм) прикро за те

Gerundial complements, naturally, pertain only to English statival word-groups (cf. *afraid of being sent away).* Also, English statives have a

320

fixed position for a certain morphological class of word-groups as, for example, in the word-group *ashamed/afraid of something,* but: soon *asleep.* The placement of Ukrainian statives in such word-groups is generally free, eg: *йому добре тут — тут йому добре — добре йому тут,* нам *добре* скрізь - скрізь нам *добре.*

It should be added that the function of any paradigmatic class of word-group in the sentence coincides in both languages with the function of its head word. For example, in the sentence *He knew his subject very well* the substantival word-group *his subject* performs the function of the noun, i.e. the object, and the adverbial word-groups *very well* performs the function of an adverbial modifier of attendant circumstances. Both these functions of the word-groups are identical in Ukrainian. Cf. Він знав *свій предмет* (extended object) *дуже добре* (adv. modifier).

Similarly with other morphological/paradigmatic classes of word-groups. For example, in the sentence *She was neither ashamed nor afraid of saying that quite aloud* the italicised word-groups perform the functions respectively of the predicative *(neither ashamed nor afraid),* of a prepositional object (the substantival function of the gerundial word-group *of saying that)* and of the adverbial modifier, which coincides with the adverbial nature and meaning of the word-group *quite aloud.* No need to emphasise that the meaning and functions of these word-groups in Ukrainian are the same. Cf. їй було *ні соромно ні страшно* (predicative) *за все сказане* (prep/ object) *на весь голос* (adv. modifier).

III. Predicative Word-Groups

Unlike the previous two types of word-groups, i.e. the co-ordinate and subordinate word-groups, the extensively used in English predicative word-groups are only partly found in present-day Ukrainian. Completely isomorphic, naturally, are primary predication word-groups, which are singled out in the sentence and comprise the subject and the predicate. For example: *The student works hard. The book was published* last year. *Студент багато працює. Книжка була опублікована* торік.

The syntactic interdependence between the components *The stu-*

dent and *works, The book* and *was published* remains unchanged when the predicative word-group is singled out of the sentence. So are the syntagmatic relations between the components reflected by the verb **works** (The student *works* and *was published* (the book) — *Студент працює.* Книжка *опублікована була.*

Secondary Predication Word-Groups/Syntagmemes. Apart from the primary predication word-groups there also exist the so-called "comlexes" [10; 16; *257-260*; 19, *96-106*; 47*, 261]* or "clauses" *[54,317-318]* which are mostly termed by our grammarians as *"secondary predication word-groups".* These pertain to the English language, though Ukrainian utterances are not always devoid of some similar structures either.

Secondary predication syntagmemes/word-groups are represented in English in the following structural types or syntactic constructions which are often referred to as complexes:

1. ***The objective with the infinitive*** constructions which are per tained not only to English, but also to German, French, Italian, etc. may have the following structural models: NVinf, IVinf, NPVinfNP, N/Iinf prepN and some others. For example: Again he saw *Michael moisten his lips.* (Galsworthy), I heard *him roll in blankets.* (Hemingway) This almost caused *Jemima to faint with terror.* (Thackeray)

2. ***The subjective with the infinitive*** constructions in English are of the following models: NVinf, IVinf, NPIVinfNP, eg: *Irene* was known *to take* very sudden decisions. (Galsworthy) *He* is reported *to have been taken* into custody. (F. News) *The young man's ears* seemed *to droop* on his skull. (Galsworthy) *He* was a fool *to attempt to make a pretence* that way. (London)

3. ***The infinitival prepositional*** constructions of the forN/IVinf, or the forNPVinfN(I), forN(I)VinfD, etc. models: *For you to go there* fast now would be to walk into a trap with your eyes open. (Voynich) The only thing to do *is for you to whip him,* Edward. (Mansfield) The boy stood aside *for me to go by.* (Galsworthy)

4. ***The objective with the participle*** constructions in English are of the following models: NVing, IVing, I/NVen(D), VenNP, NPVphrase, etc: I'm sorry to have *kept you waiting...* (Saroyan) Morning found *him still reading.* (London) I saw *Fleur coming.* (Galsworthy) He could see *her face bent* over the little kitten in her arms. (Ibid.)

5. *The subjective with the participle* constructions in English are of the following models: N... VingNP, NP...VenNP, NP...Ving: *He* could be *seen following* her with his eyes. (Galsworthy) From time to time *their voices* could be heard *uplifted* in clamorous argument. (Norris) *The rain* was heard *clattering...* (J. Trease)

6. *The gerundial constructions/complexes* are of the following models: IpossVger, N'sIVger, prepN/IVgerNP: Hope you don't mind *my comings.* (London) I wonder at *Jolyon's allowing this* engagement... (Galsworthy) Excuse *my being busy.* (Dickens) He was aware of *Tan ya watching his face.* (Hailey).

7. *The objective with the adjective, stative, or noun* constructions are in English of the following models: VI/NA: Get the *coffee/it ready.* (Bronte) VNStative I woke... and found *George awake.* (J. K. Jerome) VNN: They called the *baby Arthur.* (Lawrence)

Note. As will be shown further, the above-mentioned predicative constructions of the last two models (NStative and Nappos.N) are pertained to the Ukrainian language as well (cf. Він назвав хлопця сином. NDStative: Тепер дитині значно легше).

8. *The nominative absolute participle* constructions which exist in English in the following structural models: NVingNP: The two walked in silence, *Soams watching him out of the corner of his eye.* (Galsworthy), IVingNP: *They having the keys,* no entrance was possible. (Ibid.) INDVing: Jame's face protruded naively,., *his mouth slowly opening.* (Ibid.) IVingD: *This being so,* I should like to go out. (Ibid.)

Nominative absolute participle constructions may have extended or contracted forms of models like ND and NprepN, which appear as a result of contaminating the participial constructions, eg: *The lesson having been over,* the students left the room — *The lesson being over,* the students left the room, *The lesson over,* the students left the room.

The Ukrainian language has only two structurally similar, if not identical, models of syntagmemes expressing the so-called secondary predication. They are: 1) the participle constructions having the same grammatical nature and semantic meaning as the corresponding English constructions of the NVing, IVing, NPVing, NVen, IVen, NPVen and NA models. For example: Пам'ятаю *хлопця/його накульгуючим;* дівчина/

вона застала *двері зачиненими/вікно розбитим;* санітарка знай-
шла *бійця пораненим;* читачі вважають *роман цікавим;*
ми/студенти пам'ятаємо цього *викладача молодим/об'єктивним;*
2) the second type of objective secondary predication constructions in
Ukrainian constitute the NN and IN models/patterns word-groups
which are used in the following sentences: Ми вибрали *Іваненка го-
ловою;* Вони назвали *хлопця Петром.*

The italicised parts of the sentences are treated in Ukrainian as the
so-called *double predicates* (like the NVen or NA patterns predicative
constructions above: дівчина *прийшла стомлена,* Ми його *знали
молодим,* etc.).

Typology of the Sentence

Unlike *word-groups* which are subject of investigation in Minor
syntax, *the sentence* is investigated in the so-called Major syntax.
Hence, the sentence in the contrasted languages has a large number of
typologically relevant features in common. The existence of such
isomorphic features both in the simple and in the composite sentence
is predetermined by the main common types of aspects characteristic
of the sentence as a peculiar language unit. These aspects are three: 1)
structural; 2) semantic and 3) pragmatic. This aspective trichotomy
directly correlates with the meaning, form and functioning of the sen-
tence in speech where it realises its explicit form of an utterance cor-
responding to a logically complete proposition.

These three aspects are practically of universal nature; they consti-
tute the main basis for a systemic arrangement and systemic contrast-
ing of simple and composite sentences in all languages. Apart from
this, the mentioned aspects can also serve as reliable distinguishing
features between the main syntactic units, i. e. sentences on the one
hand and the word-groups that are used to form sentences, on the
other.

The principal distinguishing features characterising the sentence as
a universal language unit are as follows: 1) the sentence is the main
language unit; 2) it is the main syntactic unit and 3) it is the main in-
tegral part of speech, in other words - the principal communicative
unit. Unlike

word-groups, sentences in the contrasted languages are distinguished from word-groups and words, that are as lower in rank language units, by some peculiar features, the main of which are the following four: 1) an intonation contour; 2) predication; 3) modality; 4) and a relative sense completion.

Structural Types of Sentences in English and Ukrainian

According to the way in which the expressed content correlates with reality, there are distinguished in the contrasted languages the following common structural types of sentences: 1) two-member sentences 2) one-member sentences.

Binary sentence structures are more characteristic of English, i.e. they are represented by a larger variety of paradigmatic subtypes than in Ukrainian. This quantitative correlation of two-member sentences in English and Ukrainian constitutes the main typological difference in the system of simple sentences of the two languages.

As a result, English two-member sentences are represented by a larger variety of extended and expanded models, than Ukrainian two-member sentences. Consequently, English two-member sentences are represented by a larger variety of paradigmatic subtypes than in Ukrainian.

The basic kernel structure of two-member sentences constitutes the binary S — P (Subject — Predicate) model which can be extended through complementation to S — P — O, S — P — O — M, S — P — O — M — M, etc. Thus, a kernel (ядерна основа) of the simple extended sentence *Dave stayed in the house for another four months* (Cardwell) is, of course, *Dave stayed* which is enlarged (extended) to Dave *stayed in the house* and then to the complete sentence Dave *stayed in the house for another four months...* (Caldwell). This process of extension can be observed in Ukrainian as well: Дейв залишився, Дейв *залишився в будинку,* Дейв *залишався жити в будинку ще якихось чотири місяці,*

Simple two-member sentences in the contrasted languages are equally exposed to the syntactic process of expansion, i. e. enlargement of their component part through the co-ordinate catenation of homogeneous elements/parts of the sentence. Cf.: *Mr. Dick and* I soon became the best

of friends... (Dickens) *Fields, trees, hedges* streamed by. (Mansfield) The woman... *turned round, traversed* the crowded room... and *clutched* the lean arm of her host. (D. Parker) Similarly in Ukrainian: *Містер Дік і я* невдовзі стали найкращими друзями. Пробігали *поля, дерева, живоплоти.*

Two-member sentences in the contrasted languages may be of two subkinds: 1) conventionally complete and 2) properly complete. The former are elliptical sentences in which any part/some parts of the sentence is/are deleted: "And when are you going?" — "On *Monday"*. (Galsworthy) Nobody under the table, nobody under the sofa. (Dickens) "What time is it now, Dick?". — *"Quarter past nine"*. (Steinbeck) The same in Ukrainian: "І коли ви від'їжджаєте?" — "В *понеділок"*. "Нікого під столом, нікого під канапою". "Котра година, Діку?" — *"Чверть на дев'яту"*.

These elliptical sentences in English and Ukrainian are connected with their preceding kernel sentences, as a result of which they can easily be completed. Cf. "And when are you going " - I am going on Monday. Nobody is/was under the table, nobody was under the sofa, etc.

Note. Many English sentences, traditionally qualified as elliptical, are structurally close to Ukrainian definite personal sentences. Cf. "Much obliged to you". (Galsworthy) "Sleeping in this morning?" (Prichard). "Hear them coming yet?" (Steinbeck) Looks like rain.

These and other sentences of the kind do not in any way depend on the preceding sentences. They lack the subject (or the subject and the predicate), which is easy to define, however, from the content of the sentence. Cf. (I am) much obliged to you. (Are/were you) sleeping in this morning? (It) looks like rain, etc.

But whatever the nature of these sentences, they can be easily replenished completed which is a convincing testimony to the existence of typologically common sentence structures in the system of simple utterances of the contrasted languages. At the same time two-member sentences have a larger representation in English than in Ukrainian, which constitutes a typologically allomorphic feature of the two languages. The only two-member sentences, which are non-existent in Ukrainian, are the following:

1. Impersonal sentences which are introduced by the impersonal pro noun/subject *it:* It is thundering. It drizzles. It snowed. It has rained/ snowed.

2. Indefinite personal sentences in which the subject is expressed by the indefinite personal pronouns *one, they, you,* eg: **One** says. **They** say. **You** don't say so.

3. Sentences with the above-mentioned introductory "it" or "there" like **It** is time to start. **There** is nothing/much to say.

4. Sentences with the implicit agent and passive predicate verb fol lowed by a preposition like He was **sent for.** The project is **objected to** everywhere.

5. Sentences with the above-mentioned secondary predication con structions as the following:

I thought *him to be a teacher.* We saw *her cross the street.* She made *herself seem* friendly. All were waiting for *the results to be an-nounced. He* is said *to be a sportsman. She* was seen *crossing* the street. She is said *to be preparing* for the examination. He entered the room, *pipe in month.*

Such English two-member sentences have in Ukrainian either sim ple or complex definite personal sentences for their semantic equiva-lents. Cf. Я думав, що він учитель. Ми бачили, *як він переходив вулицю.* Кажуть, *що він спортсмен.* Усі чекали оголошення нас-лідків/*що оголосять наслідки.* Він зайшов у кімнату *з люлькою в зубах.*

6. Sentences with the gerundial complexes used as predicative (sec ondary predication) constructions. These sentences have in Ukrainian complex or simple sentences for their semantic equivalents. For exam ple: We learnt of *his being decorated.* They spoke *of her passing* all exams successfully. You can rely on *her coming* in time. Ми дізнали-ся про *його нагородження* (про те, що його нагороджено). Ви можете розраховувати на *її вчасний прихід* (на те, що вона вчасно прийде). Говорять про *її успішне складання всіх іспитів/що вона успішно склала всі іспити.*

The bulk of two-member sentences are of common structural form in the contrasted languages. These are sentences with the subject ex-pressed by a notional word or its equivalent and the predicate ex-pressed by a

finite verb, eg: Breakfast was not yet over... (Mansfield) She looks entirely different off the stage. (Parker) That was Coleman. (Maken) At dark the rain stopped. (Caldwell)

Such sentences have their structural and semantic equivalents in Ukrainian as well: Ідуть дощі. (Коцюбинський) Сава Андрійович раптом замовк. Любив дід гарну бесіду й добре слово. (Довженко)

Note. There are no equivalents in Ukrainian to the English two-member sentences with the formal "there" and "it" as formal subject. Cf. There is a book on the table. It is necessary to read more. На столі книжка. Необхідно/треба читати більше.

Common in the contrasted languages are also two-member sentences with the simple nominal predicate expressed by a noun, an adjective, a numeral, an infinitive, a participle or a phrase. Such a predicate may follow the subject or precede it. Hence, there may be a) the S — P model sentences and b) the P — S model sentences. For example, the S — P model sentences: Anything *the matter,* Michael? (Galsworthy) My idea obsolete!!! (B. Shaw) The Future, how, *how uncharted!* (Galsworthy) The P — S model sentences: *Poor* little thing. (Maugham) *Nice manners* and everything. (Parker) *Bad* to stick, sir. (Galsworthy) Моя пропозиція *непотрібна???* Майбутнє, як, як *невизначене! Бідна* вона. *Гарні* манери і все інше. Нас троє.

One-Member Sentences in English and Ukrainian

Unlike two-member sentences, which have a larger quantitative representation of paradigmatic/structural types in English, one-member sentences, on the contrary, have a larger number of paradigmatic classes in Ukrainian. This is due to the morphological nature of Ukrainian as a mainly synthetic structure language. Nevertheless, there exist common types of one-member sentences in both contrasted languages. The latter, naturally, are not devoid of some divergent features in English or Ukrainian either. Common in English and Ukrainian are the following paradigmatic types of one-member sentences:

Nominal sentences. Being typologically isomorphic, this paradigmatic type of sentences, however, is characterised in English and Ukrai-

nian both by some common or isomorphic or by some allomorphic/divergent features. Isomorphic common is the structural form of nominal sentences which can be either extended or expanded. The former consist of one or two nominal components which may be nouns or other parts of speech. Expanded nominal sentences consist of two or more nominal components connected by means of co-ordinate conjunctions. The components in extended English nominal sentences may be connected both syndetically (usually with the help of prepositions) or asyndetically, whereas in Ukrainian the synthetic and analytic-synthetic connection prevails. The surface structures of nominal sentences in English and Ukrainian are common, however. They have the following models:

A. The N model sentences which may consist in English of a single noun, a noun with a preceding determining article, a proper name with or without the family name, a pronoun or a numeral. Eg: *Sensation. Сенсація. Seventeen. Сімнадцять.* (B. Shaw) *A wood. The same.* (Shakespeare) *Ліс. Той самий ліс.*

B. The NN/NNN model sentences: *Mr. Surface.* (B. S.) *Sir Ralph Bloomfield Bonington.* (Sheridan) *Містер Серфіс. Сер Ральф Блумфілд Бонінгтон.* Nominal sentences in English may include nouns in the genitive case like *Lady Sneerwell's* bedroom. (Ibid.) *The French King's tent.* (Shakespeare) *Спальня леді Снірвел. Намет короля Франції.* The AN model nominal sentences are no less frequent. Eg: *Universal laughter.* (B. Shaw) *A personal explanation.* (Ibid.) *The welcome rain.* (Longfellow) *Загальний сміх. Особисте зауваження. Давно очікуваний дощ.*

C. Nominal sentences of the AN model (like of the N/dN model) may often convey injunctive, requestive and other pragmatic meanings. Cf. *Silence! The handcuffs!* (B.Shaw) *Тиша!* (Замовкніть!). *Наручники!/* Дайте наручники! *Glorious night! Exquisite scenery! Capital din ner!* (B. Shaw) *Славетна ніч! Вишуканий пейзаж! Прекрасний обід!*

D. The N/AN co-cjN/AN model sentences: *Freedom and power!* (B. Shaw) *Nice manners and everything.* (Parker) *Dankness and dead silence. General laughter and good humour.* (B. Shaw) *Свобода і влада! Гарні манери і взагалі. Темінь і мертва тиша. Загальний регіт і гарний настрій!*

E. Nominal sentences with the prepositional connection of componental parts are presented in English and Ukrainian by both the isomorphic and allomorphic structural models. The deep structures of allomorphic nominal sentences reflect the non-existence of the equivalent grammaticalised prepositions *of, to, by* and *with* in Ukrainian and lack of inflexions in English nouns. Isomorphic models of nominal sentences with prepositional connection may be simple and complete by their structure, the simplest in the contrasted languages being the N/IprepN/Q, etc. models like *Half past eleven.* (B. Shaw) *Confidence for confidence.* (Ibid.) *Пів на дванадцяту. Довір'я за довір'я.*

Many nominal sentences have structurally complicated prepositional models in both contrasted languages, eg: dNprepdNprepN: *The garden of a villa in Granada.* INprepIN: *Another room in the same home.* dQANQcjQprepdNN: *The two adjoining rooms 109 and 110 in the Hotel Florida.* ANprepdNVinf prepN: *Nice time for a rector to come down for breakfast.* (B. Shaw)

These and other sentences of the type have their structural equivalents in Ukrainian: *Сад коло вілли в Гранаді. Інша кімната в тому самому домі. Два суміжних номери 109 і 110 у готелі "Флорида". Слушний час для священика зійти на сніданок.*

Since English and Ukrainian are structurally different language types, there is generally no identity in the grammatical means of connection of the same component parts in the same nominal sentences. It can be observed in the deep structure of several common nominal sentences of the contrasted languages. Thus, in English the component parts are mostly connected with the help of analytical means, whereas in the same Ukrainian nominal sentences synthetic or analytic-synthetic means are used. For example, analytical asyndetic connection: *The Undershaft torpedo! The Undershaft submarine!* (B. Shaw). In sentences like The garden *of* villa in Granada or Another burst *of* applause. (B. Shaw) the analytical syndetic connection is employed in English. These same components in their Ukrainian equivalent sentences are connected in the synthetic way, i. e. with the help of the inflexion. Cf. Торпеди Андершафт**а**! Субмарини Андершафт**а**! Ще один вибух аплодисмент**ів**.

Other types of one-member sentences in English and Ukrainian

may have both common and divergent features. The latter usually pertain to the structural form of sentences as well as to the means of grammatical connection of their component parts. These one-member sentences are as follows:

A. Imperative (or inducive) sentences containing a verb and having a V or VP pattern structures: *Keep aside, keep aside! Pass on, pass on!* (M. R. Anand) *Open the door!* (Ibid.) *Не підходь, не підходь! Проходьте, проходьте! Відчиніть двері!*

Note. Imperative sentences in English and Ukrainian may sometimes be two-membered, eg: *Don't you do that again! Don't anybody switch the light! Mary and Pete, open the windows! Не робіть ви більше цього! Ніхто не вмикайте світла! Маріє і Петре, відчиніть вікна!*

B. Exclamatory sentences may structurally often coincide in English and Ukrainian with nominal and infinitival sentences, eg: *Thieves! Fire! How funny! To think of it! Damn your money!* (Maugham) *Злодії! Вогонь! Як гарно! Подумати тільки! К бісу твої гроші!*

C. Infinitival sentences in both contrasted languages have practically identical structural forms. They may be unextended or extended. Eg: *To be or not to be?* (Shakespeare) *To be alive! To have youth and the world before one!* (Dreiser) *Бути чи не бути? Бути живим! Бути молодим і мати весь світ попереду. Матір ні купити, ні заслу жити.* (Saying).

Other allomorphic features observed in the types of one-member sentences have a larger representation in Ukrainian than in English. Thus, among these Ukrainian types are the following not pertained to the English syntactic system:

A. The definite personal sentences, which are widely used in literary and colloquial Ukrainian speech. The doer of the action in these sentences is indicated by the finite verb and its personal ending correlating with the main part of the sentence. Eg: Люблю (я) пісні мойого краю. (Рильський) Пам'ятаєш (ти) перший клас? (Павличко) Любіть (ви/всі) Україну всім серцем своїм... (Сосюра)

Note. One-member sentences of similar nature can be observed among English elliptical sentences, eg: Much obliged to you (i. e. I am much obliged to you). Going home? i. e. Are **you** going home? Understand? i. e. Do you understand? etc. In these elliptical sentences, like in

some types of Ukrainian sentences, the finite verb is equally associated with a more or less definite performer of the action as well. The same sentences are also observed in other European languages as Italian, Russian, Byelorussian. Cf. *Abbiamo molti compiti (We have many assignments). Подумаем об этом. (We shall think it over),* etc.

B. The indefinite personal sentences may also be structurally identical to the above-given Ukrainian definite personal one-member sen tences. They have their actor, i. e. the logico-grammatical doer which is not definitely indicated. Their main part, the verbal component, also cor relates with the finite verb in the third person plural. Its action may refer to present, past or future in the indicative, imperative or in the subjunc tive mood. Eg: *Сіяли* всю *ніч. Дзвонять* в усі дзвони. (Шиян) Давніх друзів *не забувають.* (Ukr. saying) Нам *дають* чаю, гарячого, міцного. (Коцюбинський)

Sometimes the Ukrainian principal or subordinate clause may have the structural form of an indefinite personal sentence as well. Cf. *Не за те вовка б'ють,* що сірий, а за те, що овечку вкрав. (Saying) Він розпорядився, щоб *подали* вечерю. Коли б Мирославі *не говорили* це, вона б заспокоїлась. (А. Головко)

C. Similar to the definite personal sentences are *Ukrainian gener alised personal sentences.* The action of their main part in such sen tences refers to any (generalised) person correlating with the second (rarer — other) person in singular or plural in the indicative or imperative mood. For example: **За** правду й за народ *ставай* життям! (Павличко) *Дивиться* лисицею, а *думає* вовком! *Вибирай* дівку, коли в глині, а не коли в калині. *Поживемо — побачимо!* Дурнів не *орють,* не *сіють,* а вони самі *родяться.* Подарунок назад *не беруть.* (Sayings)

D. One more group of one-member sentences in Ukrainian is pre sented by impersonal sentences which are represented in some sub types, the most common of which are the following:

a) Impersonal proper (власне безособові) one-member sentences with the principal part expressed by the finite (predicate) verb, eg: *Світає.* Край неба *палає.* (Шевченко) І *світає* й не *світає.* (Тичина) *Весніє* вже. (Гончар) Тепер тобі одразу *полегшає.* (Ibid.) The principal part in impersonal one-member sentences may sometimes be expressed by a personal verb form. Eg: *Мело, крутило, скаженіло,*

огортаючи присмерковий край. (Гончар) По правді роби, по правді й *буде*. Вік *живи,* вік *учись.* (Нар. творчість)

b) **Impersonal sentences** with the main part/finite verb expressing the state of the agent used in the dative case form, eg: Раз якось Остапові не спалось. (Коцюбинський) Забажалось королеві завоювати чуже царство. (Л. Українка)

c) Impersonal sentences with the principal part expressed by verbs in *-НО, -то:* Роботу покинуто. (Коцюбинський) Зал залито яскравим, сліпучим світлом. (Яновський) Убито, Яноша вбито! (Гончар) ...Його оддавано в рекрути, засилано на Сибір, катовано канчуками, тавровано, мов худобу. (Коцюбинський)

d) **Impersonal sentences** with the finite verb referring to a person but expressing impersonal meaning as in Венеру за душу щипало (Котляревський) Йому кололо в боки. Impersonal sentences with stat ives: Дітям спочатку було дуже *нудно* (Н. Лев.)

e) **Impersonal sentences with modal predicative** phrases func tioning as part of the modal verbal predicate, eg: Йому *не слід було дивитись.* (Коцюбинський) "Дядька, Іване, *треба розуміти"...* (Стельмах) *...Неможливо знищити* того, кому симпатизує народ. (Гончар)

One-Word Sentences/Quasi-Sentences in English and Ukrainian

Among other features and phenomena testifying to the existence of isomorphism in the syntactic systems of the contrasted languages are the so-called one-word or quasi-sentences. [15, *174]* They are speech units devoid of the binary S — P (or a single S or P) structure. They may consist of a single word or of a functionally equivalent phrase expressing affirmation, negation, an address or some emotive/incentive meanings. One-word sentences serve to establish or to disjoin the speech contact, they may sometimes perform a meta-communicative function. *As to their communicative* direction and meaning, one-word/quasi-sentences may be:

1. Affirmative, i. e. expressing affirmation. These are usually short answers to the preceding questions or to an interrogative inquiry/one's consent to an inquiry, eg: "Think it?" — *"All right".* (Collier) "A real

beauty?" — *"Indeed"*. (Bates) "Do you love me?" — *"Uh huh "*. (Hemingway) *"Excellent!"* said Stickly-Pickly. (Kipling) "House?" — *"Of course"*. (Bates.) *"Yes",* said her host. *"Yes, indeed"*. (Parker) — *Аяк-же...* Гріх казати... — гуділи мужики. (Коцюбинський) І Ольга усміхнулась. — *Гаразд.* — "Ото народу збереться". — *"Еге".* .. (Микитенко) *Так!* Я буду крізь сльози сміятись. (Л. Українка)

2. Negative quasi-sentences/one-word sentences express nega tion. Their most common components in English and Ukrainian are neg ative particles and phrases *not, no, not yet, not at all, ні, зовсім ні, не так, та ні, ще ні,* eg: *Oh, no, no, no",* said her host. *'No, no "*. (Parker) „Got a cigarette, Root?" "*No*". (Steinbeck) "Hear anything?" — 'Wo. *Not a thing"*. (Ibid.) "You can't help us at all?" - *"Not at all"*. (G.Greene) "You don't mind if I do" — "Wo, no, *of course, not"*. (Ibid.) Similarly in Ukrainian: *"Ні.* Сьогодні він не хоче спогадів". (Головко) "Не хочеш?" — *Ні! — Так ні! — Ні!!* (Шумило) *Ні, ні!* Що ти кажеш? Може, й випадково. *Ні.* (Кочерга)

3. Interrogative one-word/quasi-sentences convey questions, inquiry, doubt and are expressed in the contrasted languages by separate com ponents or by phrases. For example: "...what on earth's the matter?" — Nothing. *Why?* (Maugham.) Her voice trembled a little. *"Well?"* (Ibid.) "Just a Lucy?" *"Yes? "* (Trevor) "I congratulate you" — *"Eh?"* (Christie). "От і добре". — *"Добре?"* "Здоровенькі були, ді-ду!" — "Ля?" (Вишня) "В мене екзамен був". — *Ну і як?..* (Гончар)

4. Emotional and exclamatory one-word/quasi-sentences may be expressed by interjections and other functional words together with some notionals. Such sentences are mostly evaluative though they may be purely exclamatory as well, as in this sentence: *Honk! Honk!* The horn of a lorry barked... (M. R. Anand) Emotional and exclamatory meanings are expressed in the following sentences: Hypolito. *Alas! Alas!* See you are in love. *O, God!* My evil genius. (Longfellow). *Goodness sakes!* Would a runaway nigger run south?" (Twain). *Not time yet!* (Caldwell). Кайло враз спинилось. *Бах!* (Будько) *Го-го!* Як танцювати, то танцювати. (Коцюбинський) *"Ах, он як! Розумію".* (Довженко) *"Господь з вами!* Моя дочка удовиця..." "Хай *йому цур!"* (Коцюбинський)

5. Incentive and evaluative quasi-sentences present one more com mon sybtype of one-member sentences. They are also formed from in-

terjections or from their functional equivalents, which may be phrases or notional words by nature, eg: *Bosh!* Don't be moral. (B. Shaw) *Pooh!* In what way? (Ibid.) *"Ssh!"* said the Daddy, and frowned to himself... (Kipling) "Good *Lord, ma'am!* What is it... a baby?" (J. K. Jerome) *"Stuff!* stealing cattle and such things ain't robbery... (Twain) Той ще стояв, огинався. *"Ну!"* (Загребельний) *"їй-богу ж ні!"* (Кочерга) *"Овва.* То вже мені й погуляти не вольно..." *"Хі-хі...* І з географії п'ять." "Ф'ю-ю/Нема вже в барона маєтку." (Коцюбинський) Хома услід Віталієві: *"Тьфу!"* (К.-Карий) Свічка: **"Геть!"** (Кочерга) "Весела дівчина! — *Вогонь!"* (С. Чорнобривець) Софія (до Гната): **"Прощай!"** "Батьківщина гине, а вони..." (С. Скляренко)

6. Vocative quasi-sentences/one-word sentences in both contrasted languages express direct address. Their main component is usually a noun which may often be preceded or followed by an interjection or an attributive adjunct. Vocative quasi-sentences are more meta-communicative in the contrasted languages, than any other of the above-given one-member sentences. They mostly require a response. For example: *"Tom! Tom!"* — No answer. (Twain) *"Hullo Pyle".* (Greene) Trench (hotly). *"Cokane!"* (B. Shaw) *"Eal Chrispa! Chrispa!"* Padre. *"Hypolito!".* (Longfellow) *"Good Lord, ma'am.* What is it... a baby?" (J. K. Jerome) *"Чіпко! Чіпко!"* — Чіпка лежить на полу, мовчить. (Мирний) *"Браво, Жан, браво!"* *"Кумонько, кумо... "* (Коцюбинський) *"Мамо!* — Соромились би..." (Тулуб) *"Тітко Клаво!* Фашист!" (Донченко) *Україно!* Ти для мене диво! (Симоненко)

Equally meta-communicative in English and Ukrainian (like in many other languages) are also many quasi-sentences that express greeting, request, excuse, and order. Such meta-communicative quasi-sentenses usually require a response sentence or are followed by response sentences having in both contrasted languages an identical or similar meaning, eg: *"How do you do!"* — "Oh, *how do you do,* Mister Williams", she said. *"Well,* how do *you do. "* (Parker) Lickcheese. *"Good morning, sir".* Sartorius. *"Good morning..."* (B. Shaw) *"Здорові були,* сват!" — *"Добривечір..."* (Коцюбинський) *"Чолом,* панове!" — *"Чолом,* пане Максиме!" (Панч) *"Здрастуйте,* дідусю!" — закричало радісно дитя. (Мирний)

Communicative Types of Sentences in English and Ukrainian

According to the role in the performance of communication and due to the modality/intention expressed, all sentences in the contrasted languages fall into the following five common semantic types: 1) *declarative sentences (statements);* 2) *interrogative sentences;* 3) *imperative and inducive sentences;* 4) *sentences of hypothetic modality;* 5) *exclamatory sentences.* Interrogative sentences include some common paradigmatic classes which may be in English and Ukrainian either affirmative or negative (see Table 25 below).

Consequently, the communicative types of sentences and their paradigmatic classes are absolutely isomorphic/common in English and Ukrainian. As will be shown further there still exist some minor structural divergences, however, in some of these classes of sentences in both contrasted languages.

Declarative sentences in both their paradigmatic classes (the affirmative and the negative statements) may be in English and Ukrainian of real, wishful or conditional modality. Equally common are also the structural forms of the affirmative and negative statements which may be either two-member sentences or one-member sentences in each of the contrasted languages. For example:

a) Affirmative statements of real modality:

"Thank you again very much." (Hemingway)	Ще раз вам дуже дякую.
The door opened. (Mansfield)	Двері відчинилися.
Suddenly Coleman laughed. (Maken)	Раптом Колмен засміявся.
That was Coleman. (Ibid.)	Це був Колмен.

b) Affirmative statements of wishful or conditional modality:

It's time we got out. (Cusack)	Час би вже вибратися звідси.
I had better tell him... (Galsworthy)	Краще б я був сказав йому. . .
"I want to meet Walter Williams." (D. Parter)	"Я хочу познайомитись з Волтером Вільямсом"

c) Negative statements of different kinds of modality have also common and divergent features in English and Ukrainian. Common are statements with the negation to the finite verb expressed by the negative

Communicate Types of Sentences

Table 25

English		Affirma-tive	Negative	Ukrainian		Стверджу-вальні	Заперечні
Communicative type	Paradigmatic form			Communicative type	Paradigmatic form		
Declarative	Common	+	+	Розповідні	Common	+	+
Interrogative	General questions	+	+	Запитальні	Загальні запитан-ня	+	+
	Disjunctive questions	+	+		Диз'юнктивні	+	+
	Alternative questions	+	+		Альтернативні	+	+
	Special questions				Спеціальні		
	Rhetorical questions	+	+		Риторичні	+	+
	Suggestive questions	+	+		Сугестивні	+	+
Imperative and inducive sentences		+	+	Наказові та спонукальні речення		+	+
Exclamatory sentences		+	+	Вигукові речення		+	+
Sentences of hypothetic modality		+	+	Речення гіпотетичної модальності		+	+

particle *not,* by the double conjunction *neither nor/either or,* and by the negative pronoun *no.* They have their equivalents in the Ukrainian negative particles *не, ні* and in the double conjunction *і — і,* as in the following sentences:

Neither George nor I dared to turn round. (Jerome)

Ні Джордж, ні я не насмілювались повернутись.

Johnny didn't start the fire. (Saroyan) Irene made no reply. (Galsworthy) ...He neither spoke nor moved. (Bronte)

Джонні не підпалював будинку.

Ірен не відповіла/не дала відповіді. ...Він і не відповідав, і не

Allomorphism is observed in English negative statements with the negative pronouns and negative adverbs *no, nobody, nothing, nowhere, never,* etc. which have double negation in Ukrainian where it is formed by the negative pronoun or negative adverb and the negative particle *не,* eg: Mrs. Dyke was **nowhere** to be seen. (Norris) Пані Дайк **ніде не** було видно. No dog **Не** було видно **жодного** собаки. was to be seen. (Irving) But really I Я і справді **нічого не знаю...** У **know nothing...** (Doyle) 1 **never** had мене ще **ніколи не було** такого such a wonderful holiday... (Cusack) чудового свята...

Sentences of interrogative modality, however, have a common communicative function and mostly identical structural forms in both contrasted languages.

Their types are as follows: **general questions** ("yes-no" questions) and **special questions** ("pronominal" or "wh"-questions). All other sentences of interrogative modality ("tag-questions", rhetorical and alternative questions) are in both languages practically structural and communicative modifications of these two structural types.

A. General Questions in English mostly open with an auxiliary, modal or linking verb followed by the subject. Ukrainian general questions may open with any part of the sentence. Rather often Ukrainian general questions also open with a particle: "*Did* you do it?" (Saroyan) *То,* може, ти це зробив? *Це* каже хто? *А можна/Хіба* можна так сказати? *Shall* we pack up and go? (M. Spark) *Може* спакуємось і поїдемо?

Note. To express inquiry, suggestion or uncertainty, general questions may open in colloquial English with the finite verb or with the subject of the sentence (as in Ukrainian): *"Got* a cigarette, Root?" "Hear

338

anything?" *"Scared of the* dark, kid?" (Steinbeck) *"Know* them?" (Mansfield) *"You know* our new neighbour?" (H. Munro). Hence, the colloquial forms of English general questions testify to the existence of similarity, if not identity in the structural forms of general questions in English and Ukrainian.

B. Disjunctive/Tag-Questions have in English and Ukrainian semantic and structural equivalents as well. Structural identity is observed in disjunctive questions consisting of an affirmative or negative statement followed, respectively, by a negative and/or affirmative question tag. "She is rather sweet, *isn't she?'* "Вона гарненька, чи не так?" "You're not afraid, are you?" (Steinbeck) "Ти ж не боїшся, *так?/ правда?/ Чи не так?"*

Allomorphism is observed, however, in the ability of some Ukrainian tag-questions to be transformed into general questions. For example: "You are all right, aren't you?" "У тебе все гаразд, чи не так? or Правда ж, у тебе все гаразд?"

C. Alternative Questions are characterised in both contrasted languages by absolutely isomorphic features only. The latter manifest themselves in the existence of a semantically and structurally common alternative conjunction *or* corresponding to the Ukrainian *чи.* The introductory part in these sentences coincides in both languages and may be either a general question or a special question by its structure. The very existence of alternative questions, however, is regarded by some grammarians as disputable today. Despite this the alternative questions can not be denied specific semantic and structural peculiarities of their own. Thus, the introductory part, whether a general or a special question by its form, is always pronounced before the alternative conjunction with a rising tone: Are there among the football hooligans only the British fans or there are some Belgians too? (F. News). То серед футбольних хуліганів / тільки одні англійці чи є і бельгійці? Is he / married or single? (Sheridan) Він /"одружений чи ще ні?

D. Special/Pronominal Questions are characterised in the contrasted languages by generally common if not presumably universal features. They open with an interrogative pronoun or adverb which may

sometimes be preceded by prepositions, particles or interjections. For example: *Who* said so? (Hemingway) What did *you* say? (Spark.) *And what* is it? *With whom* have they come? Oh, *what* was it? These sentences have absolute structural equivalents in Ukrainian: *Хто* це так сказав? *Що* ти сказав? А *що* це таке? З *ким* вони прийшли? О, *що* то було? О, *то що* то було?

Allomorphic is only the often use of prepositions in the closing position of the special question in English: What are you quitting *for*? (London) Where do you come *from*? (Conrad) What do you point to?

E. Sentences of Hypothetic Modality /Речення гіпотетичної модальності. The semantics of hypothesis may be expressed in the contrasted languages both with isomorphic as well as with allomorphic lexical means. Isomorphic is the expression of hypothetic modality by means of predicative parts or through the inserted notional words/phrases which are either modal words/phrases or predicates that include notional and modal verbs or their lexical equivalents. As, for example, in the following sentences:

Perhaps he was really not so young as he looked. (Conrad) "They are *more likely* to tickle us". (Galsworthy)	*Може, він* і справді не був таким молодим, як із вигляду. *Більш імовірно,* що вони розсмішать нас.

The expression of hypothetic modality through modal words is therefore identical in both languages. So is, generally, the expression of this kind of modality by means of the modal verbal predicates. Pertaining to Ukrainian, however, is mostly the predominant expression of hypothetic modality through the modal particles *б/би, десь, ледве, ніби, наче, либонь, чи не, ледве (чи) не, навряд чи* and some others. For example:

"Навряд чи й двоє з ним справились би ". (Гончар) Після нас *хоч (і)* потоп.	"Even both of them *would have hardly* managed to overpower him.". After us the deluge. (Saying)

F. Rhetorical Questions have a modal meaning which does not contain any new information for the speaker. Structurally interrogative

by form, these questions contain a negative or an affirmative statement with a respective implicit answer. Rhetorical questions realise structurally a statement and a question simultaneously. Cf.: Can the leopard change his spots? or: Have I not suffered things to be forgiven? (Byron) Is it fair to take advantage of a man like this? (B. Shaw) Or in Ukrainian: Хіба горбатого могила виправить? А кого це кортить? Що ти кому казатимеш? Що тут удієш?

G. Sentences of Incentive Modality /Речення спонукальної модальності. Incentive modality originates in English and Ukrainian from optative modality and may have the meaning of incentiveness proper or it may express wishful incentiveness. Hence, the two different structural types of sentences to express these varieties of incentiveness:

1. *Imperative sentences,* i. e. such sentences in which the main in centive meaning constitutes a categorial demand which is expressed through the imperative mood forms of verbs denoting order, command, request, warning, prohibition, persuasion, etc. The incentive meaning of this type is realised through a) one-member sentences, eg: Silence! Stop talking! b) through two-member sentences, eg: Vanish the dream! Van ish the idle fears! (Longfellow) Згинь, ця думко! (Згинь же, безпід ставний страх!) "Clear the road, you bums." (Caldwell) Зійдіть з дороги, волоцюги!/ Тікайте з дороги, волоцюги!

Incentive modality may also be expressed in exclamatory sentences through the meaning of the auxiliary verb *"let"* and in Ukrainian by the particles *нум* or *нумо.* Cf. *"Let* me go and see him alone." (Maugham) *Хай / Нум* я сам зайду до нього. *Let* George do it. *Хай/Нехай* хтось інший робить це. Let bygones be bygones! Що було те загуло. (Saying)

2. Exclamatory as well as some other semantic types of sentences may have the form of a) affirmative or interrogative sentences: He took no notice of Mariam! (Lawrence) Він навіть не помічав Маріам! What a medley of opinions! (Goldsmith) Яка мішанина думок! "Isn't it mar vellous?" (Parker) Хіба ж це не чудово! b) Exclamatory sentences of this type may also have the form of unextended or extended infinitival sentences: But to sneak her (Fleur) like this! (Galsworthy) Щоб так оце викрасти її! c) They may also have the form/structure of nominal sen tences: The sky, the flowers, the songs of birds! (Galsworthy) — Чисте

небо, квіточки, пташиний спів! The rain. The welcome rain! (Long-fellow) Дощ, давно очікуваний дощ!

The Structural Segmentation of the Sentence in
English and Ukrainian

The structural segmentation of sentences in English and Ukrainian may be performed on the basis of some common principles. These are employed when segmenting sentences into their component parts at the surface level structure, as well as when contrasting the meaning of the component parts at the deep level sentence structure.

The most common and traditional segmentation of unextended and extended two-member sentences in all languages is that into the parts of the sentence. Common in the contrasted languages is also the segmentation of extended sentences into parts of the sentence and into syntactic units. The latter mostly perform the functions of extended or expanded parts of the sentence.

A deep level sentence structure segmentation may aim at identifying the meaning expressed in the contrasted languages by the same parts of the sentence and in structurally identical sentence patterns. Thus, depending on the lexico-grammatical semantics of the component nominals and verbs, the former, when endowed with some functional meanings, may denote 1) the subject of an action and the predicate of an action: *the student reads/студент читає;* 2) the subject of motion and the predicate of motion: *the child walks/дитина ходить;* 3) the subject of state and the predicate of state: *the child sleeps/дитина спить.*

Common with the same sentence structures in English and Ukrainian may also be the semantic homonymy of sentences. Thus, the N — V — Adv/S — P — D model sentence may sometimes express, depending on the lexico-grammatical characteristics of the verb, the active and the passive voice meaning. Cf. this girl *sells* well (active voice) — this book *sells* well (passive voice). Similarly in Ukrainian: Ця дівчина давно прибирається (active voice). Ця вулиця давно прибирається (passive voice). Петренко будується (active voice). Місток будується (passive voice).

TYPOLOGY OF THE MAIN PARTS OF THE SENTENCE

Ail parts of the sentence in the contrasted languages have both an isomorphic functional meaning and lexico-grammatical nature. Common/ isomorphic is also the traditional subdivision of them into a) the main and into b) secondary parts of the sentence. The main parts are the subject (підмет) and the predicate (присудок). The secondary parts are the object, the attribute and different adverbial modifiers (додаток, означення, обставинні члени речення).

The subject and the predicate in the contrasted languages are considered to be interdependent parts of the sentence. They are bearers of predication forming the sentence. Cf. They laughed. (Hemingway) Вони засміялися. Other parts of the sentence are usually dependent on the subject, on the predicate or on one another. As in the following sentence. *Everyone knows his own business best.* (Pritchett) The constituent word-group of this sentence in English and in its Ukrainian variant in syntactic presentation (patterning) are as follows: 1) the primary predication (S-P) word-group *Everyone knows Кожен знає;* 2) the predicate-object word-group *knows < his own business знає свою власну справу;* 3) the attributive word-group *his own business свою власну справу* and 4) the predicate-adverbial modifier word-group *known best знає найкраще.* Therefore, the highest degree of combinability in this sen-tense has the simple verbal predicate with its postpositive complements.

The structure of the parts of the sentence in the contrasted languages is characterised by isomorphic features in the main. There are distinguished the following structurally common types of them in English and Ukrainian: 1) simple, i. e. expressed by a single word-form (synthetic or analytical); 2) extended or expanded, i. e. expressed by a subordinate or by a co-ordinate word-group; 3) complex (when expressed by a secondary predication construction/word-group). Some parts of the sentence in English and Ukrainian may be expressed by a regular clause. For example: *What you told me* is a lie. (Twain) This subject can be substituted for a single word performing the same function: That/ it is a lie. Similarly in Ukrainian: *Те, що ти казав мені, — брехня; Те (це) є брехня.*

Typological Characteristics of the Subject

Being one of the central parts of a two-member sentence, the subject in the contrasted languages has, naturally, an identical syntactic function. But despite this, the subject has some distinguishing features characteristic of the English language only.

The typological characteristics of the subject with its isomorphic and allomorphic features in form/structure and semantic nature both in English and Ukrainian can clearly be observed below in table 26.

As can be seen from the table some ways of expressing the subject are found only in English. These are 1) by means of the indefinite pronouns *one, you, they,* eg: When *one* loves *one's* art, no service seems too hard. (O. Henry) *They* say I am like my father, grandfather. (Dickens) *You* don't say so; 2) by means of the impersonal or anticipatory/ introductory pronoun *it: It* was just very dark. (Murdoch.) *It* was fun to think that she could be crazy. (Maugham); 3) by means of the formal/ introductory *"there",* which is used, as a rule, to introduce the rhematic subject: *"There's nothing wrong* with him." (Caldwell); 4) by means of the infinitival secondary predication *for*-phrase: *"For me to come* is impossible", Louise said. (C. Herman) "...it is absurd *for you* to doubt yourself. (I. Snow); which is also available in Ukrainian (cf. *Для мене* це *зробити* легше за все) but has no complex predicative nature. 5) by means of the subjective with the infinitive or participle construction forming, like the for + to + infinitive construction, the so-called complex subject. Cf. **The fire** is certain **to produce** panic in the morning. (Dreiser) **They** seem **to have quite forgotten** him already. (T. Hardy) **He** was seen **arguing** with the ship's doctor... (Sinclair); 6) by the gerundial construction: **Tom's coming** here was a blessing. (Fitzgerald)

The Semantic Functions of the Subject

These functions are common in both languages. The principle ones are the following:

1. That of the **agent** of the action in relation to the predicate. Cf. **Dr. Mackrhail** sighed faintly. (Maugham) **They** went upstairs to pack...

Table 26.

Structural Forms of the Subject

LANGUAGE		English	Ukrainian
Structural Form	Simple	+	+
	Expanded	+	+
	Extended	+	+
	Formal (there, it)	+	-
	Quotation words/expression	+	+
	Complex	+	-
Ways of Expressing Word-form/word, part of speech, clause	Noun	+	+
	Pronoun	+	+
	Indef/Personal Pronoun one, you, they	+	-
	Numeral	+	+
	Adjective	+	+
	Adverb	+	+
	Infinitive	+	+
	Gerund	+	-
	Participle in nominal function	+	+
	Clause	+	+
Way of Expression Predicative Construction	Infin. *for-to*-construction	+	+
	Objective with the infinitive	+	-
	Subject. with the Inf. Construction	+	-
	Object. with the Inf. Construction	+	-
	Subj. with the Participle Construction	+	-
	Gerundial Construction/complex	+	-

(Galsworthy) **Доктор Макргейл** злегка зітхнув. **Вони** піднялися сходами, щоб спакуватися...

2. That of the patient of the action expressed by the predicate: *The expense of the election* **was borne by the party.** (Maugham) *His thoughts* **were broken** by the Viscount taxiing in. (Hailey) *Витрати за вибори* **сплачувалися** партією. Хід його думок **був поруше ний** підрулюючим літаком "Вайткаунт".

3. The experiencer of an action in relation to the predicate: She didn't like **his wife.** (Maugham) *He* had first heard **about the pride...** at high school. (Hailey) *Вона недолюблювала* **його дружину.** *Він* уперше почув *про гордість* у коледжі.

4. The recipient of an action in relation to the predicate: The year before he had won the tennis championship. (Maugham) Торік він *виграв* чемпіонат з тенісу/ став чемпіоном з тенісу.

5. The instrument in relation to the predicate: The engine chuk chuked, **the leather belt** klupped, the bolts jig-jiged... (M. R. Anand) **Мотор** чахкотів, **ремінний пас** сичав, тіпалися **сита...**

6. The eventive function of the subject in relation to the action ex pressed by the predicate: All that had happened was his own fault. (Maugham) Все, що трапилося, було з його власної вини.

Typological Characteristics of the Predicate

The main features of the predicate are common in English and Ukrainian. Allomorphism is pertained only to some forms of express-ing it in English (by the continuous and perfect forms of the finite verb or by the gerund), eg: Minnie **was thinking** of the resource which Carry **would add.** (Dreiser) Many young men had taken silk. (Maugham) Deciding **is acting.**

As to its structure, the predicate may be in both languages 1) Sim-ple verbal (expressed by the synthetic or analytical form of the finite verb, as in the sentences above); 2) Simple nominal, which is very widely used in Ukrainian and much rarer in English. For example: "Splendid game, *cricket".* (Huxley) My ideas *obsolete!!!!!!!* (B. Shaw) Me to *jump* first? Чудова гра *крикет!* Моя ідея *застаріла*!?! Голос у мене *мов грім.*

(Стельмах) А вітерець тільки *ф-ф-у!* Голова в неї *о-го-го!* The simple nominal predicate may also be expressed in Ukrainian by the impersonal verb forms in -но,-то, as well as by different nominals which form in English part of the compound nominal predicate. Cf. Yanosh is/was killed. "Яноша *вбито!"* (Гончар) Його *звільнено* з посади. He is/has been fired. На сьогодні все *перевірено* й збитки *підраховано.* The simple nominal predicate may often be adverbial in Ukrainian. For example: Наші всі вже там. Нам і всім уже годі/зась. The Ukrainian language (like the Russian) makes an especially intensive use of the simple nominal predicate both in colloquial and in literary speech in sentences like Це вони. Ми *студенти, а* не *учні.* Він завжди *гарний приклад* для інших підлітків. Всі вони сьогодні ще *вчорашні випускники середньої школи.* Ukrainian school grammars treat such and the like functions of postpositive nouns as predicatives, i.e. as part of the compound nominal predicate. In reality, however, they are not identical even to such predicates as Ми - викладачі, а ви - наші студенти, where the dash can be treated as a substitute sign for the missing linking verb *to be* (i.e. in Ukrainian). Consequently, such cases represent simple nominal predicates, and not compound nominal predicates as we have in sentences with the linking verb *to be* like in the following sentence by the poet P. Tychyna: Ми *єсть народ,* якого правди сила ніким звойована ще не була. Or in sentences like Вони вже є студентами нашого університету.

3) The third group of simple predicate constitute the so-called phraseological predicates expressed by verbal set expressions. For example, Of all that Johny *took no notice.* (London) На все це Джонні *не звертав уваги.* Clare *gave* him a sweet *look.* (Galsworthy) Клер звела на нього ніжний погляд. Здалеку подав свій чистий голос чорний дрозд. The blackbird gave a loud clear call. (Ibid.)

Note. Pertaining only to English is the simple contaminated predicate consisting of a verb in any tense and aspect form and of a past participle. Cf. The air-raids on Berlin in March 1945 had *continued un*abated. The rescue work in the disaster area *is going on* day and night *unabated.* (R. Digest)

Ukrainian equivalents of this type of simple verbal predicate will be

of the same structure, i.e. simple verbal: Повітряні рейди... *тривали безперестанку / не припинялися*. Рятувальні роботи... продовжуються вдень і вночі/ *не припиняються* ні вдень, ні вночі.

The Compound Predicate and Ways of Expressing It

There exists complete isomorphism in the nature, meaning and structural types of the compound predicate in the contrasted languages. Their subtypes are generally common too. Namely:

1. *The Compound Verbal Modal Predicate* which comprises a modal verb or its equivalent and the infinitive or gerund (the latter in English only). The modal verb expresses the modal lexical meaning of the pred icate as possible, impossible, desirable, obligatory, necessary, certain/un certain, planned, etc. For example: "You *ought to be working* now." (Joyce) *"We'd better go* home." (Galsworthy) Ви *мали б працювати* зараз/ Ви повинні бути на роботі зараз. "That needs *a bit of think ing"*. (A. Christie) Над цим *треба*/необхідно трохи *подумати;* I *couldn't help smiling.* (Maugham) Я не міг втриматися від посмішки.

Common in both languages is also the *compound verbal predicate,* which comprises verbs denoting *desire, intention, determination, hope, attempt,* etc. Eg: I want to go home. (Banks) *"I'm going to be* at the concert..." (Parker) Я *хочу йти* додому. *Я маю намір бути/хочу прийти* на концерт... I *was trying to learn* German. (Maugham) Я *пробував учити* німецьку мову. "I've *tried to do* the best I can for her." (F. King) Я *намагався зробити* для неї все, *що міг.* He did not want to speak, not to anyone. (Lawrence) Він не хотів розмовляти, ні з ким.

The compound modal verbal predicate may include phraseological units/set expressions: He said I *should take it easy* a bit. (D. Lessing) Він казав, щоб я *це не брав близько до серця...* she *was only too included to take advantage* of his weakness. (Galsworthy) ... їй тільки дуже *кортіло скористатися* його слабкістю. "You'*d better get off* here," Charlie said. (D. Lessing) "Тобі *краще б вийти* тут", - сказав Чарлі. *"I'd better get up* by the driver." (Mansfield) Я *б краще сіла* коло шофера.

2. The *Compound Verbal Aspective Predicate* consisting of verbs

348

denoting the beginning, duration or cessation of an action/state plus the imperfective infinitive or gerund (in English). Eg: Her legs *began to tire*. (Dreiser) I *shall continue to endure* my fate... (Kipling) Ноги її *почали стомлюватися. Я продовжуватиму терпіти/зносить* свою долю... He *continued blinking* his eyes and *trying to smile...* (Joyce) Він продовжував *кліпати очима* й *намагався* посміхатися... When she was a child she *used to sit* on the lowest step nursing a rag doll. (Ibid.) ... дитиною вона *бувало висиджувала* зі своєю ганчір'яною лялькою при землі на останньому східці. Sunshine *came spelling upon* us. (Cronin) Сонце враз *почало заливати* нас своїм промінням.

No doubt there can be no direct structural equivalents to some peculiar English parts of the aspective or modal predicates (eg. gerundial parts). Other components of the compound verbal predicate are common in the contrasted languages, however. Among these can be, for example, the compound nominal and aspective predicate as in the following sentences: He *must begin* at last *to study* properly. Він *повинен,* зрештою, *розпочати* серйозно *вчитися.*

Note. Only in English, however, there is the so-called compound double verbal predicate formed by the subjective with the infinitive construction, eg: He *seemed to have completely lost interest* in everything. (Hemingway) The space mission is *unlikely to finish* this week.

3. *The Compound Nominal Predicate* consists in both languages of linking verbs which may have a vague lexical meaning *(to be, to get)* or preserve its lexical meaning *(to remain, to become, to grow, to turn, to look, to seem, to feel),* which have direct lexical equivalents in Ukrainian. The nominal part of the compound predicate in English may be expressed by the gerund and by predicative constructions, missing in Ukrainian. Eg: deciding *is acting.* That is *for me to decide.* It was *his reading* which impressed me. Other nominal parts are isomorphic in the contrasted languages, with only some specific features of the predicative in English, which are allomorphic for Ukrainian. For example: "I'm off. (Lessing) "You *are come?"* (Maugham). "That's *him".* (Kipling) Ukrainian nominal parts of the compound nominal predicate are declinable: "Згадайте — був я вам *за тата".* (Павличко) Він здавався *веселим/виснаженим.* Mary was jealous poor dear. (F. King) Мері *була ревнива,* бідненька.

Apart from the compound nominal *predicate of being* the linking verb in both contrasted languages may have the meaning of becoming. Eg: Bob, who was *growing deaf,* could not hear her. (Ibid.) Боб, який ставав *усе глухішим,* не міг розчути її. The night *has become* more and more raw. (Cardwell) Ніч *ставала все сирішою і сирішою.* The snow turned into cold rain. (London) Сніг *переходив* у холодний дощ. Of isomorphic nature is also the *compound nominal predicate of remaining:* He *remained silent* for a while and spoke again. (Caldwell) Він *продовжував мовчати* якусь мить... The winter *continued damp and wet.* (Cronin) Зима *продовжувалась вологою і мокрою.*

The nominal predicate in both languages may also be *of seeming and appearing:* Yushchenko *seems satisfied* with first March 31 election results. (K. Post) Ющенко *здається задоволеним* попередніми наслідками виборів 31 березня. He appeared. They all *seemed very confident* he would be back for Christmas. (A. Christie) Всі вони *здавалися* дуже *впевненими,* що він повернеться до Різдва. His face *turned red* and then *purple.* Його обличчя *стало* перш червоним/ почервоніло, а потім стало пурпуровим.

The predicative in the contrasted languages may be expressed by practically the same parts of speech, and their functional equivalents, with be exception of the gerund and the secondary predication complexes which **are pertained only** to English. For example:

Noun predicative: I have been a thief. (A. Christie) Я був злодієм.

A pronoun: Who was it? (Ibid.) "It's me". (Greene) Це був я.

A numeral: Shan Tung was the sixteenth. (A. Christie) Він був першим.

An adjective: "You look tired," he said. (Joyce) Ти здаєшся стомленим.

An infinitive: To decide is to act. (Saying) Головним було - прийти.

A participle: "I'm just finished." (J. Collier) Місто було зруйноване.

A gerund: Deciding is acting. Seeing is believing. (Sayings)

A stative: He was afraid. (F. King) Йому було страшно.

An adverb: The danger was over. (Ibid.) Надворі було тепло.

4. *The Compound Nominal Double Predicate* is common in both languages as well, eg: The sunlight sifted golden and heavy... (Cusack) Наталка прибігла сердита, захекана. (Гончар) Шлях лежить великий. (Довженко)

5. The *mixed types* of the compound predicate are of isomorphic nature in English and Ukrainian. They are a) the compound modal nominal predicate: "It *must have been one of the servants".* (Maugham) The boy must be forty by now. (Galsworthy) Цьому хлопцеві *має бути сорок* років. Вона *може бути вчителькою;* b) the compound phrasal nominal predicate: The scared lad *continued to remain silent.* (Saroyan) Заляканий учень *продовжував бути мовчазним/продовжував мовчати;* c) the compound modal phrasal predicate: "You *must stop pretending* ignorance." (Maugham) "Ти *мусиш кинути прикидатися* невинною".

Table 27

| Language | Simple Predicate | | | | | Compound Predicate | | | | | | |
| | | | | | | Verbal | | | | Nominal | | |
	Verbal	Nominal	Phraseological	Secondary	Contaminated	Modal	Phrasal	Aspect	Double	Nominal	Double	Mixt-type
English	+	+	+	+	+	+	+	+	+	+	+	+
Ukrainian	+	+	+	—	—	+	+	+	+	+	+	+

TYPOLOGY OF THE SECONDARY PARTS OF THE SENTENCE

The general implicit morphological nature, the syntactic function and the nomenclature of the secondary parts of the sentence are generally isomorphic in the contrasted languages. Allomorphic features are observed, as a rule, in the structural forms of some types of English objects, attributes and adverbial modifiers, though some Ukrainian secondary parts of the sentence are also characterised by divergent features of their own. The secondary parts of the sentence in the contrasted languages are as follows:

The object which has in English and Ukrainian both isomorphic and allomorphic features. Common, for example, is the functioning of the object as a "subjective complement" (G.G.Pocheptsov), eg: *She* was invited by me: *вона* була запрошена мною.

As to its structural forms, the object in both contrasted languages may be: a) **simple:** I thought that the bank rented it. (F. King) А я думав, що банк позичив *їх* (гроші). Then she heard *music*. (S. Hill) Потім вона почула *музику*. ...he called "Hsst" several times. (Galsworthy) Він кілька разів повторював *"ц-с-с "*. b) **Simple prepositional:** He was afraid of *this*. (Hailey) Він не думав *про це*. "May I speak *to Lucy?"* "Можна звернутися *до Люсі?"* c) **Extended** (expressed by a subordinate word-group): "I do so dislike the *summer crowds."* (S. Hill) Мені так надокучають *юрби людей влітку*. In his book he had drawn *some pretty* nasty *characters*. (Ibid.) У своїй книжці він змалював *кілька вельми неприємних персонажів*. d) **Expanded objects** (expressed by the co-ordinate word-groups): The other two women continued to discuss *the gas and electricity bills*. (F. King) ...the car brought his *father and mother* home. (Galsworthy) These structural types of object have their equivalents in Ukrainian: Дві інші жінки обговорювали рахунки *за газ та електрику*. Машина привезла його *батька й матір* додому. Though the first of the expanded objects in Ukrainian *(рахунки за газ та електроенергію)* may also be treated as the expanded prepositional object, since it is preceded by the preposition. Consequently, the nomenclature of some subtypes of the object may also be enlarged in the contrasted languages.

Apart from the aforenamed there are also other common types of the object/adjective complement in the contrasted languages.

The first to be named are the following traditionally distinguished ones: 1) the ***direct non-prepositional or prepositional*** (in English) object. For example: "He could make *the money* easy". (Snow). "I have heard *of it..."* (Ibid.) Він міг легко заробити *гроші*. Я це/про *це* чув. He went to Oxford, studied *engineering* and played *rugger*. (D. Garnett) Він поїхав до Оксфорда, вивчав *машинобудування* і захоплювався *регбі*.

The simple object may be expressed in English and Ukrainian by different nominal parts of speech or their functional equivalents. Eg: He was describing the *sufferings* of the unemployed (J. London) Він описував *страждання безробітних*. Her laugh cut Soames *to the quick*. (Galsworthy) її сміх зачепив Сомса *за живе*. Fleur flung back *her hair*. (Ibid.) Флер відкинула назад свою *косу*. Nelson had asked *Mary's*

father's consent. (D. Garnett) Нельсон попросив *згоди батька Ме-рі.* She called out *"Hullo!"* (Ibid.) Вона вигукнула *"Алло!"*

Note. The verbs *to ask, to answer, to take, to envy, to hear,* and *to forgive* take two direct objects in English, which is not so in Ukrainian. For example: They scared him, (Johnny) and asked *him many questions.* (Saroyan) Вони залякували його і задавали йому *багато запитань* (допитували). In this sentence both pronouns, *him* and the word-group (extended object) *many questions* are direct objects in English whereas in Ukrainian the second object *him (йому)* is indirect. *Direct* in both languages is also *the cognate object,* eg: Taras Shevchenko *lived* a hard *life. .. .*Clare *slept the sleep* of one who has spent a night in the car. (Galsworthy) Клер *спала сном* людини, що провела ніч у машині. Napoleon *fought* several successful *battles.* Наполеон *виграв/ виборов* не одну успішну *битву.*

The *prepositional object* in the contrasted languages, as has been pointed out, is preceded/introduced by the preposition. For example: It smelt not *of vomit,* but *of food.* (D. Garnett) She felt cold in nothing but her nightdress and the light wrap, and with the shiver of cold she felt fear. (Ibid.) Вона ні *в що* не мерзла, але *в нічній одежині та легенькій фантині і від дрижаків та від холоду* їй було лячно. "I must not panic", she said *to herself.* (Ibid.) "Я мушу тримати себе в руках,"- сказала вона сама *до себе.*

As can be observed, not all English prepositional objects have prepositional equivalent in Ukrainian (cf. it smelt not of vomit). Other prepositional objects, however, are declinable in Ukrainian (Cf. with the shiver of cold big дрижа*ків*/дриголі*ння*, від *холоду,* в одежи*ні*). No morphological expression of the *syntactic dependence* is observed in the so-called *addressee object* (as termed by Prof. G.G.Pocheptsov) *to herself* which corresponds to the indirect object *собі,* though it may be conveyed as an *indirect* prepositional object as well (cf. сказала вона *сама до себе, про себе).*

One more peculiar feature of the English prepositional object is that the preposition may sometimes be split from the object itself. Eg: .. .My car a *1960 Morrts Oxford...* that I have been so proud *of.* (B. Hanville) Or in such an example: *Who* do they (children) belong *to?* (Maugham) *Котрої* з них вони/Вони котрої з них?

The indirect object in both languages has an indirect case form which is expressed in English only by the personal pronoun in the objective case and by the interrogative and relative pronoun *who.* Eg: I know they told *me* that. (Ibid.) Це вони *мені* сказали. The doctor gave *me* pills to take tranquillisers. (Ibid.) Лікар дав *мені* пігулки для заспокоєння. He handed *her* the paper. (Dreiser) Він передав *їй* папірець. The Ukrainian indirect object may also be a noun, any pronoun or numeral (cf. дати щось *комусь, Петрові, Марії, двом/обом).* Or in the following Ukrainian sentences: Він послав *Ганні* книжку. Він послав книжку *Ганні/дня* Ганни. Гамір не давав *дитині (дітям)* спати. Hence, all English notionals with no morphological expression of indirect case forms can be called "indirect objects" only conventionally. Cf. I sent *Ann* a book/ I sent a book *to/for Ann.* He sent *nobody anything.* Such morphologically amorphous words as *nobody, nothing* and even nouns which do not reflect any morphological category by their form can express their relations only through their syntactically predetermined placement. Taking all this into consideration, i.e. the absence of any morphological expression of indirect cases in almost all English notionals (except the objective case form of the personal pronouns *me, him, her, them, us)* and the relative/ interrogative pronoun *whom,* it would be typologically more expedient to use also the term "complements" instead of the tradition term "object".

Apart from the above-mentioned subtypes of the direct object in the contrasted languages, two more structural forms of it are to be singled out. These are: 1) the clausal object/expressed by the object subordinate clause: "You're always telling me how good you are". (I. Shaw) Ти завжди повторюєш мені, *яка ти добра.* Or "I suppose *she's been telling you* that I'm *a selfish brute."* (J. Caгу) "Гадаю, *вона вам сказала,* що я *жахливий егоїст".*

The formal object is an allomorphic feature/phenomenon pertained to the English language only. This object is expressed by the formal pronoun *it* which has an implicit meaning, as can be seen in the following sentences: On Saturday she would *clean it, wash it,* and *air it.* (J.K. Jerome) which means in Ukrainian the following: По суботах вона *прибирала, мила й провітрювала* (всі кімнати, приміщення). I found *it* impossible to utter the next word. (Kahler) У мене не було жодної

354

змоги сказати хоч слово. We can walk *it* very quickly. Ми швидко пройдемось (туди).

The complex object is not a completely allomorphic feature for Ukrainian either, though some of its structural forms are alien to it. These are, for instance, the objective *with the infinitive,* the *objective with the present participle* or the *gerundial complexes/constructions,* which have nouns or subordinate clauses for their equivalents in Ukrainian. For example: "Oh! If I could only see *him laugh* once more." (M. Twain) She had expected him *to be more sympathetic.* (Ibid.) I heard *someone weeping.* (D. Greene) I hear *him calling* her name. (Fitzgerald) "It's no *good your flying in temper."* (Maugham) Apart from these there are some isomorphic or similar complexes, which are observed in both languages. There are cases "like It would be better *for us to leave* him." (O. Wilde) There *was need for him* to be economical. (London): Було б краще *для нас* залишити його. *У ньо-го* настала необхідність економити. These English complexes have structurally different equivalents in Ukrainian: either the prepositional object *(для нас)* or the direct object *(залишити його).* In the second sentence *(for him to be economical)* the equivalent is again different in Ukrainian: *у нього* (prepositional object) and *to be economical* becomes an attribute in Ukrainian *(потреба бути економним).*

Isomorphism is observed in both contrasted languages in the function and structure of *the objective with the past participle complexes* like They found *the door unlocked/the soldier wounded.* Вони заста-ли *двері відімкненими/знайшли бійця пораненим.* I remember the *actor younger.* Я пам'ятаю *цього актора молодшим.* These participial (and adjectival) components and constructions are treated in Ukrainian as the *double predicate* (Cf. Вони *застали двері/*двері були *відімкнені/відімкненими).*

The attribute in both languages functions as an adjunct to a noun head in a word-group. The categorial meanings of English and Ukrainian adjuncts differ considerably, however, since English adjuncts can not express gender, case and only rarely number as in the example with the demonstrative pronouns *this/that*+N_{sing} - *these/those* + N_{plur}; *such a* + N_{sing} - *such*+ N_{plur}, many a+ N_{sing}- many+ N_{plur}.

355

Almost all Ukrainian attributive adjuncts, however, mostly agree with the head noun in gender, case, and number. These adjuncts are: adjectives, numerals, pronouns, participles: *гарний день, мій брат, перше літо, працююча зміна, засіяне поле, моя батьківщина,* etc.

Each of these and other adjuncts has also case endings: *гарного дня, гарному дневі, гарним днем, (при) гарному дневі; мого брата, моєму братові, моїм братом, мій брате; першому дневі, першим днем,* etc.

But there are some non-declinable adjuncts in Ukrainian as well. Cf. Number 17 was on the second floor. (Christie) *Номер 17* був на третьому поверсі. Similarly in: *Палата 17, у палаті 17,* etc.

Here the adjunct "17" does not agree in Ukrainian in gender (like in English) with its head word "number"*/номер, палата № 17).* Neither is there any syntactic agreement in English and, as will be shown further, even in Ukrainian word-groups between the adverbial, infinitival and some phrasal adjuncts. Cf. in English: George was *the first to recover.* (J. K. Jerome), the *then government, sugar cane production,* a *to-be-or-not-to-be question,* the *sentence below, books to read,* the *House of Commons debate,* etc. Similarly there is no syntactic agreement of adverbial and infinitival adjuncts with their noun heads in Ukrainian either. Cf. Гвідо вибрав *шлях наліво...* (Л. Українка), бажання *виграти,* спроба *виправдатись.*

Some adverbial adjuncts in English may be post-posed, eg: A *voice inside* said. (Maugham) But: In the light *of after events...* (Fox).

Common in English and Ukrainian is the use of prepositional adjuncts and adjunct clauses, eg: There were only two *houses of any importance* in King's Abbot. My friend *of whom I spoke* was a young man... (Christie) Біля шарабанів *коні в хомутах.* (Головко) Мій приятель, *про якого я казав...*

Isomorphic are also noun adjuncts as in the sentence I heard *Joanie's voice* (Maugham) Я чув *голос Джоані* (or *Джоанін* голос).

Pertaining to English only, however, are adjuncts consisting a) of clusters of nouns like *sugar cane production;* b) of statival adjuncts to nouns: Miss Ackroyd saw her *uncle alive* at a quarter to ten. (Christie); c) of gerundial adjuncts to nouns: "You have not spoiled *my pleasure in*

356

meeting you, Mr. Gray". (Wilde); d) of the contextual adjuncts expressed by articles having a lexical meaning in the text: *The thought* was fire in him. (London) "I want *the Dorian Gray* I used to paint..." (Wilde) *Ця думка* пекла його вогнем. Я хочу мати справу з *тим Доріаном Ґреєм...,* якого я малював...".

Ways of Joining Different Adjuncts and Complements
in English and Ukrainian Word-Groups and Sentences

From what had been shown above, the reader could see that different adjuncts and complements can be joined in subordinate word-groups depending on their nature and on the nature of their head components. Consequently, there have to be pointed out in English and Ukrainian the already mentioned three main ways of joining the adverbial and nominal adjuncts (and complements) with their subordinating nuclei:

1) Analytical (syndetic and asyndetic). 2) Analytic and synthetic. 3) Synthetic. The analytical way of joining is observed when the adverbial component is an adverb, a noun (rarely), or a prepositional phrase. Eg: The *next morning cigarette smoke blew past my window.* (V.S. Pritchett) She *was silent a moment.* (Cusack) *"Come and ask me about it* tomorrow". (Kipling) As becomes clear from the pointed out word-groups, in these sentences practically dominant (in all of them) is the analytical way of connection *(next morning, cigarette smoke, blew past my window, ask me about it, ask me tomorrow).* Only one word-group *(come and ask)* is co-ordinate by its structural form. In Ukrainian, however, predominant in all subordinate word-groups are synthetic as well as analytical and synthetic, i.e. combined ways of joining componental parts. Cf. наступного ранку (syntactic agreement), димок від сигарет (synthetic and analytical connections/joining, i.e. prepositional government), запитай мене (synthetic connection/government in both languages), запитай взавтра (asyndetic connection, adjoinment) in both contrasted languages, etc.

Note. The form of the adjoined component in Ukrainian may be synthetically marked. Cf. *Самотою* (як?) *повзли поміж хатами* (де?) брудні дороги. (Коцюбинський) Він *з успіхом* (як?) захистив диплом-

ний проект. Він *проїхав якось* (коли?) у трамваї (де?) зайцем (як?).

The lexico-grammatic (and semantic) nature of adverbial complements in both languages is mostly identical, however. Apart from the afore-mentioned parts of speech adverbial complements may also be expressed: a) by the infinitive/infinitival phrase: I smiled to her to *show my sympathy.* (Maugham) We *came here to rest.* Я посміхнувся, щоб *своє висловити співчуття.* Ми *приїхали* сюди *відпочивати;* b) by an adverbial phrase/word-group: ...she *had* once before *seen* it *long ago.* (Bronte). Ант *ходив по хижі дуже тихо.* (Скляренко); c) by an extended or expanded word-group: *In fall and winter* they *moved* to the hearth. Восени і взимку вони підсідали до каміна; d) by an adjectival, participial or phrasal adjunct (sometimes with no equivalents in Ukrainian). Cf. *When dressed,* I *sat a long time at the window...* (Bronte) I shall come if necessary. *Одягнувшись, я довгенько сиділа коло вікна... Я прийду, якщо треба;* e) by an adverbial clause: "I *didn't think as high as you do."* (Murdoch) *Я так не переоцінював, як ти.*

Of isomorphic nature in both languages are also homogeneous adjuncts (and complements), which may also be extended or expanded. For example: It (field) *is under the small, dim summer sun.* (Frost) He *could see* the *soft blue-gray-baloon-shaped* oaks. (Galsworthy) There was a little man *with say-nothing-to-me, or-1'll-contradict-you sort of countenance.* (Dickens) Поле *спочивало* під *маленьким, тьмяним літнім сонцем.* Він побачив *ніжні синювато-сірі округлені крони дубів.*

As was pointed out, Ukrainian attributive adjuncts mostly agree with the head noun in number, case and gender, though they may sometimes have a purely complementary function and meaning: Сонце сходить над *маревом нив.* (Сосюра) *Голосом Любові і скорботи* Нам кричать *румовища німі.* (Бажан) *Марево нив* in the first sentence may be treated, naturally, as an attributive word-group (яке марево! -марево нив), though its complementary force is stronger (марево чого?), i.e. an objective relation (synthetic government). Such and the like attributive relation of incomplete/partial agreement can also be found in word-groups created by some nominals and traditionally identified as appositive adjuncts. The latter may also have full and partial syntactic agree-

ment with the head component, for example: гетьман Іван Виговсь-
кий, співачка Соломія Крушельницька (full agreement); інженер
Ставнича, місто Київ/Суми (partial agreement), ми/ви всі (full
agreement), ми/ви одні (full agreement).

Appositional adjuncts in English and Ukrainian specify/identify,
explain or make more vivid and expressive the head component. They
may be a) simple or b) extended/expanded, as can be observed from
the corresponding English word-groups below:

1) *Nurse* Lloyd was openly and bitterly an enemy. (Cronin) *Мед-
сестра* Ллойд була відвертим і непримиренним ворогом.

2) That and *the other factor, the unexpected arrival* of a widowed
sister-in-law with her daughter from India. (Christie) Те, та ще *інший
фактор - непередбачений приїзд* овдовілої невістки з дочкою з
Індії.

Appositional adjuncts may be in English and Ukrainian a) non-
detached *(Mount* Elbrus, *Lord* Henry — *гора* Ельбрус, *лорд* Генрі),
and b) detached: She was dressed in *grey, the colour of pigeon's
feathers...* (Galsworthy) Вона була в *сизому — кольору пір'я дикого
голуба.*

In each of the three English examples above the apposition ad-
juncts, whether non-detached or detached, are connected in a way
which is practically close to adjoinment in English, though they agree
in number with their head components (cf. nurse Lloyd, Mount
Everst, Lord Henry). Their Ukrainian counterparts, however, agree in
number, case and gender with the exception of two examples: у *сизо-
му - кольору...* (neuter gender - versus masculine gender) and *гора*
Ельбрус (feminine gender vs. Lord Henry masculine gender).

English appositional adjuncts may often be joined by means of
prepositions: *queen Beatrix* of the Netherlands, the *Isle* of Wight (cf.
in Ukrainian *Юрій* з Дрогобича, *Петро* з копи здачі). Ukrainian
appositions of the latter type are joined by means of the analytical and
synthetic means and their English counterparts are joined by a purely
analytical (syndetic) means of connection. The apposed component in
the contrasted languages may often be an expanded/co-ordinate or ex-
tended/subordinate word-group as well: *the American writer and phy-
sician* W.C. Williams, *the Ukrainian philosopher and poet* H.S. Sko-
voroda or: *William III, Prince of Orange,* king of England (1689-
1702). Similarly in Ukrainian:

американський письменний і лікар Вільям С. Вільямс, *український філософ і поет* Сковорода, *Вільгельм Третій* - принц Оранський, король Англії (1689-1702). Or: the *American film* "Gone with the Wind" *американський фільм* "Знесені вітром", *кінофільм* "Пригоди барона Мюнхгаузена ", etc.

Different ways of syntactic connection are also observed in verbal word-groups with the participial heads as in the sentences: *Having reached* the door he turned the key and opened it. (Wilde) *Підійшовши* до дверей, він встромив ключа й відчинив їх. In English this way of connection is analytical asyndetic (i.e. syntactic adjoinment) and in Ukrainian - analytic-synthetic (prepositional government), as this verbal (diyepryslivnyk) requires the dependent nominal component in the indirect (dative) case form. The Ukrainian diyepryslivnyk can also govern some nominals synthetically. Cf. Зустрівши *їх (чотирьох чоловіків),* which is possible in English as well, but only when the complement is a personal pronoun in the objective case (cf. Meeting/having met *him/her, us,* etc.). Or in Ukrainian: Йдучи *стежкою* (synthetic government), but: йдучи повільно *(швидко, навшпиньки)* - syntactic adjoinment, i.e. analytical connection.

Consequently, typologically common by their nature adjuncts and complements in English and Ukrainian are often joined in the same paradigmatic classes of word-groups with the help of both common and different means of syntactic connection. Their qualitative correlation convincingly reflects the difference in the syntactic structure of each of the contrasted languages.

Typology of Adverbial Complements/Parts of the Sentence

Adverbial parts of the sentence in the contrasted languages have most features in common. Their use in the sentence/word-group is predetermined by a concrete need to characterise the action, process or state from the viewpoint of manner, time, place, purpose, measure or degree of its preceding. Adverbial complements/modifiers in the contrasted languages refer either to a part of the sentence (usually predicate) or to the sentence as a whole. They may be obligatory or non-

obligatory, i.e. optional. Obligatory adverbials/complements are required by the sentence structure to complete its content. They are used after the predicate verbs *to act/to behave, to be, to cost* and *to treat,* which have lexical equivalents in Ukrainian — *діяти/поступати, опинятися, перебувати, коштувати, ставитися, вести себе.* It costs a *pretty penny.* (London) Це коштувало б *занадто багато* жертв. (Гончар)

Apart from the aforementioned verbs there are some other common groups of verbs in the contrasted languages after which the use of adverbials is obligatory. They are as follows: a) statal and durative verbs *(to dwell, to live, to wait, to last,* etc.); b) verbs implying direction *(to take, to put, to send);* c) verbs of motion and position in space *(to arrive, to come, to go, to return, to sit, to stand,* etc.).

Optional (non-obligatory) adverbials in all languages are not required by the predicate verb. Hence, they are not so important either for the structural completion of the sentence, or for its semantic completion and communicative functioning. For example:

Slowly, Jolyon got up out of the chair. (Galsworthy)	Джоліон *повільно* підвівся зі свого крісла.
"In fact I though you were rather short with the young person." (Maugham)	*"Справді,* я подумав, що ви дуже швидко обійшлися з цією молодою особою."

The pointed out elements in both sentences above can be omitted without ruining the structure or changing the content of the sentence (cf. Jolyon got up out of the chair. I thought you were rather short with the young person).

Omission of obligatory complements or adjuncts is naturally impossible in utterances of both contrasted languages without changing the content of the sense units (and sometimes even ruining their syntactic structure).

Functions of Adverbial Complements in the Sentence

Despite some structural/grammatical differences distinguishing the systems of English and Ukrainian, both languages still have a common nomenclature of adverbial complement parts of the sentence. Common

is also their quantitative representation, sometimes even the ambiguity of meaning of some parts of the sentence in both contrasted languages.

Divergent/allomorphic features find their reflection, as has already been noted, in the morphological (cf. the gerund) or structural nature (cf. predicative complexes) of some semantic classes of English adverbial parts of the sentence. These divergences in the nature and structure of some English adverbial complements do not change in any measure the qualitative (and quantitative) correlation in the system of their semantic classes in the contrasted languages. Among the most occurred adverbial complements/ modifiers in the contrasted languages are those *of place, time* and *manner/attendant circumstances.* These the are followed by some less occurred, but equally important in English and Ukrainian, semantic classes of adverbial complements modifying the verb or any of its non-finite forms in the utterance.

The Adverbial Complement (Modifier) of Place (Обставина місця) may express the following in the contrasted languages: a) place proper; b) direction or destination; c) distance, eg:

The old man sat *there* without moving. (Hemingway)	Старий дід непорушно сидів *там/ на тому ж місці.*
Suddenly people... were coming *to the door* (V.S.Pritchett)	Раптом люди посунули *до дверей.*
Jude leaped out *of arm's length...* (T. Hardy)	Джуд відскочила *на відстань витягнутої руки.*

It should be noted that adverbials of direction in both languages follow the verb of motion (cf. *were coming* to the door, *посунули* до дверей, *leaped* out of arm's length — *відскочила на відстань витягнутої руки).*

The Adverbial Complement of Time /Обставина часу

This complement expresses in both languages time proper, as well as frequency, duration or time relation of an event/action. The means of expressing time are both common and divergent. Common are the following means:

a) lexical means (adverbs of time and frequency: *now, then, often,*

seldom, tonight — зараз, тоді, часто, рідко, сьогодні, вчора).

...I was crying *then.* (Caldwell)	...Я *тоді* плакав.
They gave guys the axe *quite* кири	У Пенсі хлопцям давали *часто* со-
frequently at Pansey. (Salinger)	в руки.

b) Lexico-syntactic means (non-prepositional and prepositional phrases) like *any day, last week, late at night, early in the morning, in September, at 5* o'clock — *будь-якого дня, минулого тижня, пізно ввечері, у вересні, на початку жовтня, о 5 годині.*

At half past six on a Friday evening	О *пів на 6 в п'ятницю, в січні...*
in January Lincoln International	міжнародне летовище ім. Лінкольна
Airport was functioning, though без	працювало/функціонувало, хоч і не
with difficulty. (Hailey)	труднощів.

Lexico-syntactic by nature are also participles/participle phrases preceded in English by such conjunctions as *often, "when"* or *"while",* whose Ukrainian equivalents are either temporal clauses or di-yepryslivnyks:

Reaching the room, she turned on кала	*Зайшовши до кімнати,* вона повми-
all the lights. (Galsworthy)	скрізь світло.
After a moment Charlie followed нею. *her.* (D. Lessing)	*Через якусь мить* Чарлі пішов за

The temporal *"when"* may also precede a noun, an adjective or ad-verb (cf. *when a child, when busy, when there, when at school — ще хлопцем — хлопцем ще, ще молодим, ще тоді — тоді ще).*

Relative (відносний) time and duration has isomorphic forms of expression in both contrasted languages. The means include non-prepositional and prepositional phrases like *each time, every day, from time to time (щоразу, кожного дня, від часу до часу, щогоди-ни).* Subordinate clauses of time are equally used to express time as well:

| *A couple of minutes later* he was snoring like mad. (Salinger)' | *Через кілька хвилин* він уже хріп, як навіжений. |

He kept on singing until *he came downstairs.* (Hemingway) *When she saw them coming* she scrambled out. (Murdoch) (cf. *then* she scrambled out).	Він співав, *доки не зійшов сходами вниз* (і.е. увесь час). *Коли вона побачила,* що вони йдуть, вона також вирвалась *(тоді* й вона вирвалась).

Allomorphic Means of Expressing Complements of Time

Several means of expressing temporal complements pertain to English or to Ukrainian only, as can be seen below. **In English**
 1. By an infinitive:
 she lived *to be eighty-nine.*

2. By a gerund with a preposition/ prepositional gerundial phrase: *George, on hearing the story,* grinned. (Galsworthy)

Among other peculiar ways of expressing temporal/adverbial complements in Ukrainian are the following:

1. Nouns in indirect case forms with or without governing prepositions (cf. прийти темної ночі, на тижні/цього тижня).

2. Nouns in the accusative case with or without prepositions. (Це тривало день/ цілу ніч; впродовж ночі, за добу, через рік, у дні свят/ у дні подорожі, при грошах, о п'ятій годині).

3. Nouns in the locative case with the prepositions о (о десятій годині), *по/по* ночах/на тижні, *при/при* світлі; при Непі).

4. Adverbial nouns in instrumental case (днями, тижнями, роками/ днями й ночами) or adverbs as навесні. Cf. Навесні пташки поверталась до рідного лісу. (М. Івченко)

The Adverbial Complement of Manner/Обставина способу дії

The complement in the contrasted languages is of common lexical and syntactic meaning. It characterises the action of the verb by indicating the way in which it is performed and the means it is performed by (how? in what way? by what means?). The expression of the manner of action in English and Ukrainian may be performed by lexical and lexico-syntactic means. Isomorphic is the expression of this complement by the following means:

1. By qualitative adverbs or adverbs of manner/ adverbial phrases:

William's pen began to write *badly*. (R. Sisson)	Вільямове (Шекспірове) перо стало *погано* писати.
We spent much time *together*. (Hemingway)	Ми проводили багато часу *разом/ вкупі*.
And *so shall* all proper Dogs *do* after me. (Kipling)	І *так робитимуть усі* справжні Собаки після мене.
The wiry red-faced woman... *sat holding her tape recorder modestly on her lap*. (Spark)	Гінка червонощока жінка... сиділа, *тримаючи магнітофон на колінах*.
He came in *griping about how cold it was out*. (Salinger)	Він зайшов, *щулячись і видаючи зовні, як холодно надворі*.
I brought the boat along the bank *dipping* my blades noiselessly. (Cronin)	Я плив човном вздовж берега, нечутно *веслуючи* лопатями.
Now I can go to bed *without dreaming* tomorrow. (B. Shaw)	Тепер я можу йти спати і *не куняти* взавтра.
.. .it is a shame for people to *spend* so much money *this way*. (Dreiser)	... і не соромляться люди розтринькувати *отак* стільки грошей.

365

2. Equally possible in Ukrainian is also the expression of *attendant circumstances* by infinitival phrases. Cf. I woke up in the morning *to find myself famous.* (Byron). Я прокинувся вранці, *щоб дізнатися, що я став славетним.* Or: Я прокинувся вранці і *дізнався, що я став славнозвісною людиною.*

3. By prepositional nouns or other nominal parts of speech that have indirect case forms for their equivalents in Ukrainian (which are not available in present-day English):

She looked *with interest* at the girl	Вона з *цікавістю* подивила-ся/глянула
on the platform. (Christie)	на дівчину, що стояла на платформі.
...I am the Cat who walks *by himself.* (Kipling)	Ліс гомонить... *на тисячу надів, на тисячу голосів.*

4. By an infinitive preceded by a conjunction:

She moved her hand as *if to stop him.* (Cusack)	Вона ворухнула рукою *немов аби/ щоб зупинити* його.

Sometimes there may be two complements of manner or attendant circumstances in a sentence, one or both of them being optional, not obligatory:

He stood there, *reading it,* and sort	Він стояв собі там, *читаючи,* з якимсь
of *stroking* his bare chest and stomach, *with this very stupid*	*недоумкуватим виразом обличчя,* і водив рукою, *ніби чухаючи* голі гру-ди
expression on his face. (Salinger)	й живіт.

Allomorphism is observed in the expression of English *complements of manner* with the help of *the gerund and the nominative absolute participle construction,* having semantic and partly functional equivalents in Ukrainian diyepryslivnyks and indirect case forms of nominal parts of speech. Cf. You learn a language best *by hearing it spoken.* (Carnegie) Найкраще вивчати іноземну мову, *чуючи її в живому мовленні.* He was wearing a raincoat, *the collar half-turned up.* (Snow) Він був у дощовому плащі з *піднятим коміром.* Besides it was Mr. Curry,

366

straw hat tipped a little to one side, cane beneath his arm... (L.P. Hartley) Поруч був пан Каррі *в брилі ледь набакир та ціпком під рукою...* The corresponding meanings of manner may often be expressed in Ukrainian with the help of adverbs, adverbial phrases and nouns in indirect case forms. А тепер *парами,* все *по парі,* все *по парі.* Свирид *на превелику силу* витяг з води Луку. (Коцюбинський) *Співають, ідучи,* дівчата. (Шевченко).

The Adverbial Complement of Cause (Reason)
Обставина причини

The means of expressing the adverbial complement of cause/ reason, despite its common nature in English and Ukrainian, can be both isomorphic and allomorphic.

1. Isomorphic is the expression of the complement by nominals preceded by the conjunctive prepositions *because of, due to, owing to, thanks to, on account of,* which have their semantic and partly structural equivalents in Ukrainian *(через, через те що, внаслідок, завдяки, дякуючи, в результаті):*

Because of his bad leg, he couldn't walk so fast... (Hornby)	Він не міг так швидко йти через *хвору ногу.*
Rip felt famished *for want of hisbreakfast.* (W. Irving)	*Від згадки про сніданок Ріпові* дуже захотілося їсти.

2. Some prepositions in English and Ukrainian aquire causal meaning before nouns denoting psychological or physical state. (These prepositions are *for, from, out of, with — від, з/зі, через),* eg:

He could hardly speak *for fear.*(H.G. Wells)	*Від страху* він не міг слова промовити/ сказати.
They would be there *out of curiosity.*(G. Greene)	Вони прийдуть туди просо *із цікавості.*

3. Partly common is the expression of this part of the sentence, i.e.

complement also by means of participial constructions corresponding to Ukrainian diyepryslivnyk constructions:

The men were weary, *having run* *Вибігавши за худобою весь день,* *behind the beasts all day.* (Back) чоловіки натомилися.

4. Allomorphism in the expression of this part of the sentence in English is restricted to a) nominative absolute participial constructions and b) to the gerund (gerundial complexes), eg: He was in jail *for having killed* a person in a fight. (Abrahams) ...I have great fear of the knife for my poor boy, *his mother died under it due to negligence.* (G. Greene).

Pertaining only to Ukrainian is the expression of the adverbial meaning of cause by nouns in indirect case forms and by diyepryslivnyks or adverbs of cause/result: Очі *від утоми* закрилися. (Панас Мирний) *Од хвилювання* Тетяна не могла спокійно говорити. (Васильченко) *З радощів* він мало не збожеволів. (Коцюбинський) *Натомившись,* спить дочка його рідна, єдина. (Нехода) *...Зозла* у голову дубові стрілами навхрест ударив. (Вирган) *Спересердя* він кинув наполовину недокурену сигарету на підлогу. (Загребельний)

The Adverbial Complement of Purpose / Обставина мети

The complement of purpose in both contrasted languages is optional for the structure of the sentence. It may be expressed in English and Ukrainian by the following common/isomorphic means:

1. By an infinitive/infinitival phrase often introduced in Ukrainian by the conjunction *щоб:*

I smiled to her *to show* my sympathy. Я посміхнувся їй, *щоб показати!*
(Maugham) висловити своє співчуття.
...we both went to our rooms *to get* ...ми обоє пішли до номерів, *щоб/*
ready and all. (Salinger) *аби приготуватися..*

2. By infinitives introduced by the phrase conjunction *so as* corre sponding to Ukrainian *щоб/так щоб:*

368

...he got into the habit of ...thrusting the hand inside his shirt so as *to rest* the thumb in the warmth of his armpit. (London)	...у нього вже стало звичкою... засовувати руку за пазуху, *так щоб зігріти* великого пальця під пахвою.

3. By prepositional nouns which have indirect case forms in Ukrainian:

...I came out to the islands *for my health.* (Maugham)	Я приїхав на ці острови за *здоров'ям.* (задля лікування, щоб набратись здо-
	ров'я).

4. The allomorphic expression of the adverbial complement of pur pose is realised in English with the help of the prepositional gerund and through the secondary predications *for — to* constructions with the infini tive, eg: She used it/or *keeping* small bits and odds. (Christie) The boy stood aside *for him to go by.* (Galsworthy) In Ukrainian the preposition для+noun (для збереження) or the con junction щоб+the infinitive con struction is used to express this same meaning (as in the last sentence): Хлопець *відступився (став убік, дав дорогу), щоб він пройшов.*

The Adverbial Complements of Result (Consequence) Обставина наслідку

This adverbial part of the sentence, both in English and Ukrainian, refers to an adjective or to an adverb accompanied by an adverb of degree *(enough, too, sufficiently, so...as).* Hence, it has no identifying questions or prop-forms. This complement may be expressed: 1. By an infinitive:

It was a great landlocked harbour *big enough to hold* a fleet of цілий	Це була закрита природна гавань, така завбільшки, що в ній сховається
battleships. (Maugham)	флот бойових кораблів.

2. Sometimes English predicative constructions, like *the for to +the infinitive,* may also be used to express the complement of result. The Ukrainian semantic equivalents of the construction is the infini-tive. Cf. His experience of women was great enough *for him to be aware* that

the negative offer meant nothing more than the preface to the affirmative.

(T. Hardy) — Його досвід у стосунках із жінками був досить великим/багатим для того, *аби зрозуміти,* що їх початкова відмова означала не що інше, як преамбула до кінцевої згоди.

3. The infinitival complement of result may be followed in English and Ukrainian by a subordinate object clause. Cf. At first she was too puzzled to understand what had happened. (Wells) Спочатку вона була так приголомшена, що *не зрозуміла,* що трапилося/Спочатку вона була надто приголомшена, *аби зрозуміти,* що трапилося.

The Adverbial Complement of Condition/Обставина умови

1. The adverbial complement of condition in the contrasted languages is usually expressed by a noun or pronoun preceded by a preposition or a prepositional phrase *(but, for, except for, without).* The corresponding Ukrainian prepositions are *за, у, при/за таких обставин, у випадку, за умови.* For example:

This time Pedro let him take the rifle	Цього разу Педро дозволив йому взяти
without a murmur of protest. (G. Trease)	рушницю *без жодних заперечень/ Навіть не спробував заперечити.*
But for his open eyes, he might have been asleep. (Galsworthy)	*Коли б не розплющені очі,* можна було б подумати, що він спить.

2. This adverbial meaning can also be expressed in English and Ukrai nian by a participle or adjective preceded by the conjunctions *if* or *un less/якби, якщо:*

If ifs and ands were pots and pans. (Proverb)	*Якби знаття,* що в кума пиття. (При-казка).
Nobody spoke, *unless* spoken to... (Dickens)	Ніхто не починав розмову, *якщо/коли до нього не зверталися.*

3. The complement of condition may also be expressed in English by an infinitive, a participle or a secondary predication construction, which are usually conveyed in Ukrainian with the help of conditional clauses

introduced by the conjunctions *якби* or *якщо.* Cf. She would have done better *not to notice him. Weather permitting,* everybody will continue the trip. Було б краще, *якби вона не помічала його. Якщо погода дозволить,* всі продовжать свій похід.

Ukrainian allomorphic complements of condition can also be expressed by diyepryslivnyks / diyepryslivnyk phrases as in the following proverbs and sayings. *Лежачи* і сокира ржавіє. *Не спитавши броду,* не лізь у воду.

The Adverbial Complement of Concession/Обставина допусту

Concessive complements in the sentence point to conditions contrary to the action that takes place (or to the state of object/living being) that continues. Hence, the identifying question *in spite of what?* and the prop-forms indicating concession are mostly used. These are, first of all the adverb *nevertheless* and the introductory phrase *in spite of that/ this.* Their Ukrainian counterparts are *незважаючи* (на), *попри.*

Most often, however, the complement of concession is expressed in English by the above-mentioned connective phrase *in spite of and* by the connectives *despite, for all, with all* and by phrases introduced by the conjunction *though.* Their Ukrainian equivalents are the same conjunctions and semantically close prepositional phrases: *незважаючи на, всупереч усьому, наперекір фактам, хоч/хоча:*

In spite of her big nose I liked her very much. (Salinger)	*Незважаючи на* її великий ніс, вона все ж дуже подобалася мені.
Notwithstanding the unpropitious weather, the air raids continue unabated. (F. News)	*Незважаючи на* несприятливу погоду, авіанальоти не припиняються/продовжуються.
Though frightened, he carried it off very well. (Cronin)	*Хоч і настрашений,* він з усім добре справлявся.

A concessive meaning may be created in English without the prepositions, connectives and the conjunction *though,* which is impossible in Ukrainian. Eg: *With all* his witty tricks he was a snob. (Salinger) In Ukrainian, however, the conjunction or connective is always used: *Незва-*

жаючи) на всі його дотепні витівки, він усе ж був недоте-
пою/снобом. Or: *Попри* всі його дотепи, він так і зостався неоте-
саним снобом.

Adverbial Complements of Attendant Circumstances/
Обставини супроводжуючих способів дії

These adverbial complements may be expressed in the contrasted
languages both by isomorphic and by allomorphic means, the latter
being observed mainly in English. Isomorphic is the expression of
attendant circumstances by means of adverbs of manner or preposi-
tional word-groups with semantically corresponding adverbs, preposi-
tional noun phrases or diyepryslivnyks in Ukrainian. Eg:

...she began to speak *in a limping whisper.* (W. Trevor)	...вона почала своє звертання *пошепки й запикуючись.*
Jimmi... dived under and began to swim *with strong, easy strokes.* (J. Wain)	Джиммі.., пірнаючи, відпливав, а по- тім *легко навзамашки* плавав.
Winter set in *early and unexpec- tedly with a heavy fall of snow.* (Cronin)	Зима лягла рано і з *непередбачено/ несподівано великими снігопадами.*

The adverbial co-ordinate word-group *early and unexpectedly* has
a combined temporal meaning *(early)* and that of attendant circum-
stance *(unexpectedly*-how*?).* In Ukrainian the temporal meaning is
equivalently conveyed with the help of the adverb *(рано)* and the ad-
verb of manner/attendant circumstances *непередбачено.* It has an
equivalent in Ukrainian *несподівано* which is also semantically con-
nected with the prepositional noun phrase *with heavy fall of snow.* The
latter has also a functional and semantic equivalent in Ukrainian *з ве-
ликими снігопадами* (how? in what way?)

An allomorphic expression of attendant circumstances is also ob-
served in English when it finds its realisation through gerundial and
nominative absolute participial constructions: Now I can go to bed at
last *without dreading tomorrow.* (B. Shaw) Тепер я *можу лягати
спати, не боячись уже куняти* зранку. Similarly in the sentence
She hesitated by the door-

way, *her hand on the handle of the open door.* (Maurier) Where the attendant circumstance is expressed with the help of the nominative absolute participial construction (complex) ...затрималась у прочинених дверях *(how? in what way?), тримаючись рукою за клямку.*

The Adverbial Complement of Comparison/Обставина порівняння

This adverbial complement is introduced in English by the conjunctions *than, as, as if, as though* or by the preposition *like,* all having direct semantic and functional equivalents in Ukrainian *(ніж, як, за, ще).* The adverbial modifier of comparison usually complements the noun or the adjective as a head component of the word-group. Cf.

"...my Tegumai, you're no better *than* my Taffy". (Kipling)	"...моя Тегумай, ти не краща, *ніж/за* мою Таффі."
"It (cave) isn't as *high as* the hills, really..." (Ibid.)	"Вона (землянка) насправді *не така висока,* як горби."

The preposition *like,* on the other hand, acquires a connective function joining the predicative part of the sentence and the adverbial complement of comparison, as it is also in Ukrainian. Cf.

The man spoke English *like an* *Oxford graduate. (Carnegie) Like* mistress, *like* maid. (Proverb)	Чоловік розмовляв по-англійськи, *як* оксфордський випускник. Яка пані, *така й служниця/Який* Сава, *така й* слава.

There exist some ambiguous conjunctive constructions in which the complement of comparison overlaps the adverbial meaning of degree. Cf.

Be as clear and short as *possible.* (Carnegie)	Будь чітким і виразним, *наскільки можливо.*

Transparent comparison is also expressed when objects and phenomena are compared by the conjunctions *as* and *than* in sentences of each of the contrasted languages. For example:

Her eyes are bright as *diamonds* and bluer *than* the *skies above.* (Kipling)	її очі яскраві, як *діаманти,* і блакит-ніші, *ніж небеса над нами.*
"If you even live to be *as old as I am,* you will find many things strange." (Hemingway)	"Якщо ти коли-небудь доживеш до *стількох років, як я,* ти зрозумієш, що багато що є дивним."

The Adverbial Complement of Degree/Обставина ступеня

This part of the sentence in both contrasted languages may complement any of its parts expressed by verbs, adjectives, adverbs and statives. The complement characterises actions, states and quality from the viewpoint of their intensity, hence the identifying questions: *how much? to what extent? — скільки? наскільки? до якого ступеня/ обсягу?*

The complement is mostly expressed in English and Ukrainian by common means, the main being the following:

a) by adverbs of degree:

I think he was *pretty* surprised to *то)*	Гадаю, він був *вельми (аж над-то)*
hear it from me. (Salinger)	здивований, почувши це від ме-не.
His life was *extremely* hard. (Carnegie)	Його життя було *дуже* важким.

b) by adverbial phrases of degree:

...I'll come *inmost mousy-quiet. (Kipling)*	Я ввійду *дуже тихо,* як мишка.
Lady Bobs looked so *pretty-prettier* asleep than awake. (Galsworthy)	Леді Бобз така *гарна* - до того ж *краща* сонною, *ніж розбудже-ною.*

c) The adverb of degree may sometimes complement (i.e. be an adjunct to) a noun. Cf. She is *quite a beauty.* (Sheridan) Вона *просто-таки красуня.* Or in Ukrainian: ...так *ще не зовсім біда.* (Кв.-Осно в'яненко) so it is *not quite* bad. He is already *quite a grown-up* (boy). Він уже *зовсім парубок I* cf. вона вже зовсім дівка.

The Adverbial Complement of Measure/Обставина міри

The meaning of measure in the contrasted languages is expressed by numerals with nouns denoting a unit of measure (length, weight, time,

temperature, etc.) as well as by some word-groups and adverbs expressing quantity. The adverbial complements follow statal verbs denoting various processes of measurement *(to measure, to weigh, to cost, to last, to walk, to run — міряти, важити, коштувати, бігти, йти, продовжуватися / тривати).*

1. Nouns of measure in word-groups of both languages are mostly preceded by numerals:

It *cost* about *ninety bucks,* and all he bought it for was *twenty.* (Salinger)	Річ *коштувала* близько *дев'яноста доларів,* а він купив її всього за *двадцять.*
In *three* steps the grandmother reached the door. (Donnell)	За *три* кроки бабуня дійшла до дверей.

2. No less frequent is the expression of the complement of measure by substantival word-groups of quantitative meaning, eg:

He stood still a *long while,* surveying the hillside. (London)	*Довгий час* він стояв нерухомо, оглядаючи горбистий краєвид.
He moved down the stream *a few steps.* (Ibid.)	Потім він пройшов *кілька кроків* уздовж струмка.

3. Adverbs denoting measure also express these adverbial comple ments: Measure *twice,* cut *once/score twice* before you cut *once.* (Prov erbs) He is *twice* the man. (Hornby) Similarly in Ukrainian: Лінивий *двічі* ходить, скупий *двічі* платить. (Прислів'я) Важить білуха *дуже багато,* стільки як слон. (Трублаїні)

The Detached Secondary Parts of the Sentence/ Відокремлені другорядні члени речення

Isomorphic in English and Ukrainian, like in all other Indo-European languages, is also the existence of detached secondary parts of the sentence, which may be unextended or extended. Their position in the sentence is not always fixed and they have a loose connection with their head components. Apart from their relatively free preposed or postposed

placement detached parts of the sentence in both contrasted languages have an implicit predicative meaning. Besides, these parts of the sentence can be only object (indirect), attribute and the adverbial parts. The most frequently detached in both contrasted languages are attributes (including appositional attributes).

The Detached Attribute/Відокремлене означення

This part of the sentence may refer in English and Ukrainian to nouns and to pronouns, usually expressing in both contrasted languages some additional adverbial meaning (cause, condition, comparison, concession, time, etc.). Cf.

Very white, he turned back to the назад balcony. (Galsworthy)	*Зовсім блідий,* він повернувся на балкон.

The subject "he" is not simply "white" (attribute) but "very white", i. e. white to some degree *(how white?).* Similarly in Ukrainian *(наскільки блідий - зовсім* блідий).

Sometimes Ukrainian equivalents of English loose attributes may have no synthetic agreement with their head components. Cf.

There were *two figures, middle-aged and young.* (Galsworthy)	Там було дві *постаті, середнього віку й молода/ й молодшого віку.*

Here exists no agreement between the Ukrainian head noun "постаті" and the adjunct component/detached apposition "середнього віку й молода".

A detached attribute can also be expressed by a prepositional noun: .

.his greatest joy in life had been найбільшою втіхою в його житті була

... his long summer *holidays, in Italy and around the Alps...* довга літня *відпустка — в Італію й Альпійські гори.*

The Detached Apposition/Відокремлена прикладка

Detached appositions identify or explain the head component which may be a noun or a pronoun:

...Minna found the *house, a pretty little cottage,* set back from the street. (Norris)	Мінна знайшла *будинок, невеличкий гарненький котедж,* захований подалі від вулиці.
In the east mountain *peaks-fingers снігу/*	А на сході гірські шпилі *..латки*
of snow - glittered above the mist. (Galsworthy)	*снігові пальці...* виблискували понад туманом.

Detached apposition in Ukrainian may often be joined with the subordinating part/noun with the help of the conjunctions *або, чи, тобто, як* and by specifying words as *як от, а саме, особливо, навіть, переважно, родом, на ймення,* на *прізвище,* etc.

The English specifiers are semantically similar: *quite, almost, namely, by name,* etc. Cf. Цей красень на ймення Олексій Розум. This handsome youngster Oleksiy Rozum. Той хлопчина, *родом із кріпаків, став генієм України.* That poor boy, *born a serf,* became a genius of all Ukrainians.

Ukrainian detached appositions can often be in partial agreement (in number only) with the head component, eg: Ось *софора, диковинне південне дерево.* (Гончар) Інженер-*синоптик Марина Гнидерево.* (Which weather forecasting engineer? What Maryna?)

The Detached Object/Відокремлений додаток

This detached part of the sentence is mostly expressed by prepositional nouns or pronouns, the main prepositions in English being: *except/ except for, with the exception of,* which lexically correspond to the Ukrainian prepositions *крім/окрім, опріч, за винятком, замість:*

Anybody else, *except Ackly,* would've той taken the goddam hint. (Salinger)	Будь-хто, *крім Еклі,* зрозумів би проклятий натяк.
Except for the handwriting, there зувало,	*Ніщо,* **крім почерку,** не виказувало,
wasn't the slightest trace of femininity.	що автор — жінка. (Wilson)
	Микола *замість панського лану* ви-
ну ви-	
	йшов на своє поле. (Н.-Левицький)

The detached parts of the sentence are structurally optional; they are always marked in Ukrainian like in English by commas or by dashes. Cf. Погляди всіх — *в тому числі й Баржаків* — самі собою зійшлись на

Килигейовій постаті... (Гончар) Mont Blanc appears - *still, snowy, and serene.* (Shelley) Then met his look, *tired, gloomy, desperate.* (D. Parker)

The Detached Adverbial Complements/ Ві-докремлені адвербіальні члени речення

Detached adverbial parts of the sentence are the adverbial complements of place, time, condition, concession, manner, comparison and attendant circumstances. The means of expressing these complements in English and Ukrainian are both isomorphic and allomorphic. Isomorphic is the expression of adverbial complements by means of an adverb, an adjective, a participle or a prepositional noun/pronoun. Allomorphic means include the gerund and the nominative absolute participial constructions in English and the diyepryslivnyk/the diyepryslivnyk construction, as well as the nominals governed by prepositions in Ukrainian. Equally common in both languages is the implicit predicative meaning of all detached secondary parts of the sentence and their distribution (in front position, in midposition and in postposition to the modified component).

Allomorphism is partly observed in the means of expressing some of the detached adverbial parts of the sentence in English and in Ukrainian. These means in English include the so-called secondary predication constructions joined by analytical connection, whereas in Ukrainian the nominal components are joined with the help of synthetic or analytic and synthetic means. The nomenclature and the syntactic/specifying functions of the detached adverbial parts of the sentence are common in English and Ukrainian, which can be seen from the table 28.

Table 28

Detached Adverbial Complements

Meaning	Way of Expressing the Detached Part of the Sentence	
	In English	In Ukrainian
Local	1 was sitting at a box table writing letters, *in a tent near the beach at Buna.* (F. Hardy)	Я сидів за ящиком-столом *(у шатрі коло пляжу в Буні)* й писав листи.

Meaning	Way of Expressing the Detached Part of the Sentence	
	In English	In Ukrainian
Tempo-ral	*Up to a year ago,* Richard Aber-nethie's will was very simple. (Christie)	Заповіт Річарда Абернеті *ще десь рік тому* був дуже простий.
Manner	*Slowly, very slowly,* she went. (Galsworthy)	*Повільно, дуже* повільно йшла вона.
Atten-dant Circum-stance	For five days he toiled... *going nowhere, seeing nobody, and eat-ing meagrely.* (London) She hesi-tated by the door-way, *her hand on the handle of the open door.* (Maurier)	Упродовж п'яти днів він важко працював, *нікуди не виходячи, ні з ким не зустрічаючись, впроголодь.* Вона, *вже взявшись за ручку про-чинених дверей,* раптом завагалася.
Cause/ Reason	*For some reason,* she seemed to hate first base... *"Because of my age,* — I could not be persecuted". (Vonnegut)	*З якихось причин,* як видно, вона не вподобала першу базу... *"Через моє неповноліття...* мене не змогли судити."
Condi-tion	If *necessary,* she must see Mr. Bridgenorth. (Galsworthy) *"Dead,* he would have been safe". (Von-negut)	*Якщо треба,* вона муситиме зайти до Бріджнорта. "Мертвий — він був би у повній безпеці»...
Measure and Degree	"He realised that much, *no more.* (F. Hardy) It (car) was coming fast, *more than fifty miles an hour...* (Caldwell)	Це ще він розумів, *але не більше.* Автомобіль їхав швидко, *більш ніж п'ятдесят миль за годину...*
Conces-sion	It was a fine calm day, *though very cold...* (Bronte) *With all her faults,* there was nobody like Edee... (Priestley)	Був гарний спокійний день, *хоч і дуже холодний... Попри всі її недо-ліки,* жодна інша не могла зрівняти-ся з Еді...

Close to detached parts of the sentence in both languages are speci-fying parts (уточнюючі відокремлені члени речення). They are used postposed to the ordinary parts of the sentence to specify their meaning. They are joined to their preceding components either asyn-detically) or syndetically, with the help of conjunctions or connective words, the latter being less frequent. Most specifying parts of the sen-tence are of adverbial meaning. Cf.

He liked people, *especially children.* Він любив людей, (a) *особливо дітей/* (Maugham)   Він любив людей, а *надто* дітей.

| It all happened many years ago, *namely in 1832.* (Aldiss) She said it here — *in the room.* (Christie) | Це трапилося багато років тому, а *саме — 1832 року.* Він це сказав тут, у *цій кімнаті.* Це він сказав тут*, у цій кімнаті.* Вона була високою дівчиною, *такою заввишки, як він.* |
| She was a tall girl, as *tall as himself.* (Munro) | |

Typology of the Homogeneous Parts of the Sentence

Homogeneous parts of the sentence in English and Ukrainian are actually not only of identical functions, but also of identical structure and nomenclature. Hence, homogeneous may be in the sentence:

1. Co-ordinate Subjects (extended or unextended):

| *Fields, trees, hedges* streamed by. (Mansfield) There were only *two small rooms,* a *tiny kitchen and a lean...* (Maugham) | Пролітали *поля, дерева, живоплоти. Дві кімнатки, малесенька кухня* та *лавіс* — ото було й усе... |

2. Co-ordinate Homogeneous Predicates. These may also be simple, expanded or extended by their structure. Eg:

| In his small room Martin *lived, slept, studied, wrote* and *kept house.* (London) | У своїй кімнатці Мартін *жив, спав, студіював, писав* і *господарював.* |

Less co-occurrent are homogeneous phrasal predicates, like *He gave his consent* and *took leave.* (Cf. in Ukrainian: Він *дав згоду* і *брав участь* у грі.)

Common in both contrasted languages are homogeneous parts in compound verbal and compound nominal predicates (i. e. predicatives):

| The dead fingers could *neither touch nor clutch.* (London) We are *foolish and sentimental and melodramatic* at twenty-five... (Maugham) | Замерзлі пальці *не могли ні відчути, ні взяти* (сірника). У двадцять п'ять років ми ще є *нерозумні, сентиментальні й афективні...* |

380

When used without the linking verb (є), the homogenous predicatives in the Ukrainian sentence above turn into homogeneous simple nominal predicates (ми нерозумні, сентиментальні, афективні...).

3. Homogeneous Co-ordinate Objects. These parts of the sen tence may be expressed by different parts of speech functioning as nomi nals. Homogeneous objects may also be extended or expanded and prep ositional:

...I remember *Tegumai Bopsulai,* and *Taffinwi Metallumai and Teshumai* Tewindrow, her Mummy, *and all the days gone by.* (Kipling)	Я пам'ятаю *Теґумая Бопсулая, і Таффінваю Металумаю,* і Тешумаю Тевіндрову, її матір, *і всі минулі літа.*

Pertaining to English only, however, is the expression of homogeneous objects by gerunds which have correspondingly infinitival or substantival equivalents for their substitutes in Ukrainian. Cf.

We avoid *remembering* and *mentioning* her name now. (Maugham) He insisted on coming and looking about the garden. (Wain)	Ми уникаємо *згадувати* й *вимовляти її* ім'я зараз. Він наполягав на приїзді й обшукові всього саду.

4. Co-ordinate Homogeneous Attributes. Isomorphism in the func tioning of homogeneous attributive adjuncts manifests itself in the distri bution (preposed or postposed) and in structural forms (extended, unex tended, prepositional) of this part of the sentence. Allomorphic, however, is their connection with the head components, mainly synthetic or analyt ical and synthetic in Ukrainian, and naturally analytical (syndetic or asyn detic) in English. Cf.

"Why, *the whole dear, kind, nice, quiet tribe* is here, Tuffy. (Kipling)	Ну, Таффі, *тут зібралося всеньке clean, дороге, добре, гарне, чисте, спокійне плем'я.*

5. Homogeneous Co-ordinate Adverbial Modifiers. The homo geneous adverbial modifiers are characterised by isomorphism in their functions and are often identical in the grammatical means and ways of

381

their expression. The most frequently occurring are the homogeneous adverbial parts of the sentence expressing the meaning following: a) time and frequency:

A great many strangers come to *Capri for a few days, or for a few weeks...* (Maugham)	Багато іноземців приїжджають на Капрі *на кілька днів чи на кілька тижнів...*

b) place and direction:

We shall meet *here,* or *in the village.* (Ibid.)	Ми зустрінемося *тут* чи *в селі*
He moved out *into the sunshine and up to the road.* (Galsworthy)	Він вийшов *на сонце* і *попрямував до шляху.*

c) manner or attendant circumstances:

I behaved *very shamefully, very ungenerously, very ungratefully* to her... (Bronte)	Я поводився з нею *надто негідно, дуже нешляхетно, дуже невдячно...*
They went *side by side, hand in hand, silently...* (Galsworthy)	Вони йшли *поруч, рука в руці,* не розмовляючи...

d) purpose:

I shall come *to see* you and *to help* you. (Maugham)	Я прийду, щоб *побачити вас* і *допомогти вам.*
...she was going to the station with him, to *drive the car back.* (Galsworthy)	...вона їхала з ним до станції, щоб *відвести назад машину. . .*

e) result:

She was too weak *to stand up* and to go there. (Ibid.)	Вона була занадто слабка, *щоб устати* й *підійти* туди.
I was too much disturbed to go to bed myself. (Snow)	Я був так стурбований, що й сам не міг іти спати.

Grammatically Independent Elements in the Sentence

The existence of grammatically independent elements in the sentence is one more proof of isomorphism in the systemic organisation of the main syntactic units in the contrasted languages. Independent elements in English and Ukrainian are represented by interjections, words/phrases of direct address, parenthetic words and inserted words or sentences. Each of the elements serves to express corresponding attitudes of the speaker towards the content of the utterance.

1. Elements of Direct Address/Прямі звертання. These are single words or word-groups denoting a person or non-person to whom the rest of the sentence is addressed. They may occupy the initial, the mid- or the closing position in the sentence/utterance:

"Tom!" — No answer. (Twain) "Well, *Miss Phillips,* fat coming off nicely?" (Maugham) "Go and eat, *Dave ".* (Caldwell)

"Томе!" — Ані звука. "Ну як, *міс Філінс,* жирок потрошку сходить?" "Піди і поїж *сам, Дейве".*

Elements of direct address in Ukrainian are mostly marked by a vocative case inflexion (cf. *Томе, Дейве).* Though some nouns expressing the vocative case relation do not have (like in English) a morphological expression of it (cf. *міс Філінс, небо, слово).*

Words of direct address are often preceded in English and Ukrainian by emphatic particles or emotives. Cf.

"Well, Mr. Eustace", she said (E. M. Foster) "Oh, *Christ,* don't be magnanimous." (Maugham)

"Ну, пане Юстасе", — сказала вона. — О, Христосе, не будь таким великодушним!"

2. Parenthetic and Inserted Elements of the Sentence/Вставні та вставлені елементи речення. Parenthetic elements in sentences/clauses of the contrasted languages have identical structural forms (word, word-group, sentence) and are used to perform one of the following two main functions in the sentence: a) the modal function (when expressing the hypothetical or reported indirect modality); b) the subjective and evaluative function [32, 1972, 227]. Hypothetical modality is mostly expressed in English and Ukrainian with the help of modal words/ phrases and sentences. The most often used are like the following:

certainly, maybe, most likely, in all probability, it seems, perhaps, possibly, probably, no doubt, surely, undoubtedly, etc.

безсумнівно, видно, мабуть, звичайно, можна сказати, здається, напевне, є надія, як здається, треба гадати.

Parenthetic elements in English and Ukrainian may refer to the sentence as a whole or to a secondary part of it. They may occupy the initial, the mid- or the closing position in the sentence utterance too:

"Perhaps, that's safest". (Kipling) "... they'll, *probably,* come through it all right". "Yes, *certainly,* they'll fly". (Hemingway)	*Мабуть,* так найпевніше. "...вони, *може,* якось переживуть (обстріл)." "Так, вони (голуби) *обов'язково* повилітають".

The parenthetic elements in the sentences above have no syntactic ties with any part of these sentences. Characteristic of both languages is also the employment of parenthetic words, phrases and sentences to express the general assessment of the action or fact on the part of the speaker. These words/phrases are the following:

definitely, in fact, surely, it is natural, truth to tell, without doubt, really, etc. *Surely, I* can act anything. (Maugham) He underestimated, *no doubt,* the change in the spirit of the age. (Galsworthy)	безумовно, без сумніву, певна річ, зрозуміло, правду казати, природно, як відомо, як кажуть... *Звичайно,* я можу зіграти будь-яку роль. Він недооцінив, *безсумнівно/ без сумніву,* зміни в настроях нашої доби.

Parenthetic words/phrases and sentences are used in the contrasted languages to express subjective and evaluative modality. They help convey indirectly the speaker's attitude toward some fact, event or information. These parenthetic expressions are as follows:

in my/his opinion, they say, to my judgement, I should say/should think. Cf. *In my opinion,* the scheme is unsound. (Hornby) *To say the least,* Mrs Sayther's career in Dawson was meteoric. (London)	на мою/його думку, кажуть/як кажуть, я б сказав, смію сказати/гадати. *На мою думку,* проект незадовільний. *Коротко кажучи,* кар'єра місіс Сейтер у Доусоні була яскрава і недовговічна.

Isomorphic by their linguistic nature and especially by their structural form are also *inserted elements* in sentences of the contrasted languages.

They give some additional information about a part of the sentence/its general content. Insertions are marked by commas, dashes, or brackets (they are used only in the mid- or closing position of the sentence). Cf. Mr. Quest, *once again interrupted,* turned his darkly irritable eyes on him.

(D. Lessing) It was — still is — an admirable way of inducing counter-irritation. (Cronin)

Similarly in Ukrainian: А це вміння *(розмовляти і слухати)* дуже важливе для письменника. (Рильський). А Ярема — *страшно глянути — по три, по чотири так і кладе. (Т. Шевченко)* Людині суджено не рухатись по колу. *(Це, зрештою, й гаразд).* (Рильський)

Equally common in both contrasted languages is the existence of inserted sentences. Cf. "You do not object*, I hope,* Elena?" (Christie) "I thought this" — *he indicated the X-ray films* — "would give some extra confirmation". (Hailey) Cat counted the Dog's teeth *(and they looked very pointed)* and he said... (Kipling) Or in Ukrainian: Там батько, плачучи з дітьми *(а ми малі були і голі),* не витерпів лихої долі... (Т. Шевченко) Ще в сіянку випали дощі, а це — *що вже година стоїть* — тихо, сонячно. (Головко) Нарешті брат Іван його переконав (Чимало ж зусиль ця справа коштувала!) (Рильський)

Non-Segmentable Sentences in English and Ukrainian

The system of simple sentences in the contrasted languages is formed by two common opposite poles. The first of them is represented by segmentable sentences and the second by simple non-segmentable sentences. The latter, consisting of a particle/a combination of particles, a modal word/modal phrase, an interjection/a group of interjections, can not be segmented into smaller syntactic units, i. e. parts of the sentence. Nonsegmentable sentences in English and Ukrainian may contain some rather vague ties with the antecedent sentence. They include affirmative, negative, declarative, interrogative and incentive non-segmentable sentences. Among them there are emotionally coloured (exclamatory) and emotionally neutral (non-exclamatory) non-segmentable simple sentences.

1. Affirmative non-segmentable sentences in the contrasted languages serve to express the approval of the content in the antecedent sentence. Cf.

"Has she three children then?" — *"Yes."* (Maugham) "You can see even better from here." — *"All right. "* (Hemingway)	"У неї, отже, троє дітей?" — *"Так".* "Звідси тобі навіть краще буде видно". — *"Гаразд ".*

Simple affirmative non-segmentable sentences may often be emphasised by interjections or through doubling of a particle. Cf.

"That is in the United States?" *"Yes. Oh yes. "* (Greene) "Do you love me?" *"Uh, huh. "* (Hemingway)	"Тобто в Сполучених Штатах?" *"Так. Саме так /о, так. "* "Ти мене любиш?" — *"У-гу. "*

2. Negative non-segmentable sentences serve to express disagreement with the statement/suggestion contained in the antecedent sentence. An ordinary /non-emphatic negation is usually expressed in English through the pronominal particle *"no "* and in Ukrainian — through the particle *"ні":*

"Scared of the dark, too, kid?" 'Wo. "(Steinbeck) "What'd he cop, malaria?" -'*No. "* (F. Hardy)	"Боїшся теж темноти, хлопче?" - Ні. "У нього що - ревматизм?" Ні "Що він підхопив — малярію?" - Ні. ("Що в нього - малярія?") - Ні.

Emphatic negative meanings in this type of sentences are often expressed in English through doubling of the pronominal particle *"no "* and through the phrase negation *not at all,* whereas in Ukrainian apart from "ні" some other negative composite particles are used *(та ні, зовсім ні, де там — ні):*

"I'm just terrible to him". "Oh, *no, no, no...* "(Parker) "Are you very angry with me?" "No. *Not at all. "* (Maugham)	"Я просто жахлива з ним". *"Та ні, ні, ні. "* "Ти дуже сердишся на мене?" *"Ні, анітрохи. "*

Non-segmentable may be in English and Ukrainian infinite rows of negative particles preceding or following a noun, as in the humorous

English song about John: "Will you kiss me? *Yes or no? " "Oh, no, John, no, John, no, John, no. "*

3. Interrogative non-segmentable sentences are formed by the particle *"yes "* (less often *"no")* and some interjections:

"I got a cable this morning from my wife." — *"Yes?"* (Greene) "I congratulate you." — *"Eh?"* (Christie)

"Мені телефонувала сьогодні вранці дружина."- *"Так?"* "Поздоровляю вас." — *"Га?"*

"Monsieur would not let me replace the top." — *"No?"* (Hemingway) "А курей на буряки вивозили?" — "Ні." *? "Ні? "* (Вишня)

4. Non-segmentable sentences are often used to express some *modal meanings* (certainty, one's will, consent, warning, etc.):

"You can have it tonight." *"Right?"* (Wilson) "Ole Anderson?" — *"Sure. "* (Hemingway) -

"Можеш сьогодні це мати". *"Справді? /Невже? "* "Оле Андерсон?" — *"Авжеж. "*

Elements of Direct Address in English and Ukrainian

Direct address in the contrasted languages belongs to isomorphic syntactic phenomena. It may have the structure of a word, word-group or a sentence. Direct address is used in both contrasted languages, with the aim of drawing attention of the reader or listener to some information, object or person. For example, in English.

Men of England, heirs of glory. Люди Англії, спадкоємці слави. Heroes of unwritten story... (Shelley) Герої ще не написаної історії. As can be noticed the English word-group of direct address expressing the vocative case relation do not have it expressed synthetically as it is in Ukrainian: Люди Англії, спадкоємці слави... The vocative case in Ukrainian is mostly an explicit form of expressing one's address to any notional part of speech. Cf. Думи мої, думи мої, Лихо мені з вами! (Т. Шевченко) or Донеччино моя, моя ти Батьківщино... (Сосюра) Україно, ти для мене диво! Україно! Ти моя молитва! Ти моя розлуко вікова! (Симоненко) Чого ти, сину, став такий смутний! (Н. Левиць-

387

кий) Present-day English has no vocative case inflexion to express direct address which is to be conveyed in Ukrainian:

"Good night, Mary dear. Good night, Bob" (F. King)

"На добраніч, дорога Мері. На добраніч, Бобе."

The expression of direct address in Ukrainian may sometimes be only partial. It happens, when the addressee noun is indeclinable in Ukrainian. For example:

"Are you married, Mr Poirot?" (Christie) "Ви одружений, пане Пуаро?"

Words of address in both languages can sometimes form synonymic strings which have equivalents in either of them. For example: **Світе милий, краю милий, моя Україно!** (Т. Шевченко) or: **Сини мої, Орли мої! Летіть в Україну!** (Ibid.) Their English semantic equivalents will have, of course, no vocative case explicit distinctions, though their semantic structure will remain unchanged: O my still world, my homeland dear, My sons, my brave eagles! Fly to my beloved Ukraine!

The addressee syntagmemes/elements are also endowed with predication, the minimal degree of which is pertained to proper names. Cf.:

"Dear Sally, what I like about you is your beautiful honesty." (Jessing)

"Дорога Саллі, що мені найбільше подобається в тобі, то це твоя прекрасна чесність."

Direct addresses are often used in both languages to convey modality and emotions: disgust, dissatisfaction, joy, sorrow, fright, prohibition and others. Cf. "Thanks, Mike, thanks!" "Дякую Майку, дякую!" (Ibid.) "Oh, Guy, don't blame me. It really is not my fault." (Maugham) "Ой, Гаю, не вини мене. Тут я і справді не винна."

TYPOLOGY OF THE COMPOSITE SENTENCE IN THE CONTRASTED LANGUAGES

A composite sentence in English and Ukrainian, like in all other languages, contains two or more primary predication centres mostly repre-

sented by as many corresponding clauses. The structural types of the composite sentence are identified on the ground of the syntactic reflection (and connection) of its predicate parts which are not always distinctly identified. Thus, common in the syntactic systems of English and Ukrainian are sentences that are semantically intermediate between simple extended on the one hand and composite sentences on the other. These are the so-called semi-compound and semi-complex sentences. For example, the sentence "One does not give up a god easily and so with White Fang." (London) can not be treated as a simple extended one. Neither can it be identified as a composite sentence since the second part in it (and "so with White Fang") contains no subject and no predicate and wholly depends on the predicative centre of the first clause. Though the implicitly perceivable subject is the demonstrative pronoun "it" which logically requires the predicate verb "be". Cf. *One does not give up a god easily, and so* (it is/or was) *with White Fang* in Ukrainian equivalents are as follows:

1) Не так легко відмовитися від свого від власника — бога, *саме так і в* Білозубця.	2) Не так легко відмовитися від свого власника — бога, *саме так (було це) і Білозубцеві.*

Similarly with English extended sentences containing the secondary predication constructions or complexes, as they are traditionally called, that represent semi-complex sentences as well. They mostly correspond to Ukrainian complex sentences. Cf. White Fang *felt fear mounting in him again.* (London) Білозубець відчув, що "ним опановує страх" (the construction "fear mounting in him" becomes an object clause: White Fang felt */how?/that fear was mounting in him).*

Present-day Ukrainian, as has been pointed out on the foregoing pages, has only some similar constructions of this nature. Cf. 1) Він застав двері зачиненими. == Він застав двері (вони були) зачиненими. 2) Санітари знайшли *вояка пораненим.* == ... (він був) пораненим.

The absence of almost all the secondary predication constructions in Ukrainian makes it impossible to obtain direct correlative transforms of some simple and composite sentences. Hence, English compound sen-

tences may have complex sentences for their equivalents in Ukrainian. Cf.

He leaned far out of the window and i	Він висунувся далеко з вікна
he saw *the first light spread.* (Galsworthy)	помітив, *що починають пробиватися перші промені.*

Because of the objective with the infinitive construction in the second/succeeding English clause of the compound sentence above the Ukrainian equivalent of it can be only an object subordinate clause.

There are, however, many common features in the system of the composite sentence of English and Ukrainian. One of them is the semantic ambiguity of some compound sentences that have the implicit meaning of complex sentences, which will be exemplified on the forthcoming pages. For example, the compound sentence "It (the play) stinks, but I'm Benedict Arnold" (Salinger) has an implicit concessive meaning of "Though the play stinks, I'm Benedict Arnold" (i. e., I'll act the part of Benedict Arnold in it). Similarly in Ukrainian: "П'єса препогана, але ж я граю Бенедикта Арнольда", і. е. Хоч/незважаючи на те, що п'єса препогана, але я погодився грати в ній головну роль..." Nevertheless there is much common in the nature and structure of the composite sentence in the syntactic systems of English and Ukrainian. Isomorphism is observed first of all in the nomenclature of the Major Syntax units represented by the compound and complex sentences.

Typology of the Compound Sentence

Clauses in compound sentences of the contrasted languages are mostly joined by means of co-ordinate conjunctions which provide parataxal relations between them. Conjunctions joining clauses in compound sentences of the contrasted languages are practically of the same semantic nature: copulative, adversative, and causal/or (in English only). Equally common in the contrasted languages are various connectives that join coordinate clauses. These are as follows: *therefore, consequently, accordingly, then, hence, so, while, as well as* and some explanatory connective words *(that is to say, such as, like, let me say* and others),

390

which have corresponding functional (and semantic) equivalents in Ukrainian *(отже, та,* а *саме, звідси, тобто, тоді, як-то, так-як, ...так, скажімо, то...то).*

Co-ordinate conjunctions, as well as various connectives, realise their functional and semantic meaning in structurally and semantically identical English and Ukrainian compound sentences. This is to be explained by the existence of common relations that are created between the coordinate clauses of compound sentences and to a large degree by the semantic meanings of conjunctions/connectives that join these clauses.

As a result, isomorphism, if not exact likeness, is observed in the nature of some subtypes of English and Ukrainian compound sentences. These isomorphic features find their expressions in the existence of the following subtypes of them:

1. Compound Sentences with Free/Neutral Interrelations between Their Clauses

Co-ordinated clauses of this subtype of compound sentences change their position without effecting in any way their semantic structure or the communicative aim of the expression. Cf. *It was like singing and it wasn't like singing.* (Faulkner) When transformed with the help of changing the position of clauses into *"It wasn't like singing and it was like singing"* the content of the sentence does not change, though the order of actions becomes reverse. Similarly in the following *sentence: I smiled and he smiled.* (Dreiser) which may be transformed into *"He smiled and I smiled. "* Though the sequence (the order) of the events is changed, the general content of the sentence is not changed on the whole. This kind of transformation can be performed on the Ukrainian variants of the two sentences. Cf. *Це було не схоже на спів і це було схоже на спів. Я засміявся і він засміявся.* = Він засміявся і я засміявся.

In compound sentences consisting of more than two semantically neutral clauses, the first clause may not always change its place with other clauses. The restriction in transformation through the change of place is due to the semantic interrelation existing between the main clause and the other clauses of the compound sentence. Cf. *They were all from Milan, 1) and one of them was to be a lawyer, 2) and one was*

391

to be a painter, 3) and one had intended to be a soldier. (Hemingway) In this sentence the second and the third clauses can change their place with the preceding or with the succeeding clause without changing in any noticeable way the sense and the structure of the composite sentence as a whole. Cf. They were all from Milan 1) and one of them was to be a lawyer, 2) and one of them was to be a painter. Or: They were all from Milan, 2) and one of them was to be a painter, 1) and one of them was to be a lawyer, 3) and one had intended to be a soldier. The Ukrainian variant of this sentence undergoes similar transformation through the change of place of the same neutral clauses. Cf. Вони всі троє були з Мілана, 2) і один з них мав був стати художником, 3) один мав колись намір стати військовим, I) а один мав був стати правником. Transformations/transpositions of the kind are not always possible, however, in compound sentences whose clauses in the contrasted languages are joined with the help of some other copulative conjunctions. Cf.

The hall was not dark, *nor* was it lit... (Bronte)	Передпокій не був темний, як не був він і освітлений.

Nevertheless, a transformation through the change of position of clauses is not excluded in compound sentences with the conjunction "as" having "як" for its functional and semantic equivalent in Ukrainian. Cf.

He had never quite accepted it, *as* he had never accepted other aspects of his life. (Maltz)	Він ніколи не схвалював цієї, *як* не схвалював він і інших сторін свого життя.

Cf. He had never accepted other aspects of his life, as he had never accepted it. Similarly in Ukrainian: Він ніколи не схвалював інших сторін свого життя, як не схвалював він і цієї.

2. Compound Sentences with Adversative Interrelations between Their Clauses

These relations are formed in English by the conjunctions *but, still,* and *yet,* whose equivalents in Ukrainian are *а, але, проте, та, однак:*

Two of the ways were alongside canals, *but* they were long. (Hemingway)	Два шляхи вели вздовж каналів, *але* вони були довшими.
Now and then it was hidden by the mist, *yet* it always came out bright again. (O'Dell)	Часом гору ховав туман, *та* вона знову виринала в яскравих променях сонця.

This type of the compound sentence in English and Ukrainian consists of clauses whose position is fixed. The second clauses in such compound sentences may be introduced by different conjunctions or connectors, and they may also be connected asyndetically. Whatever the means of connection, the main factors predetermining the fixed placement of most clauses in the contrasted languages are common. They are as follows: 1) the semantic dependence of the second clause on the action/ event in the main ("principal") clause; 2) the nature and meaning (structure) of the conjunction/connective word; 3) the semantic predetermining of the syndetically or asyndetically joined second/third clauses; 4) the existence of other than the main conjunction; 5) the existence of extension or expansion of component clauses through appending word-combinations or regular clauses. The realisation of each of the above-mentioned factors can be observed in some common subtypes of compound sentences, the main groups of which in the contrasted languages are as follows:

A. Compound Sentences with Anaphoric Pronouns/ Складносурядні речення з анафоричними займенниками

The succeeding (second) clause joined to the preceding clause by the copulative conjunction "and" may depend semantically on a noun or any other notional word/part of the sentence performing some function in the first clause. This subtype of compound sentences is common in the contrasted languages; it has mostly equivalent structure forms of the same sentences:

We quarrel and *that* makes the time pass. (Hemingway)	Ми гиркаємося, і *це коротає* наш час.

You kept from thinking and it was all marvellous. (Ibid.)	Ти переставав задумуватись, і *це* було чудово.

The anaphoric pronoun may be located at some distance from the antecedent noun, eg:

He had *no prospects* and he knew *that.* (M. Quin)	Він не мав *жодних перспектив* і він знав *це.*

Anaphoric may also be a predicative construction with a pronoun **it** as the subject of the clause:

In her dream she was *at the house on Long Island* and *it was night* before her daughter's debut. (Hemingway)	Їй снилася домівка на Лонг-Айленді, і *ніби то був вечір* перед доччиним дебютом.

Here the anaphoric pronoun *it* in the second clause is enclosed in the predicative word-group *it was night* which functions as a single anaphoric pronoun both in English and in Ukrainian (cf. *то був вечір перед...* дебютом).

The co-occurrence of compound sentences with anaphoric pronouns (word-groups with pronouns) is considerably high in English and Ukrainian.

B. **Compound Sentences with Disjunctive Interrelations Between Clauses/ Складносурядні речення з роз'єднальними сполучниками**

Disjunctive relations are expressed in English through the conjunctions *or, either ... or* whose semantic and partly structural equivalents in Ukrainian are *або, або...або, чи...чи, чи то...чи то, не то...не то.* Cf.

He can try for the ditch again *or* he can dodge around the house. (P. Grimm) ...I must weep *or else* my heart will burst. (Byron)	Він може знову сховатися в рові, *а чи* хитро крутне за будинок. ...*Я* плакати мушу, *а то* в мене серце розірветься.

Note. Some repeating conjunctions of the group are often used to express co-ordinate actions excluding, in turn, each others. As a result, clauses in such sentences may sometimes change their position without losing their disjunctive interrelation, eg: Чи то було сьогодні, чи нічого не було? (Коцюбинський) Чи нічого не було, чи то було сьогодні? Or in English: Either it was today or it was nothing? Either it was nothing, or it was today?

C. Compound Sentences with Causative and Consecutive In terrelations between Clauses/Складносурядні речення з причин но-наслідковими відношеннями між складовими (підрядни ми) реченнями в українських відповідниках.

The interrelations of cause and consequence are expressed through the causative and co-ordinate conjunction/or which has corresponding subordinate conjunctions in Ukrainian *(бо, тим-то, оскільки)*:

But the scholarship would help him a great deal/or they were not rich people. (Hughes)	Зате стипендія дуже допомогла б йому, *адже/тому що* вони були не з багатіїв.
And he discharged me first *for my* po- hair was white. (Reed)	І він звільнив мене першим з боти, *оскільки/бо я* вже був сивий.

D. Compound Sentences with Determining Clauses/Склад но-сурядні речення з детермінованими складовими

The existence of compound sentences whose clauses are joined by different conjunctions and connectives which express determining is a testimony of some features being common in composite sentences of parataxal and hypotaxal ways of joining their clauses. Determining clauses in English and Ukrainian have more or less clear reference to some adverbial meaning — temporal, causal, resultative, concessive, etc. which may be more or less clearly expressed in the second or third clauses. Cf. 1) The tracks ground up and away heading out of it all *and* the peasants plodded in ankle deep dust. (Hemingway) 2) Larry puffed at his pipe *and* Suzanne waited for him to go. (Maugham)

The second clauses in both compound sentences can change their place without any harm to their general content. Cf. The peasants plodded in ankle deep dust *and the trucks ground up and away heading out of it all*. Or in the second sentence: Suzanne waited for him to go and *Larry puffed at his pipe*. This same transposition can be performed on the Ukrainian variants of both sentences. Cf. 1) Вантажні машини, буксуючи, обганяли всіх, а селяни брели по кісточки в пилюці. Or: Селяни брели по кісточки в пилюці, а вантажні машини обганяли всіх. 2) Лері попихкував люльку, а Сузанна чекала на нього. — Сузанна чекала на нього, а Лері попихкував люльку.

Apart from temporal determining meanings, copulated clauses may express additional support or justification of the action in the main clause, eg:

I got the place with Harry and I like Burt fine. (Anderson) But after all I had to work and there was no work to be got. (Ibid.)	Я працюватиму разом з Гаррі та ще я люблю там Берт. Зрештою, я мусив стати до роботи, а роботи не можна було ніде знайти.

The place of the second clause ("and I like Burt fine") in the first sentence is fixed, because it presents an additional confirmation of the action in the first clause ("But I got a place with Harry"). If the place of clauses were changed, it would disrupt the (logic the content) of the sentence as a whole. Cf. *I like Burt fine and I got the place with Harry...

No change of place/transposition of clauses *is* ever possible in the second sentence either. This is because of the justification contained in the second clause ("and there was no work to be got") which, when moved to the closing position, would make the sentence ungrammatical. "There was no other work to be got *(and) / but* after all I had to work". Beside that, the meaning of the conjunction "and" in Ukrainian is adversative (a), which is emphasised by the introductory "but" (after all).

The bulk of copulative clauses in English and Ukrainian, however have an adverbial implicit (sometimes almost explicit) determining meaning. These clauses are joined by different conjunctions which may often be treated as regular connectives that introduce subordinate clauses. The adverbial implicit meaning in compound sentences of this subtype

may be single, i.e. pure (those of time, cause, purpose, result, concession) or combined with other adverbial relations (such as cause and result, cause and consequence, time and result, time and cause, etc.)

Among the single/simple determining adverbial relations expressed by the second clauses, joined by copulative conjunctions, the following are most occurrent:

1. *The Relation of Result /Наслідкові відношення:*

a) Still life's life, *and we* have to work through it and ourselves somehow. (Dreiser) b) She was leaning back on the chair *and* the fire light shone on her... face. (Hemingway)

Однак життя є життя, *і* ми маємо зрештою якось переборювати і його, і себе. Вона прихилилася спиною до крісла і полум'я освітило її приємне обличчя.

The action of the verb-predicate in each second clause of the above-given compound sentences results from the action of the corresponding main clause. Thus, "We have to work through it and ourselves" as a result of the fact that "life's life" (a sentence), whereas the fire light could shine "on her pleasantly lined face" as a result of her "leaning back on the chair" in the main clause of the sentence.

2. *Cause or Causal Relations/Причину чи причинні відношення:*

He didn't have any money *and he* was *ashamed.* (Quin) It was a Saturday and *the shop was full...* (R. Lardner)

Він був зовсім без грошей, *і йому було соромно.* Була одна із звичайних субот, і крамниця *була повна людей...*

Cf "he was ashamed" because he had no money, "the shop was full" because it was the weekend ("a Saturday").

3. *Time or Temporal Relations/Час або часові відношення:*

The dusk was blue *and* the birds were flying in it. (M. Le. Sueur) It was Easter Sunday *and* the Fascists were advancing toward the Ebro. (Hemingway)

Сутінки стали синіми *і* в них пролі'тали птахи. Була великодня неділя, *і* фашисти просувалися/рвалися до річки Ебро.

397

Temporal relations in both these sentences can be identified by means of the corresponding questions: 1) When were the birds flying? — When it was dusk. 2) When were the Fascists advancing toward the Erbo? — On Easter Sunday.

Among the combined adverbial relations which can often be expressed by compound sentences or rather by second clauses in them, commonly observed in the contrasted languages are the following:

1. *The Relations of Cause and Consequence/Причинно-наслід-кові відношення:*

The fire in the stove had gone out *and* he undressed in the cold. (Anderson)	Вогонь у пічці потух, і він роздягався у холоді.
Money was by no means plentiful *and* in consequence there was endless borrowing and "paying up" among them. (Dreiser)	Грошей рідко коли вистачало і внаслідок цього серед них панували постійні позичання й "розплануван-ня/віддавання".

The relation of cause and consequence can easily be established in any of the above-given sentences with the help of questions to the predicate of the second clauses. Cf. Why did he undress in the cold? The answer is given in the main clause: because "The fire in the stove had gone out".

2. *The Relations of Time and Consequence (Result)/Часово-наслідкові відношення:*

Like all other determining adverbial relations, temporal and consequence / resultative meanings in the contrasted languages are created by the predicate/verb in the main clause:

Father woke up and it was time for breakfast. (Faulkner) Then Jason got smoke in his eye, and he began to cry. (Ibid.)	Батько прокинувся, і (отож) був час снідати. Тоді у вічі Джейсонові зайшов дим, і він розплакався.

The partaking of food, or rather the breakfast of the family, becomes possible in the first sentence as a result of "Father's waking up". In other words, the action in the second clause results from the action in the

398

dominant clause (father's waking up). This action is the consequence of the action performed in the first clause. Or in the second clause of the second sentence: "he began to cry" in consequence of the action performed in the clause "Jason got smoke in his eyes".

3. *The Relation of Time and Concession /Часово-допустові від-ношення:*

The interrelations existing between the action in the semantically dominant clause and in the succeeding clause may be that of time and concession. Cf. It was getting dark in the swamps, and he had ten miles to go. (Caldwell) На болота спадала ніч, а йому ще було йти десять миль.

The concessive adverbial meaning/determination of the second clause becomes explicit when the sentence is transformed: "It was getting dark in the swamps" despite that "he had ten miles to go". In Ukrainian: "На болота спадала ніч, а (хоч) йому ще треба було йти десять миль".

English and Ukrainian co-ordinate clauses may be joined by connective words, whose meaning is close to that of the copulative conjunction. The most often used connectives of this group are *so, while, then, hence, only, whereas,* corresponding to Ukrainian *тож, як /і, тимчасом, тоді, тільки.*

When joined by these connectives, the clauses acquire some additional implicit meaning (causal, resultative, etc.).

He couldn't figure things fast, so ки	Він не міг схоплювати чужі дум-
he had figured them slow. (Bennett) по-	швидко, тож (і) він схоплював їх
	вільно.

The connective "so" introduces the clause of causal and resultative meaning being at the same time lexically close to the conjunction *"and"*. So it is with some other English connectives of co-ordinate clauses:

He was in leash to the French school... only I did not know it at the time. (Dreiser)	Він був пов'язаний з цією фран-цузькою школою... тільки я не знав тоді цього.

The meaning of *"only"* in this sentence is close to the adversative meaning of the Ukrainian conjunctions *а, але* (only I did not know it at

the time" — тільки/але я не знав тоді про це). Such clauses are intermediary between copulative and adversative, they have the meaning of both of them. Their place in the sentence is fixed in both languages.

Close to the copulative conjunction *"and"* are also some other determining connectives in both languages. For example, *while:*

A head waiter... escorted him to a table near the window while the occupants... gazed at him spellbound and whispered, "Conrad Green". (Lardner).	Старший офіціант... провів його до столу біля вікна, і/а приголомшені відвідувачі, затамувавши подих, зашепотіли: "Конрад Ґрін!"

Contrastive and Adversative Compound Sentences

Like all other compound sentences with determining clauses, the contrastive and adversative subtype of composite sentences are distinguished in the contrasted languages through the seemingly copulative conjunction *"and",* whose meaning in Ukrainian corresponds to the adversative conjunction *"a". Cf:*

Then Jim made some kind of a noise *and she* heard it and waited a minute, and then she said... (Lardner)	Потім Джім злегка зашарудів, *а* вона почула це, зачекала якусь мить, а тоді сказала...

The contrastive and adversative meaning in compound sentences of this subtype seem to be more explicit in Ukrainian, which (can be explained by the existence of the adversative conjunction *a,* whose meaning in English is included in the semantic structure of the conjunction *and.*

The semantic/logical dependence of clauses in the sentence above makes no changes of their position possible. Though in some compound sentences of this subtype there may be looser ties between the constituent clauses. Cf. The worst of them had drunk plenty of gin, *and they were a rough bunch even when sober.* (Lardner)

The second clause above can be moved to the initial position, i. e. change its placement with the main clause. Cf. *They were a rough bunch even when sober, and* the most of them had drank plenty of gin.

400

Though the sequence of actions in the sentence has been changed, the general sense of it and its grammaticality remain inviolable both in the author's original and in the transformed variant. These features are also preserved in the Ukrainian transform: *Вони й тверезими були дикою зграєю,* а (тут) більшість з них (ще й) добряче хильнули джину.

Practically no semantic changes can be noticed in many other transforms in English and in Ukrainian compound sentences of this subtype. Cf. There are butterflies in the sunshine, and *from everywhere arises the drowsy hum of bees.* (London) — *From everywhere arises the drowsy hum of bees, and* there are butterflies in the sunshine. Somewhat looser ties are observed in the Ukrainian transform of the sentence as well: На осонні літають метелики, а довкола заспокійливо гудуть бджоли. — Довкола заспокійливо гудуть бджоли, а на осонні літають метелики.

Transformations of this kind become impossible in English and Ukrainian contrastive and adversative compound sentences, when their clauses are semantically bound to one object or action/event. Thus, in the compound sentence *Her complexion was not good and her face was covered with blotches.* (Anderson) the subjects *complexion and face* belong together, since "complexion" is a feature of one's face. As a result, the second clause, being a logical sequence of the state expressed in the main clause, can not precede it but only follow it. Otherwise the sentence would be logically/semantically incompatible. The Ukrainian transform of this sentence would completely pervert the logical sequence of actions. Cf. *Воно було в прищах, а/і в неї був негарний колір обличчя.

As can be noticed, the transformed sentence loses the semantic unity between its clauses in both contrasted languages. Consequently, such transformations are impossible.

Compound Sentences with Asyndetically Adjoined Clauses

Compound sentences with asyndetically adjoined clauses are equally pertained to both contrasted languages. They are represented by two common subtypes:

a) compound sentences with an implicit though quite transparent copu-

lative interrelation between the constituent clauses and with close semantic and syntactic ties between the succeeding and preceding clauses. As a result, asyndetically adjoined clauses in sentences of this subtype can be substituted for syndetically connected clauses (with the help of the copulative conjunction "and"). Cf. She's worthy, she's dowdy; she's provincial. (Maugham) — She's worthy, (and she's dowdy, (and) she's provincial. Similarly in Ukrainian: Вона гонориста; (і) вона старомодна; (і) вона провінціалка.

b) compound sentences of the second subtype are characterised by a still looser connection between the adjoined clauses which are marked by a comma or a semicolon. The syntactic interrelation between the component clauses in sentences of this subtype may be of copulative or adversative nature. Cf. *Young John has never studied a doctrine for himself; he has never examined a doctrine for any purpose.* (Twain) — Young John has never studied a doctrine for himself, (and) he has never examined a doctrine for any purpose... The coordinate copulation is also preserved in Ukrainian: Молодий пастор Джон ніколи не вивчав якоїсь віри, (І) він ніколи не заглиблювався в неї з якоюсь певною метою.

No less frequent in both languages are also adversative interrelations between clauses in looser compound sentences of this subtype. Thus, in the sentence "*It didn't warm me, it made me feel sick inside*" (Maltz), the adversative interrelation between the constituent clauses can be made explicit by inserting the co-conjunction *but* between them: It didn't warm me (but), it made me feel sick inside.

An equivalent transformation of this sentence can be performed in Ukrainian. Cf. Вона (усмішка) не зігріла мене, (а) вона викликала в мене відразу.

The adversative meaning can be intensified by the introductory "but" as in the following sentence: But the teller of the comic story does not slur the nub; he shouts at you... (M. Twain). The sentence preserves the same meaning in Ukrainian: Але/проте автор комічного твору ніколи не завуальовує смішного; він обстрілює ним вас...

A still looser semantic and syntactic dependence can be observed in some polypredicative asyndetic compound sentences whose clauses often display a tendency to a semantic and logical autonomy. The latter is

predetermined by actions/events expressed by the predicate verbs, which do not depend on the predicate verbs of the preceding clauses.

Cf. *The moon sank behind the hill; the doorway framed only a path of pale sky; the willy wagtail chirped behind the house; the mosquitoes buzzed against the net.* (Cusack) The interdependence between the succeeding and the preceding pairs of neighbouring clauses is rather vague due to which the clauses may be singled out and even form independent sentences. Cf. The moon sank behind the hill. The doorway framed only a path of pale sky. The willy wagtail chirped behind the house...

Similar polypredicative sentences are pertained to Ukrainian as well: *Сонце заходить, гори чорніють, Пташечка тихне, попе німіє. Радіють люди...* (Шевченко) Despite their being marked by commas, all the clauses retain their interdependence due to the general content and due to the supersegmental means (intonation, logical stress), which make some of them loose enough as to form at least three separate sentences: Сонце заходить — гори чорніють. Пташечка тихне — поле німіє. Радіють люди...

Consequently, a looser connection between clauses in compound sentences of the second subtype is predetermined by the nature of actions expressed in the constituent clauses, as well as by the extralingual factors. These include the author's pragmatic intentions due to which some loosely connected clauses may become separate simple sentences or vice versa. Thus, the two simple sentences: *The duchess went pale. The duchess went red.* (Maugham) may be transformed into constituent clauses of a compound sentence: The duchess went pale; the duchess went red. And in Ukrainian: Графиня пополотніла; графиня побуряковіла.

A possibility of the kind of transformations in the system of compound sentences belonging to the second subtype testifies to their discrete status in both contrasted languages.

Isomorphisms and Allomorphisms in the System of Sentences with Syndetically and Asyndetically Joined Component Parts

As to their structure, compound sentences in English and Ukrainian fall into two clearly distinguishable groups: 1) compound sentences prop-

er; 2) intermediaries between the simple extended sentences and the compound sentences proper.

The compound sentences proper may be of some structural forms:

a) unextended compound sentences consisting of two simple clauses
joined syndetically or asyndetically, eg:

"I'm old, but you are young." (Cald-well) Their hair was cropped; they wore jeans. (Steinbeck)	"Я старий, а ти — молодий." Всі вони були пострижені; всі були в джинсах.

b) two-componental compound sentences with one or both extended clauses joined syndetically or asyndetically:

The girl opened the bag and there sure enough was a bottle of milk and half a dozen Spratt's biscuits. (Jerome)	Дівчина розкрила сумку, а в ній — і треба ж — була пляшка молока та п'ять-шість (бісквіт-них) коржиків.
Her back was straight, her shoulders and her features were as the features of a tiny goddess on a pedestal. (Anderson)	У неї була пряма спина, рівні плечі, а її фігурка була мов у тієї вилитої статуетки богині на п'єдесталі.

c) compound sentences consisting of more than two clauses joined by different conjunctions, due to which the clauses have a fixed place, eg:

He turned his head to look at it, but he didn't speak and I said nothing. (Maltz)	Він оглянувся, щоб подиви-тися на це, але нічого не ска-зав, і я промовчав.

Typology of Semi-Compound Sentences

Apart from complete compound sentences consisting of clauses having each the principal parts of the sentence, there exist also semi-compound sentences. They are communicative units in which one (usually the first) clause is structurally complete and the succeeding clause is incomplete, i. e. lacks one or both main parts of the sentence, eg.

404

Melton was not large enough to лим	Селище Мельтон було зама-
be a town, *nor small enough to be a села/*	для міста і *завеликим як для*
village. (Hughes)	щоб вважатися селом.

The second part of the sentence both in English and in Ukrainian lacks the subject and the linking verb; it is an elliptical clause whose lacking elements can be easily restored from the first clause. Cf. ...Nor was Melton small enough to be a village — (і був Мелтон) завеликим для села/щоб вважатися селом. A similar lack of the subject is observed in the sentence "He couldn't believe it and *was a little scared"* (Saroyan), as well as in the sentence "The guys seemed to notice it and *felt strained".* (Quin) Their Ukrainian equivalents lack the same parts of the sentence: Він не міг повірити цьому і *був дещо наляканий.* Хлопці, здавалося, помітили це і *почувалися непевно.*

Other parts of the sentence may be lacking in semi-compound sentences of this type as well. For example, the lacking linking verb: His dreams were so simple; his wants so few. (Dreiser), i. e. "his wants (were) so few". Lacking may also be the subject and the predicate: After the second bath in the hot viniger the shell of the egg had been softened a little but *not enough for his purpose.* (Anderson). Here the omitted parts in the tag are the subject ("the shell of the egg") and the predicate (has been softened) "not enough for the purpose". Or in such a sentence: He used to be as popular as anyone, *and made as much noise.* (Quin), i. e. and (he) "made as much noise". These and other sentences of the type have semi-compound transforms in Ukrainian as well... шкаралупа яйця пом'якшала, проте (вона) пом'якшала недостатньо для цього. Він був такий популярний, як і кожен на його місці, і (він) *створював (навколо себе) стільки ж галасу.*

Some English semi-composite sentences have no structural sentence equivalents in Ukrainian. Here belong sentences whose parts are expressed by secondary predication constructions. Thus, the English semi-compound sentence He looked at her and *saw her crying.* (Hemingway) has a complete complex sentence for its equivalent in Ukrainian: Він глянув на неї і побачив, *що вона плаче* (object clause).

English semi-compound sentences with the nominative absolute participle constructions have mostly complete compound sentences for their

equivalents in Ukrainian as well: Nancy's head was already turned toward the barred door, *her eyes filled with red lamplights.* (Faulkner) — Голова Ненсі була повернута до запертих дверей, і в очах її відбилося червоне світло лампочки.

These are the main allomorphic features distinguishing the English semi-compound sentences which have no direct structural equivalents in present-day Ukrainian.

Extended Compound Sentences in English and Ukrainian

These compound sentences incorporate in both contrasted languages a subordinate clause which functions as a complement/adjunct to a part of the sentence in one of the co-ordinate clauses. For example:

She tried not to look as they passed by, but her eyes would not obey. (Steinbeck)	Вона намагалася не дивитися, коли вони проходили, але очі її не слухалися.
It was in the spring of his thirty-fifth year that father married my mother, then a country school teacher, and in the following spring 1 came wriggling and crying into the world. (Anderson)	Було це весною в його тридцятип'ятиріччя, коли батько одружився з моєю матір'ю, тоді сільською вчителькою, а через рік, звиваючись і лементуючи, з'явився на білий світ і я.

A compound sentence may incorporate a whole complex sentence used after the first clause (following the conjunction) and thus become compound-complex. Cf.

She stayed ten minutes and I know she wanted to ask if she might borrow twenty-five cents till tomorrow but didn't dare. (Saroyan)	Вона мнеться хвилин десять, і я знаю, що вона хоче позичити 25 центів до завтра, але не насмілюється сказати.

The principal clause ("I know") incorporates semantically the first clause (She stayed ten minutes) which in its turn correlates with the adversative co-clause "but didn't dare."

Not infrequently a subordinate clause may conclude the co-ordinate clause in the compound sentence, thus forming a compound-complex by structure sentence, eg:

"Now is it sight or is it scent *that brings them like that?* (Hemingway)	Чи це краєвид приваблює, а чи запах, *що вони всі* (метелики) *летять сюди?*
Mae never read the newspapers, and was only vaguely conscious *that there was a war.* (Reed)	Мі ніколи не читала газет і тільки якось підсвідомо сприй-мала те, *що йде війна.*

Compound-Complex Sentences in English and Ukrainian

Compound-complex sentences present an isomorphic type in the system of composite sentences of the contrasted languages. These sentences consist of two or more complex sentences preceding and following the co-ordinate conjunction. Hence, there can be distinguished in English and Ukrainian both unextended and extended compound-complex sentences.

The pattern of an unextended compound-complex sentence in the contrasted languages is as follows: a complex sentence + conj.+ a complex sentence, for example: "I *suppose* 1) I'm silly but that's the way 1*) I am"* (Anderson). *Я вважаю,* 1) *що я дурний, але так уже сталося,* 1) *що я (є) такий.*

Extended compound-complex sentences consist respectively of more than two complex sentences to the left and to the right of the co-ordinate conjunctions. Cf. *It was, 0) she knew, the best water colour 1) she had painted in her four years at a high-school as art student and she was glad 1) she had made something 2) Miss Dietrich liked well enough to permit to enter in the contest 3) before she graduated.* (Hughes) This sentence fully preserves its structural form in Ukrainian. Cf. Це був, 0) вона знала, її найкращий акварельний малюнок, 1) який вона зробила за свої чотири роки навчання в художньому училищі, і вона була рада, 1) що їй пощастило намалювати щось таке, 2) що дуже сподобалося викладачці міс Дітріх, 3) яка й до-зволила їй взяти участь у передвипускному конкурсі.

Allomorphism may sometimes be observed in Ukrainian equivalents of English compound-complex sentences containing two adversative conjunctions, the main of which may be omitted in Ukrainian:

But the Commandant said it was all very well for Americans, *but* he was content to stick to plafond, *and* the abbe said that for his part he thought it a pity that whist had been abandoned. (Maugham)	Але капітан відповів, що це все — американські штучки, *а* його цілком задовольняє плафон; абат же сказав, що він жалкує, що така гарна гра, як віст, вийшла з моди.

The omission of the joining conjunction (але) in the Ukrainian equivalent of the above-given sentence can be a testimony to the existence of asyndetic compound-complex sentences in present-day English as well.

TYPOLOGY OF THE COMPLEX SENTENCE

Like the simple and compound sentence, the complex sentence too presents a universal unit in the syntactic systems of all 5,651 languages of the world. Consequently, this type of composite sentence has some isomorphic features of its own. They are in the contrasted languages as follows: 1) the complex sentence has a polypredicative nature; 2) it is characterised by the subordinate way of joining the clauses to the principal/matrix clause; 3) it may consist of homogeneous clauses or of consecutively dependent clauses joined to the matrix clause or to each other syndetically or asyndetically; 4) the arsenal of syndetic means of connection includes conjunctions, connective pronouns, connective adverbs and subordinating connective words; 5) the connectors join clauses and express some logico-grammatical relations formed within the complex sentence. These include predicative, objective, attributive and various adverbial relations expressed by the corresponding clauses which may occupy either the preceding or the succeeding position/place in regard to the matrix clause.

The nature of the many logico-grammatical relations created between the subordinate and the matrix clause generally corresponds to the na-

ture of relations created between the adjuncts/complements and their heads in subordinate word-groups. Hence, there are distinguished the following typologically relevant groups of subordinate clauses:

In English	In Ukrainian
1. Substantive-nominal:	1. Субстантивно-номінативні:
a) subject subordinate clauses	a) підметові підрядні речення
b) predicative subordinate clauses	б) присудкові підрядні речення
c) objective subordinate clauses	в) додаткові підрядні речення
2. Qualitatively-nominal:	2. Квалітативно-номінативні:
a) descriptive attributive clauses	a) описові атрибутивні підрядні речення
b) restrictive/limiting attributive рядні clauses	б) обмежуючі атрибутивні під- рядні речення
3. Adverbial Clauses:	3. Адвербіальні підрядні речення:
of time, place, purpose, cause, собу,	часу, місця, мети, причини, спо-
attending circumstances, condition, concession, result, etc.	дії, умови, допусту, наслідку тощо,

Typology of the Complex Sentence with Nominal Clauses

Nominal clauses in complex sentences of the contrasted languages are characterised by some isomorphic as well as by several allomorphic features. The latter find their expression in the structural forms of the nominal clauses. Common, first of all, is the general function of nominal clauses which approximates the function of a noun or a nominal word-group. Hence, a subject clause functions as the subject of the matrix clause, the predicative clause functions as the predicative to the linking verb of the matrix clause, the object clause functions respectively as the object to the verbal predicate, its non-finite forms, adjectives, statives, verbal nouns. That is why an object clause may be obligatory in the complex sentence or optional, like the descriptive and limiting attributive clauses respectively. Common by nature is also the dependence of subordinate clauses on matrix clause with which they form a syntactic (and communicative) unit. When taken in isolation, however, they may often lose their sentence completeness, to say nothing about their syntactic/func-

tional nature as they cease to be component parts of complex sentences. The principal isomorphic feature of nominal clauses in the contrasted languages lies in their general implicit meaning, which manifests itself respectively in the nature of their syntactic relations with the matrix clause. These relations are predicative, objective or attributive/appositive. It is only expedient to contrast the typological feature of these clauses here in this same order as well.

Typological Features of Subject Clauses

The functions of subject clauses in English and Ukrainian may both coincide and not coincide. Structurally common are:

1. Subject clauses which re-compensate or substitute the subject in a | two-member sentence with a compound nominal predicate of being or seeming. These subject clauses initiate a complex sentence with the help of: a) the corresponding/equivalent conjunctions *(that, whether, if, because, either...or, whether...or — що, щоб, якщо, тому що, чи, або...або, чи...чи);* a subject clause may initiate *b)* with the help of the corresponding connectives (relative pronouns or adverbs): *who, whose, what, which, whom, where, when, how, why — хто, що, який, котрий, чий, де, коли, як/яким чином:*

What you say is true. (Dreiser)	Те, що ти кажеш, є правда ...
...whether it does not create worse difficulties in place of the one removed is another question. (Voynich)	...чи це не створить більших труднощів замість цієї подоланої — залишається ще одним запитанням.

The subject clause in each sentence above can equally be substituted in both languages for pronouns, nouns and other nominals. Cf. What he said is true — That/the document is true. Що він сказав (є) правда. Це/Те (є) правда.

Common in these and other subject clauses of this type in both contrasted languages is also their thematic nature.

2. The second common group constitute extended thematic subject clauses. They are mostly introduced by a pronoun (usually indefinite or

410

relative) or by a noun specified by an attributive clause which constitutes with the pronoun/noun an extended subject clause that initiates the complex sentence:

All I want's to die in my own merti	Єдине, чого/що я бажаю,- померти
place... (Prichard)	у себе вдома...
The thing that made me decide on тись	Те, що змусило мене визначитись
the place to build my house was the sea elephants. (O'Dell)	щодо місця для побудови хати, були морські слони.

Pertaining only to English are rhematic subject clauses located in the postposition to the matrix clause and introduced by the anticipatory pronoun **it.** Cf. *It has been said that the greatest events of the world take place in the brain.* (Wilde) *It is no exaggeration to say that one was told he must have plums.* (T. Wolfe) This structural form of English subject clauses has some semantic equivalents, though not absolutely identical in Ukrainian. The main difference, naturally, lies in the absence of the introductory pronoun **it** and in the use of various forms of predicate verbs. There are distinguished the following groups:

1. Subject clauses introduced by the conjunctions and joining the claus es to the predicate verb in **-ся:** З'ясувалося, *що він перевіряє, чи справжній кулемет.* (Яновський) ...і мариться їй, *що йде біля волів її Остап уже вусатий,* уже жонатий, може. (Головко) І снилось, *як гаряче дихають дні.* (Малишко)

2. Subject clauses introduced in Ukrainian by the conjunction *що* and connected with the neuter gender verb in the past tense form: Бувало, *що зіпсується на мені ударник або вчиниться* хімічна реакція в гримучім живім сріблі капсули. (Яновський) При цьому його не лякало, *що він може оступитися, схибити.* (Гончар)

3. Subject clauses introduced by the conjunction *що* and connected with the predicate expressed by a stative: Просто дивно, *що йому пасувало власне прізвище.* (Гуцало) Ще хоч добре, *що дочка недалеко.* (Головко).

4. Subject clauses, introduced by a prepositional connective: Не поет, *у кого думки не літають у світі.* (Л. Українка) **Note.** Some English subject clauses, introduced by the anticipatory

411

"it", may have in Ukrainian semantically dual subject or object equivalent clauses introduced by the conjunction "що", that connects the clauses with the definite personal single verb clause. Such nominal clauses are referred in present-day Ukrainian syntax to the group of explicatory subordinate clauses (підрядних з'ясувальних). For example:

It was rumoured that he had been seen brawling with foreign sailors in a low den... (Wilde)	Подейкували, що хтось бачив його в бійці з п'яними іноземними моряками в якомусь брудному притоні...

No structural equivalents have in Ukrainian some transforms of English subject clauses introduced by the emphatic pronoun *it*. The English complex sentences then may correspond to Ukrainian simple extended or even to simple unextended sentences:

It is the smoking itself that is not nice. (London)	Уже само собою палити/куріння не гарно.
...it may be from them (dolphins) that the name came. (O'Dell)	...це мабуть від них (дельфінів) походить і сама назва острова

Some English complex sentences of this type may have an identical structural form in Ukrainian. Cf.

It was about five years after this that I decided to live in Paris for a while. (Hemingway)	Це було десь років п'ять по тому, як/коли я вирішив пожити/провести якийсь час у Парижі.

Typological Features of Predicative Clauses

Predicative clauses are equally characterised in English and Ukrainian by some isomorphic as well as by some allomorphic features. Thus, predicative clauses may be: a) structurally extended or unextended; b) they may perform the function of the nominal part of the predicate in the matrix clause; c) they always follow in English their matrix clause whereas in Ukrainian they may sometimes occupy a front position and even a midposition in the complex sentence; d) they may be introduced mainly

by common semantically and structurally conjunctions, correlatives and connectives (relative pronouns, relative adverbs) which are as follows: *that, whether, as, as if, as though, because, lest, either...or, whether...or; who, whose, whoever, what, which, where, whenever, when, how, why* — *що/щоб, як, ніби/нібито, наче/неначе, мов/немов, такий, кого, яким* та ін.

A peculiar feature of English predicative clauses is that they are in the place of the nominal part of the predicate, i. e. they almost always follow the linking verb of the matrix clause: "That's *what he did* ". (Macken) My experience is that *they're mostly pleasant.* (J. K. Jerome) It was *as if they had not been there at all.* (O'Dell)

This same structural form of complex sentences is observed when there are some homogeneous predicative clauses following the linking verb. Cf. Our judgements were (1) that the lectures were of no importance; (2) that nobody took them; (3) that they don't matter; (4) that you can take them if you like; (5) that they do not harm. (Leacock).

Note. Sometimes English predicative clauses may be joined to be matrix clause asyndetically as in the sentence "The outcome was, *the dogs never appeared again".* (O'Dell) They may also be introduced in English by the anticipatory pronoun it: "It was *that Mary was a lazy girl".* (O'Hara)

The number of complex sentences whose predicative clauses substitute the nominal part of the predicate and follow the linking verb is restricted in Ukrainian. However, equivalents to some English predicative clauses of this type can be found in Ukrainian as well:

...my only fear was that you *would... be bored.* (Maugham)	єдиним моїм побоюванням було, що ти *нудитимешся.*
That was *as far as he got.* (Anderson) він	Це/то було *настільки далеко* *забрався/зайшов.*

The main group among present-day Ukrainian predicative clauses that identify or specify the nominal part of the matrix clause are the ones introduced by the demonstrative pronouns "такий, той" which may be preceded by the negative particle "не": Команду подали пошепки, а

враження було **таке,** *що пролунала вона громом.* (Гончар). Він був не з тих, *що швидко погоджуються.* (Руденко). Та часи тепер були зовсім не ті, *щоб однією пихою жити.* (Мирний).

Structurally similar, though of different nature, are complex sentences whose matrix clauses in Ukrainian contain a nominal part of the predicate expressed by an ordinal numeral or by an adjective specified by a demonstrative or relative pronoun *хто/кого, такий, така, таке, такі:* Ганна була першою, *кого Крайнєв зустрів в інституті.* (Собко) Моє життя зараз таке коротке, *що я кроками можу зміряти його.* (Коцюбинський) Чоловік це був такий високий, *що в хаті зробилося раптом тісно й темно.* (Тютюнник) Pertaining to only Ukrainian are complex sentences whose matrix clauses have a simple nominal predicate expressed by a demonstrative pronoun, which may be preceded by the negative particle *не, or* by an adjective often emphasised by a demonstrative pronoun. Cf. Я той, *що греблі рвав.* (Воронько) Та й люди у них не *такі, щоб пустили докторів на свої виноградники.* (Коцюбинський) Сьогодні я **такий веселий,** *що молодіти хочу знов.* (Сосюра) Повітря **таке запашне** од гірських трав, *що аж п'янить.* (Коцюбинський).

Ukrainian predicative clauses have often an implicit attributive meaning specifying the antecedent of the matrix clause: Круто повернувся і вийшов з-за перегородки *такий же поважний і урочистий, яким і зайшов сюди.* (Шовкопляс) Тарас дивився на Остапа *такий здивований, начебто це був і не Остап зовсім...* (Довженко).

The most striking allomorphism in the system of predicative clauses in the contrasted languages, however, is their ability (in Ukrainian) to occupy sometimes the initial and seldom even the mid-position of the complex sentence. This is observed when an identity of a corresponding feature in the predicative clause and in the matrix clause is to be emphasised or determined. Cf. Яке *життя,* таке й товариство. (Мирний) Який *Сава,* така й слава. Or in the interposition: Першим, *кого він побачив,* був Захар Побережний, знатний хлібороб. (Стельмах)

Common in the syntactic systems of both contrasted languages are complex sentences consisting of two subordinate clauses, the first of which is in the position of the subject clause and the second, following

414

the linking verb, is the predicative clause. Complex sentences of this type are almost identical in both languages by their structure with the exception of the demonstrative pronoun *той/те,* which can sometimes be omitted in English. Hence, the sentences are easily transplantable, eg:

...all she knew was *that it was wonderful.* (Saroyan)	*...все, що вона знала,* було те, *що це просто прекрасно.*
What had troubled her was *that she вона*	*Що її турбувало,* було *те, що*
had no thread to *mend her children's clothes. (Parker)*	*не мала ниток, аби полатати своїм дітям одежини.*

Typological Features of Object Clauses

The object clauses being of the same nominal nature as the subject and predicative clauses, are introduced in the contrasted languages by two common means: a) syndetically and b) asyndetically. The syndetic means are conjunctions *(that, if, whether, lest),* correlatives *(either, or, whether... or),* connective pronouns *(who, whoever, what, whatever which),* and connective adverbs *(where, when, whenever, why, how).* Their corresponding syndetic means in Ukrainian are respectively subordinating conjunctions and pronominal correlatives *що, щоб, чи; чи...чи; хто, котрий, який; де, коли, звідки, куди, чого, чому, як.* Common are also some other features of object clauses, namely: 1) they complement the objective verb predicate or refer to a verbal noun, some statives, adverbs or to adjectives expressing perception, desire, feeling, assurance (certain, sure, sorry, anxious, pleased). The only exception are statives which do not always correlate/coincide lexically and can not be transplanted from English to Ukrainian. Cf.

"I regret that there is no mistake..." (Greene)	"Я жалкую, *що тут немає помилки".* (Жаль, що тут немає помилки).
"I'm *afraid I can't help you".* (Christie) (Кучер)	Матросам робилося *прикро, що вони стоять у морі без діла.*
"But aren't you *glad I came today?"* (Gardner)	"Хіба ти не *радий, що я прийшов сьогодні?"*

2) object clauses in English and Ukrainian are of common syntactic nature and express an identical nominal derivation. They occupy a strong substantive position which is manifested by the introductory conjunctions, connective pronouns and in some cases by the use of introductory prepositions. For example:

"I know *that his is a fantastic story."* (Maugham)	"Я знаю, *що це його захоплююча оповідь. "*
"Go ahead and tell me *what happened."* (Saroyan)	"Продовжуй і розкажи, *що/було трапилося потім."*
I was supposed to see *with what том appetite she ate.* (Maugham)	*Я* мав побачити, з *якім апети-том вона їсть.*

Allomorphism is also observed in the nature and structure of some Ukrainian connectors among which there is the particle *чи* corresponding to the English conjunctions *whether* and *if.* Besides, the correlating pronoun *він* is often a part of the matrix clause (as in other nominal clauses). Cf.

"I wonder *whether* he already knew знав the contents of my telegram." (Greene)	"Мене цікавить, *чи* він уже знав тоді зміст моєї телеграми."
"I don't want to pry into *what* doesn't concern me." (Maugham)	"Я не хочу втручатись у *те, що* мене не стосується."

The correlating pronoun *me,* as in the object clause above, may be used in Ukrainian complex sentences in different case forms. Cf. Твір більше виграє від *того,* що ви зачепили в ньому проблему хліба. (Гуцало) Після ретельних підрахунків помирилися на *тому,* щоб іти пішки. (Гончар).

Correlating prepositional pronouns can perform the same function in English object clauses as well. Cf. "You may rely on *it* that I shall give you a full account". (Doyle)

One more isomorphic feature of object clauses in the contrasted languages lies in their ability to have the implicit "background of adverbial events." [30] The latter are introduced in these clauses by the corresponding relative adverbs of time, place, manner, cause and by the conjunction *if* that expresses choice and has the meaning of the particle *"чи"* in Ukrainian. The implicit meanings may be of:

416

Time: "I'll tell you *when we're alone.* (Braine)

Cause: I wondered *why he had come.* (Maugham)

Manner: I asked him *how he liked Paris.* (Ibid.)

Choice: The innkeeper asked the guards **if *they had come from the city.*** (Vonnegut)

"Я тобі скажу, коли *ми будемо* самі."

Я дивувався, *чому він* прийшов.

Я запитав його, *як йому сподобався Париж.*

Власник постою запитав у конвоїрів, **чи вони, бува, не прийшли з міста.**

English object clauses, however, are more often introduced asyndetically. To mark this way of connection the semicolon, a comma, or a dash is used in Ukrainian instead of the conjunction *"що",* eg:

I realised he wanted to talk.
(F. Hardy)

Lena said she would rest. (Maugham)

"I know it's bad for you." (Hemingway)

Я зрозумів: йому хотілося побалакати.

Ліна казала - вона спочиватиме.

"Я знаю, це недобре/погано для тебе."

Not infrequently, however, a conjunction is to be used in Ukrainian structural equivalents of English asyndetically joined object clauses. Cf.

"But aren't you glad I came today?" (Lardner)

He must have known I was coming. (Hemingway)

I don't believe a word of truth in it. (Maugham)

"Невже ти не радий, *що* я приїхала нині?"

Він повинен був знати, *що* я приїжджаю.

Я не вірю, *що* в цьому є хоч крихта правди.

Isomorphic in the contrasted languages is the inverted order of object clauses which is seemingly more often occurring in English than in Ukrainian. Nevertheless, there often exists a direct equivalence in placement of object clauses in the corresponding English and Ukrainian complex sentences, though the structural form of these clauses *may* coincide, eg:

"There's something, I think".
"She's pretty, you know".
(Maugham)

"Там щось не те, гадаю."
"Вона ж гарна, ти знаєш."
("Ти ж знаєш, що вона гарна.")

417

How long he walked he didn't know. (Anderson)	*Як довго він ішов,* — він не пам'ятає.

Nevertheless, it is far from always possible to keep the same preposed or postposed placement of English object clauses in the corresponding Ukrainian sentences:

"They don't last, I'm told." (Wilde).	"Я чув, *вони не витримують."* "Мені сказали, *що вони не витримають."*
It came from the sea though, I presume. (Dreiser)	Я гадаю, однак, *що воно з'явилося з моря.*

As can be ascertained, postposition of object clauses following the matrix clause is more often observed in Ukrainian whereas in English complex sentences of both positions are equally common. But isomorphic remains one more feature such as the use of homogeneous object clauses to a matrix clause:

"You know I'm not a beautiful woman, I'm not even a very pretty one." (Maugham)	"Знаєте, я зовсім не красуня, мене навіть гарненькою не назвеш."

In rare cases an object clause in English and Ukrainian may depend on an infinitival matrix clause, eg:

"But to think Julia possibly gave him a thought." (Maugham)	"Але подумати тільки, щоб Джулія так напоумила його."

Pertaining to Ukrainian only is the structural form of matrix clauses identical with regular one-member definite personal sentences taking objective clauses for their complements, eg: *Хочете, я* з вами посиджу. (М. Вовчок) *Сказано:* "Хліб та вода — то козацька їда." (Куліш) Раділа, що йду, живу, п'ю цілюще степове повітря. (Гончар) Це ж, *думаю,* Палажка ходить до моєї криниці. (Н.-Левицький) Вважалося, що перенесення образів... річ зовсім неможлива. (Рильський)

Typological Features of Attributive Clauses

Like all other nominal clauses, English and Ukrainian attributive clauses have also both isomorphic and allomorphic features. The isomorphic features, which generally outnumber the latter, are predetermined by some common syntactic and semantic factors. These are the following features of attributive clauses in the contrasted languages: 1) they always follow the *antecedent noun, pronoun or numeral* which they modify/ specify; 2) they may sometimes be substituted for the corresponding participial constructions performing an attributive function; 3) They may often be joined to the English *antecedent* asyndetically. Cf.:

He could be somebody who could play the piano. (Saroyan)	He could be somebody playing the piano.

Similar transformations are possible in Ukrainian, though postposed participial constructions can rarely substitute an attributive clause. More often the past participle can be used instead, which may be substituted for an attributive clause:

Слова, підхоплені на парті, йому припали до душі. (Масенко) — Слова, які/що були підхоплені на парті, йому припали до душі.

Note. Far from all English participial constructions used in the attributive function to a prepositive nominal word, can be transformed into an attributive clause (or vice versa). The restrictions are due to the meaning of the participle and the predicate verb in the attributive clause respectively. Cf. There was the other Sirnosian with them *who was not an uneasy* man. (Aldridge) Or: ... it is so now, at the time *I am writing.* (Amis) Neither of the two attributive clauses in these sentences can be transformed into a semantically corresponding attributive participial construction because the predicate *"was not an uneasy* man" like *"am writing"* are not transformable (like their equivalents in Ukrainian) into present participles in general.

Attributive clauses in the contrasted languages have some other common features, namely:

a) they can be joined to the antecedent of the matrix clause by means of conjunctions *that, as if/as though, whether (що, мов, ніби):*

Gilbert has just told me something ні that I can hardly bring myself to believe. (Maugham)	Джільберт щойно сказав ме- таке, у що я ніяк не можу по- вірити.
I have a feeling that if I'd stayed a б	У мене таке відчуття, що коли
day longer I should have been bored. (Ibid.)	я залишилась тут ще день, я б умерла з нудьги.

b) they are much more often joined to the matrix clause by means of relative pronouns and relative adverbs *(who, whose, what, which, that, when, whence, where, how — хто, кого, ким, який, що, де, ко- ли, звідки, куди, чому):*

I glanced at Daisy, *who* was staring between Gatsby and her husband. й	*Я* глянув на Дейзі, *яка* злякано дивилася кудись поміж Ґетсбі
(Fitzgerald)	своїм чоловіком.
It is the sanctuary *where* all things find refuge. (Maugham)	Це і є те сховище, *де* все може знайти притулок.

Common in the contrasted languages are some traditionally distin- guished groups of attribute clauses like the following:

1. *Appositive clauses* which are joined to an antecedent noun hav- ing a most general abstract meaning or to a pronoun (mostly indefi- nite) with the help of a relative pronoun or pronominal adverb:

This was the time *when* they looked now. (O'Dell)	І от настав час, *коли очі* вже бачили.
Also it seemed to be connected with something *which* required conceal- ment. (Dreiser)	Здавалося також, що це було пов'язане з чимось, *що* треба було приховувати.

2. *Restrictive attributive clauses* in English and Ukrainian are very closely connected with the antecedent which is determined or identi- fied/ particularised by the subordinate clause without which the matrix clause is incomplete:

There was a legend among the people that the island had once been тий	Між людьми ходила легенда, що острів колись був покри-
covered with tall trees. (O'Dell)	високими деревами.

3. *Descriptive attributive clauses* give some additional information about the antecedent. Due to this the clauses in both contrasted languages may be omitted without affecting the semantic completeness of the sentence:

...his eyes were fixed upon the princess, who sat to the right of his father. (Stockton)	...його очі не відривалися від принцеси, яка сиділа праворуч від батька-короля.

Attributive clauses in both languages may be joined to the matrix clause by prepositional relative pronouns:

His love became a prison for him *from which* he longed to escape. (Maugham)	Його кохання стало в'язницею для нього, *з якої він* волів утекти.

Common, though more characteristic of Ukrainian than of English, are the so-called continuative attributive clauses which have no correlating relative pronoun to the nominal antecedent in the matrix clause. These clauses are introduced by the conjunction *що/that,* eg:

Почуття волі були такими гарясо чими, *що* серце солодко захлинулося, попливло... (Гуцало)	The feeling of freedom became warm *that* his heart chocked with enthusiasm and floated...
Іноді він поринав у такий глибокий роздум, *що* його будили, як сонного... (Довженко)	Sometimes he would plunge into so deep a contemplation that he had to be awakened like a man asleep...

Very often, however, English relative pronouns referring to antecedents denoting person can be substituted in Ukrainian for a relative pronoun or for the conjunction *що:*

I looked at my cousin, who began to ask me questions... (Fitzgerald)	Я повернувся до двоюрідної сестри, яка/що стала розпитувати мене...

English attributive clauses, which specify antecedents denoting

non-421

person, are mostly introduced by the relative pronoun *which* (sometimes preceded by a preposition) or by the conjunction *that,* eg: On the second floor were managerial offices, *to which* after some inquiry, she was now directed. (Dreiser) I decided to pack the things *that* I would take to the cave on the ravine. (O'Dell) In Ukrainian, however, the relative pronoun, as a rale, agrees in number and gender with the antecedent noun or pronoun of the matrix clause. Cf. ...і великий став би *художник, який* зумів би передати все це. (Гончар) В штабі запанувала *пауза,* в *якій* чути було далеку канонаду... (Яновський) Зажурено дивився він у маленьке *віконце, за яким* снував пряжу післядощовий капіж. (Тютюнник) Нема таких *туманів, які* б не розійшлися над тобою... (Рильський)

Of isomorphic nature, however, are some implicit adverbial meanings expressed also by the attributive clauses through their adverbial connectors, as in the above-given already examples:

Time: It was the time *when* they looked now. (O'Dell)
Настав час, *коли* вони (щенята) вже не були сліпі.

Cause: There was no reason *why* she should not get some dramatist... (Maugham)
Я не бачу жодних підстав, *чому* б вона не знайшла потрібного драматурга...

Place: It is the sanctuary *where* all things find refuge. (Ibid.)
Це — сховище, *де* всі речі знайдуть собі прихисток.

Isomorphic in the syntactical systems of the contrasted languages, however, is the existence of polycomponental and simpler complex sentences with the so-called comment clauses [52, *293].* Their common forms are *you know, you see, as you know, what's more (бачите, розумієте, як бачите, як кажуть).* The clauses may occur in the sentence initially, medially or finally. Cf. "You see, when we left New York she was very nervous and she thought it would steady her to drive... (Fitzgerald) — Бачите, коли ми виїхали з Нью-Йорка, вона була дуже знервована, тож вона вирішила, що її заспокоїть їзда за кермом автомобіля.

The English two-componental clause "You see", like its Ukrainian definite personal clause equivalent "Бачите", practically performs no syntactic (subordinated or subordinating) function. It serves as an ap-

pended sentence to mark a colloquial introduction to the complex sentences whose structural pattern in English and Ukrainian can be presented as follows: Scomment.<Sadv>Smatr.<Sobj.

When in its medial position, the comment clause resembles or coincides in its function with the inserted clause as in the following sentence: "I'm glad that you both "know all", as *Eteban dramatically put it...* because it... leaves us free to arrive at a satisfactory conclusion." (Coward) "Я радий, що ви обидва "знаєте все", *як неждано-негадано заявив Етебан,* тому що це... дозволяє нам прийти до позитивного розв'язання справи."

The underlined clause "as Eteban dramatically put it" has no syntactic dependence on the preceding or on the succeeding clause as the two other subordinate clauses have in the sentence.

As was pointed out, one more allomorphic feature of English attributive clauses is the omission of the joining/connecting element before the subordinate clause which is impossible in Ukrainian. Cf. "There's a woman [ ] *set about me with a stick on the commoc,"* he said (V.C. Pritchett) Or in such a sentence: "There's crowds of artists [ ] have asked me- sometimes it's just funny stuff, of course, but mostly it's genuine." (A. Wilson))

 And who was it last night said [ ] he wouldn't have fat on his mean and changed it for hers?' (Lessing) In these sentences the connective pronoun *who* is omitted.

Allomorphic Correlations between Some English and Ukrainian Simple and Composite Sentences

The contrastive analysis of the compound and complex sentences performed on the foregoing pages has testified to the existence of complete isomorphism in the syntactical nature, nomenclature and functions of their clauses in English and Ukrainian. The few divergences mentioned refer to the structural nature and to the ways of connection of some clauses in these two languages. Allomorphic for English are definite personal clauses whereas Ukrainian has no tag-clauses and some structural forms of subject and predicative clauses and no syndetic way of joining the attributive clauses to the antecedent in the matrix clause. There is mostly no structural identity between the English sentences con-

taining some secondary predication and passive voice constructions and their corresponding Ukrainian syntactic units. Hence, the regularity of the necessary transformations which the English simple and composite sentences often undergo in Ukrainian. This usually happens in the following cases:

1. When a passive construction in the English simple sentence has no functional verb-form equivalent in Ukrainian:

It was a chance *not to be missed.* (Dreiser)	Це була нагода, *яку я немає права упустити.*

2. When in the English simple sentence there is an objective with, the infinitive construction:

He had seen *the world change.* (Hemingway)	Він бачив, як на його очах *змінюється світ.*

3. When in the English simple sentence there is an objective with the participle or adjective construction/complex:

Suddenly I saw the bush moving on the opposite side of the ravine. (O'Dell)	Раптом я побачив, як заворушився кущ на протилежному боці.
George considered himself lucky to live in the little room. (T. Wolfe)	Джорж вважав, що йому пощастило мешкати в цій кімнаті.

4. When in the English simple sentence there is a subjective with the infinitive/participle construction:

Fleur is said *to resemble her mother.* (Galsworthy) *The goods* are reported *to have been awaiting shipment* for several days. (F. Times)	Кажуть, що Флер схожа на свою матір. Повідомляють, що товари в порту чекають на відправлення вже кілька днів.

5. When there is a gerund or a gerundial complex in some function in the simple English sentence:

"Do you mind *letting me call you* F. R?" (Galsworthy)

Ви не будете заперечувати, якщо я величатиму вас Ф. Ф.?

6. When the English simple sentence contains a nominative absolute participial construction in some adverbial function:

But *Henry VIII being dead,* nothing was done. (Leacock)

Та оскільки Генріх VIII помер, то відтоді нічого й не робилося.

7. When a secondary predication construction (sometimes a single gerund) is used in an English clause, the Ukrainian transform of it usually has one clause more: .

I could not eat much, nor could I
sleep *without dreaming terrible dreams.* (O'Dell)
She was not expected *to reply,* but she did. (Dreiser)
He didn't care that they saw *him crying.* (Hemingway)

Я не могла їсти, як не могла я і спати, щоб мене не жахали страшні сни.
Не сподівалися, що вона відповість, а вона відповіла.
Йому було байдуже, що вони бачили, як він плакав.

On the same ground English three-claused composite sentences (супідрядні речення) are to be transformed into four-claused sentences in Ukrainian. Cf.

You saw me open it, you see what's inside it now. (J. K. Jerome)

Ви бачили, *як я відкривав скриньку, тепер бачите, що в ній є.*

The absence of structurally equivalent transforms for such and the like English simple and composite sentences in Ukrainian testifies to the existence of some typological allomorphism in the system of the highest syntactic level units in the contrasted languages.

Typological Features of the Adverbial Clauses

The main criteria on the basis of which the classification of all adverbial subordinate clauses is performed are common in the contrasted lan-

425

guages. These criteria include as obligatory the following characteristics of these clauses: a) their function; b) their semantics; c) partly their ways of connection with the principal clause as well as d) the structure of the sentence as a whole.

The functional classification of adverbial clauses in English and Ukrainian is established on the basis of their role in the sentence where it correlates with that of the corresponding adverbial modifiers. Accordingly, there are two common groups of adverbial clauses distinguished in the contrasted languages: 1) adverbial clauses expressing the adverbial relations proper (the adverbial clauses of place, time, condition, concession, purpose, cause and result); 2) adverbial clauses expressing the quality of relations or their quantity. These are the adverbial clauses of manner or attending circumstances and the adverbial clauses of measure and degree.

This typologically relevant classification also roughly corresponds to the quantitative representation of these groups of clauses in the contrasted languages.

Typological Features of the Adverbial Clauses of Place (місця)

The distinguishing semantic and functional characteristic features of each adverbial clause in English and Ukrainian are common. These clauses they define: a) place *or* direction of the action/state in the matrix clause; b) they are introduced in English by the adverbial connectors *where to, where/from, where, whence, wherever, everywhere* corresponding to Ukrainian adverbial connectors *де, куди, звідки.*

The adverbial clause of place may be located in English and Ukrainian both in preposition and in postposition to the matrix clause. Cf.

Where there is **a will,** there is a way. (Proverb)	*Де* вони проходили, ніщо не брязнуло, не тріснуло... (Гончар)
Lupins grew *where the springs ran.* (O'Dell)	Ти пішов лейтенантом, *де* тане далечінь... (Сосюра)

A peculiar feature of Ukrainian subordinate clauses of place is the obligatory use of relative adverbial connectors and the correlating with

426

them adverbs, when the predicate verb in the matrix clause express motion. As a result, these connectors form with the relative adverb regular semantic units like *тут/там — де/куди, звідки; туди — с куди, звідки; звідти — де/куди, звідки; скрізь — де/куди, звідки.* Cf. *Скрізь, де* серце людське б'ється, славте месха Руставелі (Рильський) Я й справді бо... злітав аж ген *туди, звідкіль* мені земле була — як на долоні. (Тичина) Параска похитнулася, глянула *туди, куди* ткнула Зінька рукою. (Мирний)

The correlating adverbs in such Ukrainian complex sentences peform a constructive syntactical function which is especially evident in clauses expressing arbitrary location: Cf. Де б не був, *всюди* почуває себе запеленгованим. (Гончар) І *де* не ступить кований каблук, *там* квіти гніву ясно багряніють. (Сосюра)

Isomorphic, however, is the structure of English complex sentence with the subordinate clauses introduced by the adverbial group "where there." Cf. *Where there* are geese, there's dirt. *Where there* are bees there will be honey. (Proverbs)

Typological Features of the Adverbial Clauses of Time (часу)

These temporal clauses in the contrasted languages perform the function of the temporal adverbial modifier of the action or state expressed in the principal clause. Temporal adverbial clauses may be introduced in English and Ukrainian by the following conjunctions or relative adverbs, adverbial phrases:

as, as soon as, before, after, till, після	як, як тільки, перед тим як,
until, when, whenever, while, now that, the time that, the day (that),	після того як, доки/поки, тим часом, тоді як, наступного
the moment, next time, directly, im-від	дня, на тоді коли, відтоді як,
mediately, etc.	коли, щоразу, коли.

Every conjunction or relative adverb/adverbial phrase in complex sentences of both languages adds some shade of meaning to the temporal relation. Due to this, the complex sentences in English and Ukrainian may express the following meanings:

a) the time of action/state in the principal clause which is mostly indicated by the conjunctions/connectives *as, as soon as, before, till, until, when,* etc. corresponding to the Ukrainian *як, коли, доки, поки, до того як, перед тим як, до того часу... доки/аж доки:*

I'll talk to him *as soon as I get* break. (Hailey)	Я поговорю з ним, *як тільки* матиму перерву. *Коли* кота нема в хаті, миші бігають по столу. Може б, випив чашку гарячого шоколаду/какао, *перш ніж підеш?*
When the cat is away the mice will play. (Proverb)	
Wouldn't you like a cup of hot chocolate *before you go?* (Salinger)	

b) the expressed meaning may indicate the temporal limits or the period of duration of the action or state in the matrix clause, which can be conveyed by the following conjunctions and adverbial connectors: *till, until, since, ever since,* etc. Or in Ukrainian: *доки, поки, відколи, відтоді як, до того часу як, доти... доки,* etc.:

We stayed there *until night fell.* (O'Dell)	Ми просиділи там, *доки* (не) настала ніч.
Never tell a thing to a woman *till it's done.* (Priestley)	Ніколи не розкривай жінці свій задум, *доки* ти не виконав його.

The temporal subordinate clauses expressing common relations in English and Ukrainian equivalents may occupy either the front position or the concluding position in the sentence:

When we reached the landing, all the old women turned their heads... (Greene)	Коли ми підійшли до дверей, усі старі жінки повернули в наш бік голови...
You were sleeping *when I left.* (Hemingway)	Ти ще спав, коли я пішов з дому.

Apart from a clearly temporal meaning these subclauses may sometimes bear some different additional implicit meanings. The latter may be observed in the complex sentences below where the connectors may be substituted, due to the inherent meaning of these clauses, for some other

conjunction. Cf. "I shall always come to you *whenever* (if?) I'm ill." (O'Dell) She made a little curtsy *as (since?) she bowed.* (Mitchell) Similar inherent meanings of condition and cause can be observed in the Ukrainian equivalents of these sentences too: "Я завжди приїжджатиму до тебе, *коли тільки/якщо* захворію". Вона висловила й своє вшанування, *коли (оскільки)* зробила реверанс.

English and Ukrainian temporal clauses may be joined by adverbial word-groups or adverbs which perform a joining function. The way of connection between such clauses then is close to asyndetic. Cf. "I get excited *every time* I see a piano." (Saroyan) *Directly I had done it* I knew I had made a mistake. (Hornby) Similarly in the Ukrainian complex sentences of the type: *Ледве ключар відчиняє двері,* в них вривається юрба відвідувачів. (Л. Українка) *...нехай тільки станеться кому з нашого села* пригода — (Максим Гримач) головою ляже, а врятує. (М. Вовчок)

Typological Features of the Clauses of Manner/ Attendant Circumstances (способу дії)

The subordinate clauses of manner or attendant circumstances in each contrasted language give some qualitative characteristics of the action/state in the matrix clause. They are introduced in English by the conjunction as/as if or by the connective word *"the way"* having several corresponding conjunctions and correlatives in Ukrainian. The main of these are: *мов, немов/немовби, неначе, ніби, нібито, начебто, що, щоб.*

The adverbial clauses of manner or attendant circumstances split in English and Ukrainian into two main subgroups:

1) clauses that qualify the predicate of the matrix clause and consequently modify the clause as a whole. A specific feature of Ukrainian equivalents of such and other clauses is an often use of condensed or reduced to a one-member clause structure with an inherent comparative meaning and function, eg:

Mr. Tupman did *as he was requested.* Треба битися тут і стояти, *як* нале-
(Dickens)   жить чесним людям. (Яновсь-
                                        кий)

429

Their voices rose and fell as *though*	їхні голоси то лунали, то завми-
	рали,
they were singing together. (Green)	*ніби* вони співали разом.

2) clauses of manner or attendant circumstances that refer to the adverbial modifier of the matrix clause have mostly an inherent comparative meaning which is an isomorphic feature of both contrasted languages. Cf.

He laughed joyfully as *though* a weight had been lifted from him. (Cusack)	Він сміявся радісно, *так. ніби* з його пліч зняли важкий тя-гар.

Sometimes the Ukrainian equivalents of the clauses of manner may have a one-member structure or rather a condensed form, eg:

It followed inevitably upon the work, *as the night follows a day.* (London)	Після праці неминуче, *мов/як день після ночі,* наступало розслаблення.

There may equally be a two-member clause of manner/attendant circumstances in Ukrainian, though in a transformed structure of the sentence only. Cf. Після праці неминуче, як *день наступає після ночі, наступало розслаблення.*

Typological Features of the Clauses of Comparison (порівняння)

This adverbial clause in English and Ukrainian may also character-ise the action/event expressed by the predicate of the matrix clause or it may correlate, as in the sub-clauses of manner/attendant circum-stances with a comparative degree adverb of the matrix clause.

Semantically common in both languages are conjunctions that in-troduce the sub-clauses of comparison. They are: *as, like, as if, as though, than* and conjunctions with the correlatives — as...as, so...as, as...as *if, the more... the more,* etc., which have corresponding connec-tive equivalents in Ukrainian *(мов, немов, ніж, так — як, так — мов, так — ніби, так-що, так-щоб,* etc.):

As they sow, so let them reap. (Proverb)	Як посієш/посієте, так і пожнеш/пожнете.
...He'd sooner die than let me think he was after my money. (Maugham)	...він скоріше помре, ніж покаже, що розраховує на мої гроші.

The identification of the clauses of comparison in the contrasted languages is sometimes not very easy. This is because the meaning of comparison may overlap the meaning of the manner of action/attendant circumstance expressed in the matrix clause. Cf.

She felt as gay and eager as if she were... playing her first small part. (Maugham)	Вона відчула себе такою веселою і життєрадісною, ніби грала... вже свою першу маленьку роль.

The meaning of the comparative groups of words "as gay and eager as if..." clearly includes comparison as well as manner of the action/ feeling of the girl (as if she were playing). Due to this, many grammarians traditionally do not separate these two types of subordinate clauses treating them as one group ("clauses of comparison/or manner" or as "clauses of degree)" [16. 295; 39, 287].

Typological Features of the Clauses of Condition (умови)

Adverbial clauses of condition in English and Ukrainian are characterised by several isomorphic features which may be of semantic or structural nature. Thus, these clauses in both languages can express a real or unreal condition referring to present, past or future. Also common are the types of conditional relationships in English sentences and in their Ukrainian equivalents, and the time of the action/event expressed in their matrix and in subordinate clauses. The latter are introduced in English by the following conjunctions and connectives: *if, unless, suppose/supposing, provided, in case, as though, on condition,* etc. corresponding to Ukrainian *якщо, якби, коли/б, аби, як, за умови якщо,* etc.

Mostly the same (preposed or postposed) is the placement/position of conditional clauses in the equivalent English and Ukrainian complex sentences of this type. Cf.

431

You can die *if you don't give up* *va-*	Ти помреш, *якщо не кинеш випи-*
drinking. (Hemingway)	*ти.*
If you want to be an actor...	*Якщо ти хочеш сіпати артис-том,*
I can't stop you. (Maugham)	...я не можу відраджувати тебе.

Apart from the conjunction *if* the conjunction *unless* often introduces the clauses of real condition (its Ukrainian equivalent *is якщо*):

...He (dog) would not go with me мною,	...він/собака ніколи не йшов за
unless I urged him to. (O'Dell)	*якщо я його не кликав.*
Unless my memory plays me a trick, his portrait... has already appeared in the Strand Magazine...	*Якщо мені не зраджує пам'ять,* його фотографія вже публікувалася в журналі "Стренд".

Conditional clauses can also be introduced by the connectives *"in case of"* and *"on condition that"* (in Ukrainian *"у випадку якщо" "за умови, якщо/коли"*):

I also gathered herbs from the hill above the spring *in case I should need them.* (O'Dell)	Я також назбирала трав на горбку біля джерела на випа-док, *якщо в них буде потреба.*
You can go swimming on condition *that you don't go too far from the ко*	Можеш іти купатися за умови, *якщо не відпливатимеш дале-*
river bank. (Hornby)	*від берега.*

Note. Allomorphism is observed in the transposition of present tense form to express future in English sub-clauses of condition which is not so in Ukrainian where in both clauses the future tense is used, eg: "If you *are* decent with me, I'll work for you." (Gardner) Якщо ти будеш порядним зі мною, я працюватиму на тебе.

Of common structure and nature in both contrasted languages are also clauses of unreal condition referring to present, past and future and joined to the matrix clause asyndetically, eg:

"Had the house been merely what is жуть,	*"Був би це просто, як ка-*
called a hermit house, you would ліз-	*покинутий будинок,* ви б за-
have reached it..." (Christie)	ли в нього по-іншому".

432

A specific feature of Ukrainian clauses of unreal condition is the use of the particles б, *би,* whereas in English a conditional meaning may be expressed by the phrase *"but for":* "But for your help we should not have finished in time." (Hornby). Cf. Якби/Коли б не твоя допомога...

Isomorphic in both languages is also the expression by conditional clauses (similar to some other clauses) together with some inherent accompanying adverbial meanings. The main of them in English and Ukrainian are the following three:

1. The temporal meaning (when the *if*-clause can be substituted for the *when*-clause):

I was not sure what I would do *if* Я не був певний у тому, що я ро- *the Aleuts came.* (O'Dell) бив би, *якби/коли б з'явилися алеу-ти.*

Cf. I was not sure what I would do *when* the Aleuts came.

2. The suppositional and temporal meaning:

If she should come, I shall ask her В разі, *якщо б/коли б вона* to wait. (Dreiser) *пришила,* я попрошу її зачека-ти.

The conjunction *if in* the sentence above may be equally substituted for the connective *when* with the same suppositional and conditional meanings: *When she should* come I shall ask her to wait.

3. A concessive accompanying meaning:

Miss O'Shanty had a way of ma- Міс О'Шенті вміла заглу-шити в
king you feel welcome *even if you* тобі протест, *навіть якби тебе* *came to be expelled.* (Hughes) *виключали з коледжу.*

The conditional and concessive meanings in this sentence are inseparably interwoven. As a result, *"even if"* may be substituted for *"even though "* (cf. *even though* you came to be expelled — навіть хоч би тебе виключили з коледжу).

Isomorphic is also the use of tenses in the matrix and in the conditional clauses of the contrasted languages, eg:

But *if they had been sent* by my Але *якби вони були послані мої-*

433

people to take me away, then *I should not hide.* (O'Dell)

ми людьми, щоб забрати мене, *тоді не слід би й ховатися.*

Here the past subjunctive passive in the conditional clause and the present subjunctive active in the matrix clause have their absolute temporal (and semantic) equivalents in Ukrainian ("якби вони *були послані",* "й не *слід би ховатися").*

Typological Features of the Concessive Clauses (допусту)

As has been shown above, concessive clauses in English and Ukraini an are closely connected semantically and structurally with conditional clauses. These clauses, however, modify the matrix clause as a whole and not a part of it, as is the case with conditional clauses. Besides, the meaning expressed in the concessive clause may often be in contrast to that expressed in the matrix clause, eg: *Though she did not know it,* she had the feeling for him of proprietary right. (London) Therefore, „she I had the feeling for him"... despite the fact that "she did not know it".

*

Of common semantic (and often even structural) nature are concessive conjunctions and connectives which express the respective meaning of the subordinate clauses. Accordingly there can be distinguished three groups of structurally and semantically common clauses conveying concessive meaning in English and Ukrainian. These are as follows:

1. Clauses of admitted concession (значення допусту) are joined to the matrix clause by the conjunctions *though, although (хоча, хоч)* in the initial and closing position in the sentence:

Though everyone was supposed to *be out town,* the grill-room was well filled. (Maugham)

Хоч усе місто, здавалося, *мало б бути на курортах,* ресторан був напхом напханий

It was determined, *although the salary was small,* that he must go. (Ibid.)

Було вирішено, *хоча ставка була низька,* що він мусить згоджуватися.

It wasn't a subject for joking, *though it had its humorous side.* (J. K. Jerome)

Це не було темою для жартів, *хоч вона й мала смішний підтекст.*

434

English concessive clauses introduced by compound pronouns and adverbs in **-ever** *(whoever, whatever, whenever,* etc.) express choice. The corresponding Ukrainian connectives always include the particle *б/би:*

Whatever race they were, they had had too much fun at our expense... нок (Hughes)	*Якої б раси вони не були,* вони дуже розважалися за наш раху- (на нашій кривді).
Wherever I went now..., I carried this weapon in a sling on my back. (O'Dell)	*Куди б я тепер не йшов,* я ніс цю зброю на ремінці за плечима.

2. Subordinate clauses of hypothetical concession are introduced by the same compound pronouns, adverbs and some other connectives. Their predicates either include modal verbs or have a strong implicit modal meaning. Consequently, the predicates in such sub-clauses may easily be substituted for a modal verbal predicate. For example:

However dull the women were, he]=[However dull the women *might be] he* was sitting next to her... (he was sitting next to her. Maugham)

The Ukrainian equivalent of this sub-clause has the same implicit modal meaning: Хоч би якими нудними були ці жінки (хай би якими нудними могли бути ці жінки), він залишався сидіти поруч з нею.

3. Concessive clauses of adversative or disjunctive meaning in English and Ukrainian can be introduced both syndetically and asyndetically:

Wait as he did. however, Carry did Керрі	*Скільки він не чекав,* однак,
not come. (Dreiser)	не прийшла.
No matter what passes, I must gut the dolphin. (Hemingway)	Що б там не сталося, (а) я мусив почистити вловлень макарень.

The adversative or disjunctive meaning can be expressed implicitly in the contrasted languages as well: *... whatever Clare does,* I shall stick by her. (Galsworthy) The matrix clause in this sentence has a clearly adversative meaning which can be proved by the insertion of the adversative conjunction *"but":* whatever Clare does, (but) I shall stick by her. Similarly in Ukrainian sentences: І хоч життя послало йому калюжу замість океану, (проте) душа в нього була моряцька. (Довженко) *Хай посивіло волосся,* (але/та) Серце моє, не сивій. (Сосюра)

4. Concessive clauses in English and Ukrainian can also express an accompanying conditional meaning: Cf. The more cautious members of Chicago society, *even if* they did not attend, then would hear and then would come an ultimate comment and decision. (Dreiser)

The conjunction *"even if"* has both the concessive (the main) and the conditional (if) meanings corresponding in this sentence to the Ukrainian composite conjunction *навіть якщо б/якби: навіть якби найбільш недовірливі члени чиказького товариства не прийшли... все ж було б оголошено останню думку й ухвалу.*

Concessive clauses with the additional implicit meaning of conditional are also observed in Ukrainian: Ждатиме його, хоч би (якби) й довго довелося ждати. (Гончар)

Typology of the Adverbial Clauses of Purpose (мети)

Subordinate clauses of purpose (мети) in both contrasted languages extend the matrix clause and point to the purposefulness of its action or state. Consequently, the sub-clause of purpose modifies the matrix clause as a whole. Complex sentences of this subtype, with the sub-clause of purpose modifying the matrix clause as a whole, are well exemplified in both contrasted languages:

He stopped talking that she might *not see her reaction.* (Maugham)	Він припинив розмову, аби вона *притлумила свою реакцію.*

One more typologically common subtype constitute the sub-clauses of purpose with mediating parts of the sentence in the matrix clause (usually the object or the adverbial modifier), eg:

He picked up an evening bag so *that I might see it.* (Christie)	Він підняв вечірню театральну сумочку, *щоб я могла роздивитись її.*

The subordinate clause here modifies the predicative centre of the matrix clause through the substantival object "bag" (сумка).

The adverbial parts of the matrix clause that mediate the modification

of its predicate by the sub-clause of purpose are usually those of time or place. For example:

...you could come to the theatre tonight *so that you can meet him.* (O.Wilde)	...ти міг би ввечері прийти до театру, *аби зустрітися з ним.*

A similar mediating adverbial modifier expressed by the phrase *"in time"* can be observed in the English sentence and in its Ukrainian equivalent below:

He had come *in time so that* he could tell the whole story about that все incident. (Christie)	Він з'явився *вчасно для того,* щоб детально розповісти про той випадок.

It should be added in conclusion that the conjunctions and phrases introducing the adverbial clause of purpose in English and Ukrainian are also of a common structural form. They are as follows:

that, so, so that, so as, lest, in order that, for fear that.	щоб/щоби, аби, щоб тільки, для того, щоб.

Typology of the Adverbial Clauses of Cause (причини)

Causative clauses in the contrasted languages express the reason, cause or motivation of the action expressed in the matrix clause. The subclauses may be introduced in both languages by the following conjunctions and connective phrases:

as, because, since, lest, seeing that, оскіль-	бо, оскільки, тому що,
considering that, for the reason у	ки/поскільки, через те, що;
that, in view of the fact, in so far тому,	зв'язку з тим що; завдяки
as/insofar as, by reason of.	що; що.

The position of causative clauses within the complex sentence is actually not fixed. They may occupy the initial, closing, or midposition in complex sentences of the contrasted languages. This can be seen from the following sentences:

Since I had a long way to go, I left them. (O'Dell)	*Оскільки мені було далеко йти,* я покинув їх.
Mor could not see her now. *as he gazed over the heads of his audience.* (Murdoch)	Мор не міг розгледіти її зараз, *бо він дивився поверх голів* аудиторії/присутніх.

Causative clauses in English and Ukrainian may be homogeneous:

"You only say this *because you are jealous, because you're in love with* сам *her yourself. "*(Ibid.)	"Ти кажеш це тільки тому, *що ти ревнуєш, тому що ти й* закоханий у неї."

The meaning of causative clauses in both contrasted languages is mostly predetermined by the conjunctions introducing them. Thus, the conjunction *"because"* and its Ukrainian equivalents *тому що (через те, що), бо* introduce clauses expressing real cause:

But somewhere... was a feeling of ж ever so slight contempt for Tom *because he was such a simple fool.* (Maugham)	Але десь в глибині душі... вона все ж зневажала Тома, *тому що він був такий простодушний дурник.*

English clauses introduced by the conjunctions *"since"* and *"as"* (*оскільки*) express a motivation or an explanatory meaning, eg:

Since Christine was included in the ce- *invitation also,* they said good night to Mr. Llewelin... (Cronin)	Оскільки Крістін також була *ред запрошених,* то вони попро- щались із паном Ллевеліном...

One more typologically common feature of causative sub-clauses introduced by the conjunction *"that" (що)* is their ability to express in both languages the resultative meaning of the state of the performer (agent) of the action in the matrix clause. Cf:

.. .I felt a little foolish *that I should be sitting in the grand stand at all.* му (Anderson)	Я почувався дещо глупо, *що мені випало сидіти в почесно- му секторі.*

438

An allomorphic feature in the system of causative clauses finds its expression in the existence in Ukrainian of one-member definite personal or impersonal clauses like Не писав я до тебе в останні два дні, *тому що був у дорозі.* (Коцюбинський) Боїться смерті, *тому що нема за що вмирати.* (Довженко)

The causative meaning in such sentences is never complicated by any accompanying meanings as it was observed above in English and in the same Ukrainian subordinate clauses of purpose.

Typology of the Subordinate Clauses of Result (наслідку)

Subordinate clauses of result (наслідкові підрядні речення) are characterised in English and Ukrainian by a number of common features. Thus, the clauses are introduced by semantically and functionally equivalent conjunctions (so, so *that, therefore, as a result, seeing that — так що, тож/отож, внаслідок того що).* Some of these conjunctions and connectives introduce clauses expressing the adverbial meaning of result only, as, for instance, the conjunction *so that* and its Ukrainian equivalent *так що:*

She got quickly up, shaking the пи- yellow tree, *so that it showered its petals again over my typewriter.* мою (Greene)	Вона, швидко встаючи, зачела жовте дерево, *так що його пелюстки знову сипнули на друкарську машинку.*

The conjunction *so* or the adverbial connector *therefore,* and their Ukrainian equivalent *отож/тож,* introduce clauses of result which have an accompanying causal meaning. Cf.

The wild dogs could not attack me пас- from any of these directions, *so I lay on the earth and drank...* (O'Dell)	Здичавілі собаки не могли напати на мене з жодного боку, *тож я лежав на землі і пив з джерела.*

The subject "I" of the matrix clause, as a result of there being no danger (and because of it as well), "lay on the earth and drank". And in

Ukrainian: "Я лежав і пив... внаслідок того (і тому що) собаки не могли напасти на мене".

Of isomorphic nature in both languages are also clauses of result with an inherent meaning of comparison, eg:

The reply was so theatrical *that* її відповідь була така театрально-
Fred began to chuckle. (Maugham) штучна, *що Фред Гарді аж захихикав.*

The adverbial meaning of comparison in the sentences above is partly expressed by the adverbial word-group "so theatrical... that" (така театрально-штучна, що).

Other Isomophic and Allomorphic Features in the System of the Composite Sentences in English and Ukrainian

It should be noted in conclusion, that composite sentences in the contrasted languages have some more isomorphic features to be marked. The main ones are as follows: the existence of indistinct/ mutually subordinating clauses in some complex sentences and 2) the existence of a variety of common types of ties which the subordinate clauses may have in polycomponental complex sentences of the two contrasted languages.

The Complex Sentences with Mutually Subordinated Clauses

This kind of complex sentences is of isomorphic nature. Such sentences usually consist of two clauses mutually subordinating each other. Hence, it is impossible to state which of the clauses is the main (subordinating) and which is the subordinate one. The kind of proportional relationship of equivalence between the clauses can be observed in the complex sentences expressing in English and Ukrainian the adverbial meanings of degree, result or time. The two former types of clauses are joined by the connectors *"so", "so...so",* by the conjunction *"as",* or by the correlating particles *the...the,* corresponding to the Ukrainian *як...так, куди...туди, що/чим більше... то/тим більше.* Cf.

As the tree falls, so shall it lie. (Proverb) Як дерево впаде, так воно й лежати-
ме.

Both clauses in the English and Ukrainian sentences above express an adverbial meaning of manner (attendant circumstances) answering the question: "how does the tree fall and how shall it lie?" The clauses depend on each other grammatically and semantically, neither of them exercising a subordinating power. Hence, one can reconstruct, i. e. transform the sentence without changing its syntactic status: So shall it (the tree) lie,as it falls.

Subordinate only are also clauses expressing comparison as in the following English sentence and its Ukrainian equivalent:

The more I knew of the inmates of Moor House, the better I liked them. (Bronte)

Чим більше я дізнавався про жителів Болотного Дому, тим більше вони подобались мені.

The mutually subordinated clauses expressing temporal relations can be introduced in the initial and in the succeeding clauses by the following correlating pairs of connectors: *no sooner...than, scarcely...when/before, hardly I just. ..when* and others. Their corresponding Ukrainian connectives are *ледве...як, як тільки....як/коли, не...як.* Eg:

Hardly have we got into the country, як
when it began to rain. (S. Chaplin) ми

Не встигли ми виїхати за місто, розпочався дощ/Ледве встигли
виїхати за місто, як почався дощ.

Nell had scarcely settled herself on a little heap of straw in the corner, when she fell asleep for the first time that day. (Dickens)

Ледве Нел схилила голову на купку соломи в кутку, як вона вперше за цілу добу заснула.

Types of Grammatical Ties between Clauses in English and Ukrainian Composite Sentences

Isomorphism and allomorphism in the system of composite sentences find their expression first and foremost in the realisation of the syntactic connection of their componental parts, i. e. clauses. As to the isomorphic types of composite sentences, they are amply represented in both contrasted languages in the following three varieties: 1) the polycomponen-

441

tal compound sentences; 2) the polycomponental complex sentences; 3) the compound extended sentences; 4) the complex-compound and 5) the compound-complex sentences.

Each of these common varieties of the composite sentence may have either a syndetic or asyndetic way of joining their clauses. Of typological relevance are found to be the following three most often observed common forms of realisation of subordinate dependence:
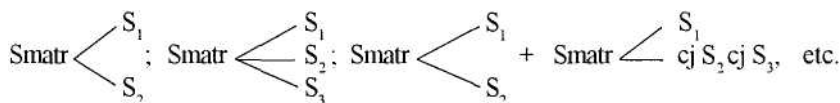
a) the consecutive form of dependence as in the following complex-compound sentence: 1 am sure < I don't know < whether or not it is true < that all advertising writers and newspaper men want to do other kinds of writing, + but Ed did all right. (Anderson) The structural pattern of this sentence in both languages reveals a consecutive connection between their sub-clauses: Smatr < Sobj < Sobj < Sobj + co-cjS but Sco-ordinate.

Here each succeeding clause in the complex part of the sentence is subordinate to the preceding clause. Hence, the form of dependence is lineal or direct: Smatr < S_1 < S_2 + co-cjS. Consequently, the clauses are in the first, in the second, third, etc. degree of subordination. The sub-clauses with a lineal/consecutive dependence may also be of different types as in the following polycomponental complex sentence: The young man was leaning against the mantelshelf... with that strange expression < that one sees on the faces of those < who are absorbed by a play < when some great artist is acting. (Wilde) An identical consecutive dependence of clauses (супідрядність) can also be observed in Ukrainian: Тільки з переказів сухий гомін доходить, < що копали цей колодязь колись чумаки, < чиї дороги пролягли в цих сивих степах. (Гончар)

Similarly in the compound-complex sentence, where there may be a non-lineal and lineal form of dependence between the clauses. Cf. "It was said < that you could always find a way... < for the production of a play, + but when you came down to business < you discovered < that the main condition was < that the leading part should be played by some pretty lady < in whom he was interested." (Maugham) The form of dependence between the sub-clauses in both parts of this compound-complex sentence is identical in English and in its Ukrainian equivalent: Smatr < Ssubj co-cj but Sadv < Smatr < Sobj < Spre-dic N < Sattriburive.

The existence of different forms or rather directions of dependence

can be best observed in polycomponental complex sentences with homogeneous clauses, whose number may range from two to several. Hence, their possible forms of structural patterns may be as follows:

$$\text{Smatr} \diagdown\diagup \begin{matrix} S_1 \\ S_2 \end{matrix}\,; \quad \text{Smatr} \Longleftarrow \begin{matrix} S_1 \\ S_2 \\ S_3 \end{matrix};\quad \text{Smatr} \diagdown\diagup \begin{matrix} S_1 \\ S_2 \end{matrix} + \text{Smatr} \diagup\!\!\diagdown \begin{matrix} S_1 \\ \text{cj } S_2, \text{cj } S_3, \end{matrix}\ \text{etc.}$$

Isomorphic in English and Ukrainian and presumably in other Indo-European languages are the following patterns of composite sentences: A.Jan asked nurse Duggin every day < 1) when she came, < 2) < whether the doctor had sent any word. (Cusack) Джейн пита- ла медсестру Даггін щодня; <1) коли вона прийшла, < 2) чи лікар нічого не переказував.

B. Other judgements were 1) < that the lectures were of no impor- tance; 2) < that nobody took them; < 3) that they don't matter; < 4) that you can take them < 5) if you like; < 6) that they do you no harm. (Leacock)

This complex sentence has a structurally equivalent pattern with six homogeneous predicative clauses in Ukrainian too. Інші суджен- ня були:

1) що лекції не мають жодного значення; 2) що на них ніхто не ходить; 3) що їх ніхто не бере серйозно до уваги; 4) що їх хто хоче, той відвідує; 5) що відвідування їх не шкодить нічийому здоров'ю. The structural pattern of the sentence has the following form:

$$\text{Smatrix} \Longleftarrow \begin{matrix} S_1 \\ S_2 \\ S_3 \\ S_4 \\ S_5 \end{matrix}$$
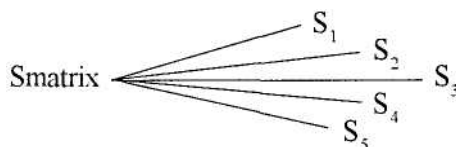
b) Isomorphic in the contrasted languages are also polycomponen- tal complex sentences with an inverted order of their clauses. Thus, in the affirmative complex sentence below the matrix clause follows the attributive sub-clause: The moment < 1) that he heard Mr. Golspie's visitor going < 2) he would rush out, tell Mr. Golspie < 3) she was there, and thus see her again. (Priestley)

Similarly in Ukrainian: Тієї ж миті, < 1) коли він зачував кроки відвідувача з кабінету містера Ґолспі, < 2) він вибігав, доповідав Ґолспі, < 3) що вона ще там і знову повертався до неї.

The structural pattern of this sentence in both contrasted languages has an identical form: namely: NP < Sattr < Smatr. < Sobj + co-cj + predic. construction.

Such homogeneous sub-clauses are mostly used in the polycomponental complex sentence where they are joined to the matrix clause in English syndetically or asyndetically, the former way being more frequently observed than the latter.

a) Practically allomorphic for the Ukrainian syntactic system is the existence of polycomponental composite sentences with the tagged/concluding disjunctive clauses. Cf. I think < you told < you were in the services, didn't you? (Cusack) The interrogative tag-clause "didn't you?" refers to the objective sub-clause "you told," which is clearly reflected in the structural pattern of this polycomponental sentence. Namely:

```
                        /    Sobj     Smatr
------------------ Sobj ----/-- tag-clause
```

Its structural equivalent in Ukrainian is a two-componental complex sentence with tag-words (так? правда?) or tag-phrases (чи не так? правда ж?) instead of the subordinate clause which is in the English original.

Cf. I think < you < told < you were in the services, *didn't you?* (Cusack)	Мені здається, < ти казав, < що ти служив у війську, *чи не так?*

A specific feature of such sentences in Ukrainian, however, is their possible "inverted" / transformed structure with the tag-words/phrase in the initial position which is impossible in English — Правда ж ти казав, здається, що (ти) служив у війську?

These were only the main and therefore far from all the isomorphic and allomorphic features characterising the types and paradigmatic classes of these syntactic level units in present-day English in comparison to the

corresponding Ukrainian composite sentences of these types.

Generally isomorphic in both languages are also the main features pertaining to the highest language units which are to be partly contrasted on the forthcoming pages.

Typology of the Supersyntactic Units

The supersyntactic unit or the "superphrasal whole," as it is sometimes termed, is hierarchically the highest syntactic unit in all languages. It consists of some simple or composite (or both — simple and composite) sentences united around a concluded piece of information which expresses some completed content. The semantic interrelations formed between the component sentences of such units are partly similar to those existing between the clauses of a complex sentence and may be temporal, causal, concessive, disjunctive, etc. These semantic interrelations in English and Ukrainian supersyntactic units are formed by phonological, grammatical and lexical means which include various types of intonation patterns, different conjunctions/connectors, joining lower syntactic units and words in them, nouns, pronouns, pronominal adverbs. Of importance at the deep level are also such phenomena as the correlation of predicative structure and verb forms with their complements, etc.

The general principles according to which different types of their component sentences are logically connected in the supersyntactic units of the contrasted languages are mainly two: 1) the parallel connection and 2) the catenated (ланцюговий) or consecutive connection. Each of these ways may be used in a supersyntactic unit separately or in combination with each other. The choice of the way of connection for a super-syntactic unit is predetermined by the main meaning to be expressed. Thus, a parallel connection is employed to express relations of enumeration, comparison or contrasting. These sense relations are expressed through the structural parallelism of the component sentences forming the supersyntactic unit. The component sentences thus connected usually express recurrent actions/events, state of objects/events, etc. As a result, the English supersyntactic units have mostly structural and sense

equivalents in Ukrainian and vice versa, as in the following complex sentences which may equally be due to their sense completion a small supersyntactic unit:

It was nine o'clock when we finished breakfast and went out on the porch.	Була дев'ята година, коли ми поснідали і вийшли на ґанок.

The supersyntactic unit may be larger, comprising some sentences, cf.

The night had made a sharp difference in the weather and there was an autumn flavor in the air. The gardener, the last one of Gatsby's former servants, came to the foot of the steps. (Fitzgerald)	Ніч внесла різку зміну в погоду і в повітрі духмяніли пахощі осені. До підніжжя сходів підійшов садівник - останній з колишньої прислуги Ґетсбі.

The cited supersyntactic unit consists of three parallel affirmative statements each of which expresses an event vaguely connected with each other. The first statement *(In was nine o'clock...)* performs a kind of logical introduction, the second *(The night had made a sharp difference in the weather...)* adds a new piece of information and the third sentence *(The gardener came to the foot of the steps)* makes the structure and the general content of this syntactic whole complete.

The catenated way of logical connection between the component sentences of a supersyntactic whole is mostly realised through a repeated use of a lexical unit (sometimes a functional word), which serves as a linking element combining the succeeding sentence with the preceding one and thus cementing the content of the supersyntactic unit. Such a linking function is often performed in English and Ukrainian by personal or demonstrative pronouns, which can be observed in the following supersyntactic unit below:

Friday before the journey *he* went into his pub to get a pint. *He* had been working hard all day in the fields and *he* wanted a pint. *He* was	У п'ятницю перед подорожжю *він* зайшов до пабу на кухоль пива. *Він* увесь день пропрацював V полі і *йому* захотілося пива.

446

| cleaned up and shone like a pair of shoes. *He* had never been so particular with his appearance. (Macken) | *Він* прибрався і сяяв, як новий шеляг. *Він* ніколи ще так не вифранчувався. |

All five sentences in the English supersyntactic unit and in its Ukrainian equivalent are linked syntactically and semantically by the personal pronoun *"he" /"він"* and its paradigmatic form *"йому"*. The pronoun he *"catenates"* each succeeding component sentence with the preceding one and makes the syntactic whole intact.

Also common in the contrasted languages are supersyntactic units with a parallel connection between the component sentences which contain a linking personal pronoun thus having a regular mixed-type connection. Cf.

| *His voice* was solemn, as if the memory of that sudden extinction of a clan still haunted *him.* For a moment I suspected that *he* was pulling my leg, but a glance *of him* convinced me otherwise. (Fitzgerald) | *Він* говорив поважно, так ніби згадка про те раптове вимирання клану все ще переслідувала його, Якусь мить я навіть подумав, що *він* дурить мені голову, та *його* погляд переконував мене у протилежному. |

Other morphological means, as, for instance, tense and aspect forms of the verb, may often be used as means of cementing sentences in supersyntactic units. [Плющ 2001:415-416]

From what has been shown in this chapter of the book the attentive reader could not have failed to notice the existence of predominantly isomorphic features and phenomena in the system of the syntactic level units in the English and Ukrainian languages. Certainly the most conspicuous is the existence of the hierarchical nature of these units in both contrasted languages. This can be seen from the table below presenting the nomenclature of all types of the syntactic level units of both contrasted languages in their nominal surface structures.

As can be noticed, allomorphism is observed at the surface level in the lack of several secondary predication word-groups in the Ukrainian language which are pertained to the present-day English.

Table 29

Hierarchical Distribution of Syntactic Level Unit

Syntactic units	Word-Groups				Sentences			Supersyntactic Units		
	Types of Syntactic Connection				Structural Types			Types of Inter-connection		
Language	Co-ordinate	Subordinate	Primary Predication Word-Groups	Secondary Predication Word-Groups	Simple	Composite	Intermediary between Simple and Composite	Parallel Connection	Catenated Connection	Mixed-Type Connection
English	+	+	+	+	+	+	+	+	+	+
Ukrainian	+	+	+	±	+	+	+	+	+	+

This is marked in the given table (in the word-group) by the ± sign which testifies to the existence of secondary predication word-group as well as of some syntactically isomorphic intermediaries between simple and composite sentences both in English and in present-day Ukrainian. As can be seen in the table, several deep structure syntactic phenomena are also common in both contrasted languages. These are: 1) co-ordination, subordination and predication; 2) the existence of predominantly common structural types of higher syntactic level units and partly common ways and means of their connection at the syntactic level in the contrasted languages and 3) the existences within the framework of English and Ukrainian supersyntactic speech units.

Hence the most general summery/conclusion:

1. Any contrastive typological investigation aims at establishing iso morphism and allomorphism in the systems of lingual phenomena and the characteristic features pertained to them in the contrasted languages.

2. The main aim of aspect and charactereological typologies is to establish isomorphism and allomorphism in the structural forms of the investigated language units and in the ways and means of connecting their componental parts as well as the means and ways of expressing

their sense/meaning in the contrasted languages.

3. Aspective and charactereological typologies, as could be seen, also aim at establishing the quantitative and qualitative correlation between the isomorphic and allomorphic features and phenomena in the contrast ed languages under investigation.

4. Typologically relevant for the establishment of isomorphic traits in genealogically different languages can also be a contrastive historical approach to some lingual facts within a single language aspect of the contrasted languages. The existence of such facts, as in case of Ukrai nian and Sanskrit, speak in favour of the establishment of a new linguistic subject of historical contrastive typology.

Topics for Self-Testing and Individual Preparation

1. Features and phenomena serving as typological constants at the syntactic level in the contrasted languages.

2. Isomorphism and allomorphism in the correlation of the means of grammatical expressing the syntactic relations in English and Ukrainian.

3. Quantitative and qualitative correlation of the means and ways of syntactic connection in present-day English vs. present-day Ukrainian syntactic units.

4. Isomorphism and allomorphism in the types of syntactic processes and in the forms of their realisation in the syntactic units of the contrast ed languages.

5. Isomorphism and allomorphism in the nature, structure, and syn tactic ways of connection in the existing types of word-groups of the contrasted languages.

6. Common and divergent features of predicative word-groups in En glish and Ukrainian.

7. Isomorphism and allomorphism in the structure and nature of mor phological (paradigmatic) classes of word-groups in the contrasted lan guages .

8. Isomorphic and allomorphic features in the structure and ways of connection in substantival word-groups of the contrasted languages.

9. Isomorphic and allomorphic features in the ways of connection

and in the structural forms of substantival, adjectival, pronominal and numerical word-groups in English vs. Ukrainian.

10. Common and divergent features in the forms of connection and in the combinability of components in English and Ukrainian verbal word-groups.

11. Isomorphism and allomorphism in the structure, form, means of connection and in the combinability of component parts in adverbial and statival word-combinations of the contrasted languages.

12. Isomorphic and allomorphic features in the structural forms of English and Ukrainian one- and two-member sentences.

13. Isomorphism and allomorphism in the nature and structural forms of simple, formal (if any) expanded/extended and complex parts of the sentence in the contrasted languages.

14. Typological characteristics of the detached, parenthetic and in serted parts of the sentence and elements in the contrasted languages.

15. Isomorphism and allomorphism in the structural forms and means of expressing the principal parts of the sentence in English and Ukrainian.

16. Typological characteristics of the secondary parts of the sen tence. Isomorphism and allomorphism in the structural forms of the ob ject and the attribute in the contrasted languages.

17. Isomorphism and allomorphism in the structural forms of the ad verbial parts of the sentence in the contrasted languages.

18. The detached secondary parts of the sentence in the contrasted languages.

19. Typology of the composite sentence in the contrasted lan- guages. The compound sentence in English and Ukrainian.

20. Typology of the complex sentence. Isomorphic and allomorphic features in the structure of nominal/N-clauses of the contrasted lan- guages.

21. Quasi - sentences and intermediaries between simple and com posite sentences in English and Ukrainian.

22. Isomorphic and allomorphic features in the structural types of attributive clauses of the contrasted languages.

23. Typology of adverbial clauses in the contrasted languages.

24. Kinds of grammatical ties between clauses in English and Ukrai nian composite sentences.

25. Typological characteristics of the supersyntactic level units in English and Ukrainian.

Exercises for Class and Homework

Exercise 1. Identify the nature of the head words and name the paradigmatic classes of the following English and Ukrainian word-groups:

cane sugar production, the House of Commons debate, you British, the way out, the wish to win; no go, yes man, the then trial; reading quickly; busy doing sums, red from anger, black all over, quick to answer, heavy for me to lift, simply awful, typically English, least of all, much older than he/ Pete; the first to read, the three there, two to one, three fifths; the last ones; rather well; high up in the sky, quite alike, afraid of being asked first, not ashamed to answer, the child ashamed; the book there, nobody to report, the one ahead, twice as many, more than necessary, extremely cold/nice, being home, by going westwards.

вибір твору, фільм "Тіні забутих предків", питання праці й заробітку, ви англійці, бажання знати; рано встати, читавши книжку; гарної вроди, краща з кращих; радий чути, готовий до всього; все для них, всі ми; перший з нас, один з учнів, другий скраю; надто швидко, довго попоходити; дві третіх, перші два, три з них, перший до розмови, одного з учнів; хтозна-скільки їх там, щонайменше двічі на тиждень, багато що, високо в небі, набагато довше за Петра, гарно тут; їй краще, мені прикро, страх бере.

Exercise II. State the ways of syntactic connection (synthetic, analytical and synthetic or analytical) in the underlined word-groups in the English and counteropposed Ukrainian sentences. Point out the qualitative correlation of the ways of syntactic connection and their dominant (or otherwise) role in each contrasted language. **Model:** *your grandfather* - a substantival word-group with the analytical (asyndetic) way of connection playing a dominant role in English: читала з захопленням -a verbal word-group with the analytical (preposition з) and synthetic (inflexion-ям) way of connection, dominant in Ukrainian.

1. "Your grandfather died **the day** *you were born. "* (Galsworthy) *2.* Barbara *sits* **at the writing table.** (B. Shaw)

"Твій дід помер у той день, як/коли *ти народився* Барбара *сидить* за письмовим столом.

451

3. The doctor **looked at him** *attentively...* (Christie)	Лікар *уважно* **подивився на нього.**
4. Jemie **lay back on the clean white sheet.** (Sheldon)	Джемі *знову* **приліг на чисте біле простирадло.**

Exercise III. Suggest a corresponding Ukrainian equivalent for each predicate in the English sentences below. Single out the isomorphic and allomorphic structural types of them in the two languages.

1. He began hurriedly dressing. 2. "I'll have you at the hospital in no time". 3. "Everything is going to be fine". 4. "I won't say anything to Alexandra". 5. "This will be just between the two of us". 6. She locked herself and her baby in the room all that day and all that night and refused to come out. (Sheldon) 7. "You've gone white". (Chase) 8. "I'll be all right tomorrow". 9. "Don't look so damned sorry for yourself". 10. "Pull yourself together and try to eat something". (Christie) 11. "All I want is for competent medical experts to give the outfit a thorough trial". (Carter) 12. "Let this prescription made at the chemist's". (Cusack) 13. All furniture was cracked, warped or broken. (Bennett) 14. Clyde began to feel and look crushed at once. (Dreiser) 15. "But there is a deeper trouble still". (Leacock) 16. ...Taffy sat down most pleased. (Kipling) 17. I was supposed to help him in repairs and service... (M. Wilson) 18. ...how little was there to remember inversion. (Poe) 19. I ought to have been in bed a long time ago. (Lawrence) 20. "I wouldn't look like Giraffe — not for ever so". (Kipling) 21. I seem to be getting over it a little. (M. Wilson) 22. ...the fetters that bound their tongues were considered to be locked and the key thrown away. (Twain) 23. One of her most amiable traits was that she was never affronted by the naked truth. (Maugham) 24. "Splendid game cricket," remarked Barbecue-Smith. (Huxley)

Exercise IV. Give corresponding Ukrainian equivalents to all parts of the English sentences below. Identify the isomorphic or allomorphic features in their structural forms and nature in either of the contrasted languages.

1. Mr. Smith smiled a happy smile. (Priestley) 2. The man behind the

desk laughed. (Bradbury) 3. I'm sorry about the clock. (Fitzgerald) 4. I've been having lunch with Mr. Gatsby. (Ibid.) 5. None of his girls would have said such a thing. (Galsworthy) 6. The man must have been dead a week. (Green) 7. Erik says that you may be coming to New York. (M. Wilson) 8. You should be a Greek. (Aldridge) 9. The rear was brought up by Oleson, the Swede. 10. The temperature rose, and soon the snow began to fall dry and fine and crystallike. (London) 11. "His huge form shook as he gave a laugh, low, silent". 12. He uttered no word, good or bad, but sat quite still. There, at the front, he was popular in the regimental mess... (Maugham) 13. He saw that someone was watching him, standing in the shadow of one of the trees. (Murdoch) 14. Years ago, Jim used to travel for a canned goods concern over in Carterville. (Lardner) 15. And he began to purr, loud and low, low and loud. (Kipling) 16. He realised that much, no more. (F. Hardy) 17. Anyone else, but him... (Ibid.) 18. She was a tall girl, as tall as himself. (W. Macken) 19. All happened many years ago, namely in 1832. (Aldiss) 20. Alice, however, declined the driving... (Trollope) 21. The dog barked again, fiercely this time. (Steinbeck) 22. As the man lives so shall he die, as the tree falls so shall it lie. (Saying)

Exercise V. Point out and analyse the English predicative word-groups in the sentences below and suggest their corresponding Ukrainian semantic and structural equivalents.

1. She did not want him to be laughed at. (Cronin) 2. He waited for her to speak, but she did not. (Ibid.) 3. For about ten days we seemed to have been living on nothing but cold meat, cake, and bread and jam. (J. K. Jerome) 4. We saw behind us thousands and thousands of white gulls, dipping, wheeling, brushing the water with their wings. (Galsworthy) 5. He saw himself and Ruth reading and discussing poetry. (London) 6. That being so, then he could rise to Ruth. (Ibid.) 7. After the data being obtained, the crystal was taken from the oil-bath. (M. Wilson) 8. He sat up suddenly, his muscular tensity in laughing aloud and the laugh being carried by the wind away from me. (Saroyan) 9. "Even Mummy could't mistake that for me being killed". (Kipling)

Exercise VI. Suggest Ukrainian equivalents for the English simple and composite sentences below. Point out isomorphisms or allomorphisms in the corresponding communicative/structural types of sentences in the contrasted languages.

1. It's funny that your husband should never look at you. 2. "I may be very stupid, but I can't make head or tail out of what you're saying". (Maugham) 3. "And I'm glad you came to us, Mademoiselle Marchand". 4. The white young woman. (Updike) 5. That was my father's ship passing over the town. (Bradbury) 6. It's the only way, you know. (Greene) 7. But I couldn't keep my goddam eyes open and I fell asleep. 8. Is she to take it that everything is O'K? (Salinger) 9. You could hear him putting away his crumby toilet articles and all. (Ibid.) 10. To Roberta, since he wouldn't her, he was telephoning briefly. (Dreiser) 11. His house was too far away for anyone to come to meet him. (Cusack) 12. "I am very fond of being looked at". (Wilde) 13. I wish, I were Pyle. (Greene) 14. Oh, if I only could go back to my flower basket. (B. Shaw) 15. "Why start tomorrow?" (Warren) 16. To do one's bit, and not worry? (Galsworthy) 17. Eat the orange in her hand, and throw away the rind. (Ibid.) 18. "Get the hell out of here". (Maugham) 19. "Oh, I beg your pardon". (Fitzgerald) 20. "Has she the children then?" "Yes". (Maugham) 21. "Are you very angry with me?" "No. Not all". (Ibid.) 22. *Sweetie,* I don't honestly like this very much." (F. King) 23. *Diana!* How lovely!"
24. *Bob,* give me a hand with this screen... Would you, Bob?" (Ibid.)
25. "Seen a doctor, *Charlie-boy? "Yes."* (Jessing) 26. "Have you got a girl?" "Two." 27. "You ambidextrous?" "Yes, always was." 28. "You should be saying these things to him." "What?" (Ibid.)

Exercise VII. Analyse the structure of the English complex sentences and their counteropposed Ukrainian equivalents below and identify the types of the English sub-clauses and the allomorphic features in the structural forms of some sentences of the contrasted languages.

1. I wish I knew how to reward you. (Seton-Thompson)	Знав би я/хотів би я знати, як вам віддячити.

2. "I wish you'd tell him how sorry I am to hear he's laid up". (Priestley)
3. If you had not said that last I would have put all these things away for always. (Ibid.)
4. Still I remember how it looked and how it was used. (O'Dell)
5. I hope he is not very dear to you. (Baldwin)
6. We'll look for today, if you want to. (Ibid.)
7. "We'll go and live in New York, if you say". (Dreiser)
8. Oh, if she only could have such a part, how broad would be her life. (Ibid.)
9. Ah, 1 wish I were fifteen again. (Maugham)
10. Whom God would ruin, he first deprives of reason.
11. Who goes more bare than the shoemaker's wife and the smith's mare?
12. When the rogues (thieves) fall out honest men come by their own.
13. While the grass grows, the horse (steed) starves.
14. Little griefs are loud, great griefs are silent. (Idioms)
15. Suddenly, like a clap of thunder from a clear sky, comes a disruption in industry. (London)
16. "What man has done, man can do." (H. Wells)

Хочу, щоб ви переказали йому, як я жалкую, що він вийшов із гри. Якби ти був не сказав мені це наостанку, я б усе це був назавжди покинув... Однак я пригадую, який він був і як ним (човном) плавали. Сподіваюся, ти не дуже шкодуєш за ним.
Ми можемо сьогодні ще пошукати, якщо хочеш. Якщо захочете, ми переїдемо жити до Нью-Йорка. О, якби їй таку роль — яким багатим стало б її життя. О, я б хотіла, аби мені знову було п'ятнадцять років. Кого бог хоче покарати, того він найперше позбавляє його розуму. Хто найчастіше ходить у драних черевиках, як не швецева дружина. Коли шахраї (злодії) сваряться, виграють чесні/порядні люди. Доки сонце зійде, роса очі виїсть.

Мала біда кричить, а велика (біда) мовчить.
Раптом, як грім серед ясного неба, з'являються негаразди в промисловості.
Людина робить те, що вона може. (Не святі горшки ліплять)

Exercise VIII. Analyse carefully each of the three (A.B.C.) structural types of Ukrainian composite sentences, translate them into English and give the surface models reflecting the interdependence of their coordinated or subordinated componental parts.

A. 1. Не загримів ні грім у хмарах, ні зловісні блискавиці не розкраяли неба врочистим спалахом, ні не повивертали з корінням мо-

455

гутніх столітніх дубів. (Довженко) 2. Лиш небо гуде неокрає, Та сім'я журавлина на крилах весну підіймає, Та ясними ночами зорі світять мечами, на Дону, на Дніпрі, на Дунаї. (Малишко) 3. То вітерець дихне по ниві, То коник в житі засюрчить, То радісно бджола з добутком, з квітки, задзижчить. (Глібов) 4. І колишеться м'ята, і тремтить долина, і доріг тих багато, А вітчизна одна. (Малишко) 5. Чи щось сказати хоче, чи так душа болить, чи розгнівалась на когось, чи все разом бентежиться в її вразливій натурі. (Шумило)

В. 1. Не поет, хто забуває про страшні народні рани, щоб собі на вільні руки золоті надіть кайдани. (Л. Українка) 2. Там, де Личка круто в'ється, де хати в садах, де носила мене мати в поле на руках, там я знаю кожну стежку, кожен камінець, там узяв я пісню в серце із людських сердець. 3. Я жив би двічі і помер би двічі, Якби було нам два життя дано, Щоб ворогові глянути у вічі, Не зганьбленим зберігши знамено. (Бажан)

С. 1. Ідуть од шахти шахтарі, А даль така широка та іскриста Там, де рум'яна стежка од зорі Біжить в село, що стало уже містом. (Сосюра) 2. Така там була температура, так мене парою проймало, стільки крові з мене вийшло, що я відчув себе здоровим. (Яновсь-кий) 3. Осяяні місяцем гори блищать, Осрібляні місяцем сосни шумлять, А море і сердиться і лає вітри, що нишком його підслухують з гори. (Олесь)

BIBLIOGRAPHY

1. *Аракин В. Д.* Сравнительная типология английского и русского языка. -М., 1989.

2. *Багмут А. Й.* Семантика й інтонація в українській мові. -К., 1991.

3. *Барроу Т.* Санскрит. -М: Прогресс, 1976.

4. *Бархударов Л. С.* Структура простого предложения в современ ном английском языке. -М., 1966.

5. *Бріцин М. Я. Жовтобрюх М. А., Майборода А. В.* Порівняльна граматика української та російської мов. -К., 1978.

6. *Бровченко Т. О.* Основи контрастивного аналізу мов. // По рів-няльні дослідження з граматики англійської, української, ро сійської мов. -К., 1981.

7. *Бурлакова Н. В.* Основы структуры словосочетания в современ ном английском языке. -Л., 1975.

8. *Васильев В. А., Катанская А. Р. и др.* Фонетика английского языка. -М., 1980.

9. *Винницький В. М.* Наголос у сучасній українській мові. -К., 1984.

10. *Воронцова Г. Н.* Вторичная предикативность в английском язы ке. // Иностр. яз. в шк. 1950, № 6.

11. *Жлуктенко Ю. О.* Порівняльна граматика української та анг-лій ської мов. - К., 1960.

12. *Жлуктенко Ю. О., Бублик В. Н.* Контрастивна лінгвістика: Про блеми і перспективи. // Мовознавство. 1976, № 4.

13. *Жовтобрюх М. А.* Українська літературна мова. -К., 1984.

14. *Зятковская Р. Г.* Суффиксальная система современного анг-лий ского языка. - М., 1971.

15. *Иванова И. П. Бурлакова В. В., Почепцов Г. Г.* Теоретическая грамматика современного английского языка. - М., 1981.

16. *Ильиш Б.* Строй современного английского языка. -Л., 1971.

17. *Исаченко А.* Опыт типологического анализа славянских язы-ков // Новое в лингвистике. -М., 1963. Вып. 3.

18. *Калинович М. Я.* Вступ до мовознавства. -К., 1947.

19. *Кобрина Н. А., Корнеева Е. А. и др.* Грамматика английского языка: Синтаксис. -М., 1986.

20. *Коренецкая В. Я.* Супплетивизм в германских языках. -М., 1978.
21. *Мороховский А. Н., Воробьёва О. П. и др.* Стилистика англий ского языка. -К., 1984.
22. Морфема и проблемы типологии. - М.: Наука, 1991.
23. Нариси з контрастивної лінгвістики. - К., 1979.
24. *Наливайко С.* Таємниці розкриває санскрит. - К.: Просвіта, 2000.
25. Новое в лингвистике. - М., 1970. Вып. 5.
26. Порівняльні дослідження з граматики англійської, української, російської мов. - К., 1981.
27. *Сепир Э.* Избранные труды по языкознанию... - М., 1993.
28. *Скаличка В.* К вопросу о типологии // Вопр. языкознания. 1968. №4.
29. *Соколова М. А.* Теоретическая фонетика английского языка. - М.: "Высшая школа", 1991
30. Сучасна українська літературна мова: За редакцією Грищен ка А. П. -Київ: "Вища школа", 2002
31. Сучасна українська літературна мова: За редакцією Плющ М. Я. - Київ: "Вища школа", 2001
32. Сучасна українська літературна мова: Фонетика. Морфологія. Синтаксис. - К., 1969-1972.
33. *Уфимцева А. А.* Лексическое значение // Принципы семиологи ческого изучения лексики. -М., 1986.
34. *Швачко Т. Т., Терентьев П. В., Янукян Т. Г., Швачко С. А.* Введение в сравнительную типологию английского, русского и украинского языков. - К., 1977.
35. *Ярцева В. Н.* Принципы типологического исследования родственных и неродственных языков // Проблемы языкознания. -М., 1967.
36. *Blokh M. Y.* A Course in Theoretical English Grammar. -Moscow, 1983.
37. *Cristal David A.* A Dictionary of Linguistics and Phonetics. - Oxford: Blackwell, 1985.
38. *Couper-Kuhlen Elizabeth.* An Introduction to the English Prosody. London: Edward Arnold, 1986.
39. *Borisova L. V. Metlyuk A. A.* Theoretical Phonetics. -Minsk, 1980.
40. *Finck F.N.* Die Haupttypen des Sprachbaus. - Leipzig; Berlin, 1923.

41. *Fries C.* The Structure of English: An Introduction to the Construction of English Sentences. -London, 1963.
42. *Gimston A. C.* An Introduction to the Pronunciation of English. -Bristol: *J. W. Arrowsmith,* 1975.
43. *Hockett C. T.* A Course in Modern Linguistics. -New York, 1968.
44. *Jacobson R., Fant C. G., Halle M.* Preliminaries to Speech Analysis. Massachusetts, 1955.
45. *Holliday M. A. K.* A Course in Spoken English: Intonation. -London: Oxford University Press, 1970.
46. *Kaliuščenko V. D.* Typologie Denominaler Verben. -Tübingen: Max Niemeyer Verlag, 2000.
47. *Khaimovich B. S., Rogovskaya B. I.* A Course in English Grammar. -Moscow, 1967.
48. *Kreidler Charles W.* The Pronunciation in English. A Course Book in Phonology. -N. Y., USA: Basil Blackwell, Ltd., 1989.
49. *Korunets I. V.* Contrastive Typology of the English and Ukrainian Languages. - K.: Lybid' Publishers, 1995.
50. *Menzerath P.* Typology of Languages // The Journal of the Acoustical Society of America. 1950. Vol. XXII, N 6.
51. *Nida E.* Componental Analysis of Meaning: An Introduction to Semantic Structures. -The Hague, 1975.
52. *Pennington M.* Phonology in English Language Teaching: An International Approach. -London and New York, 1996
53. Poldauf Ivan. English Word Stress: A Theory of Word Stress in English. - Oxford: Pergamon, 1984.
54. *Quirk R., Greenbaum S., Leech G., Svartvic J.* A University Grammar of English. - Moscow, 1982.
55. *Sagarin E.* The Anatomy of Dirty Words. -New York, 1967.
56. *Vassilyev V. A.* English Phonetics: A Theoretical Course. -Moscow, 1970.

Навчальний посібник **Ко-**

рунець Ілько Вакулович

**ПОРІВНЯЛЬНА ТИПОЛОГІЯ
АНГЛІЙСЬКОЇ ТА УКРАЇНСЬКОЇ
МОВ**

Видання друге, доповнене і перероблене

Редактор *О. І. Терех* Комп'юте-
рна верстка *С. М. Касіренко*

Орієнтовні питання до курсового екзамену з порівняльної типології:

1. The subject of contrastive typology and its aims.
2. The difference between the typological and historic and comparative linguistics.

3. The notions of absolute and near universals.
4. Practical aims of contrastive typology.
5. Kinds of typologic investigations (classificational, quantitative, qualitative, typologies, etc.).
6. Methods of contrastive typology.
7. A short history of typologic investigations (XIX -XX centuries).

8. Typology of phonetic and phonemic systems in the contrasted languages.
9. Typology of the vowel systems in the contrasted languages. Oppositions in the system of vowels.
10. Typology of the consonant systems in the contrasted languages.

11. Isomorphic and allomorphic features in the system of vowels and consonants in the contrasted languages.
13. Contrastive phonetics in teaching pronunciation.
15. Ways of contrasting phonetic systems.

16. Typology of the syllable in the contrasted languages.
17. The syllable from the articulatory, acoustic and the combinatorial points of view.
19. P.Menzerath's parallelogram and the study of syllables.
20. Qualitative and quantitative characteristics of the types of syllables in the contrasted languages.
21. Word stress and intonation in the contrasted languages.
22. The morphemic structure of English and Ukrainian words.
23. Kinds of morphemes in the contrasted languages.
24. Inflexional morphemes in the contrasted languages.
25. Word paradigms in the contrasted languages.
26. Objects of investigation at the morphological level.
27. Typological constants of the morphological level.
28. Agglutination at the morphological level in the contrasted languages.
29. Suppletivity in English and Ukrainian.
30. Contrastive typology of lexicon. Typological approach to the classification of lexicon.
31. The system of lexicon in the contrasted languages.
32. Typology of different layers of lexicon in the contrasted languages
33. Allomorphic lexicon in the contrasted languages.
34. Indo-European stock of lexicon in the contrasted languages.
35. Typology of expressive/evaluating lexicon in English and Ukrainian.
36. Common semantic classes of words in the contrasted languages.
37. Typology of idiomatic expressions (isomorphic and allomorphic features).
38. The isomorphic nature of affixation in the contrasted languages.
39. Typology of word-building models in the contrasted languages.
40. Conversion as a predominantly English way of word-building model in the contrasted languages.
41. Kinds of abbreviation in the contrasted languages.
42. Typology of expressive and neutral lexicon in English and Ukrainian.
43. The typical features in a language marking the type of language.
44. Notional parts of speech in the contrasted languages.
45. Typology of the functional parts of speech in the contracted languages.
46. The noun. It's general implicit (and dependent) grammatical meaning in the contrasted languages.
47. Classes of nouns in the contrasted languages.
48. Typology of the morphological categories of the noun.
49. The category of number and its realization in the contrasted languages.
50. The expression of number and quantity in the contrasted languages. Singularia tantum/pluralia tantum nouns.
51. The adjective in the contrasted languages, grading of adjectives.
52. Full and base adjectives. Suffixes of adjectives.

53. Possessive adjectives in the contrasted languages.
54. The numeral and its classes in the contrasted languages,
55. The pronoun in the contrasted languages, its morphological nature and classes.
56. The verb: isomorphic and allomorphic features in the system of morphological categories of the verb.
57 Realization of the categories of person, number, tense, voice, aspect, mood in the contrasted languages. Isomorphic and allomorphic features in the forms of morphological categories.
58. The category of tense and aspect in the contrasted languages.
59. Reflexive verbs in the contrasted languages. Allomorphic features in the forms of expressing different meanings in Ukrainian reflexive verb forms.
60. Expression of impersonal meanings in the contrasted languages.
61. Isomorphic and allomorphic features of the adverb in the contrasted languages. Classification of adverbs, degrees of comparison, functions of adverbs.
62. Typologic characteristics of the preposition. Isomorphism and allomorphism in the functions of prepositions.
63. Typologic characteristics of interjections in the contrasted languages.
64. Typologic characteristics of conjunctions in the contrasted languages.
65. The category of definiteness/indefiniteness and its realization in the contrasted languages.
66. Correlation of the types of syntactic connection in English and Ukrainian.
67. Isomorphism and allomorphism in the means of expressing syntactic connection in English and Ukrainian word-groups.
68. Isomorphism and allomorphism in the quantitative and qualitative correlation of the syntactic relations in English and Ukrainian.

69. Word-groups in the contrasted languages.
70. Paradigmatic (morphological) classes of word-groups in the contrasted languages.
71. Isomorphic and allomorphic features in the classes of English and Ukrainian word-groups.

72. Typology of the types of sentences in the contrasted languages.

73. Classification of sentences in the contrasted languages. 74. Typology of the parts of the sentence in the contrasted languages.
75. Isomorphism and allomorphism in the appositive attributes in the contrasted languages. 76. Typology of adverbial modifiers in the contrasted languages.

77. Isomorphism and allomorphism in the types of one-member sentences.
78. Typology of impersonal sentences in the contrasted languages.
79. Typology of the complex sentences in the contrasted languages.
80. Typology of the compound sentences in the contrasted languages.
81. Objects of investigation at the syntactic level.
82. The difference between the contrastive linguistics and contrastive typological approaches to investigating linguistic phenomena
83. Isomorphism and allomorphism in the nature of syntactic processes of the contrasted languages.
84. Substantival word-groups in the contrasted languages.